

---

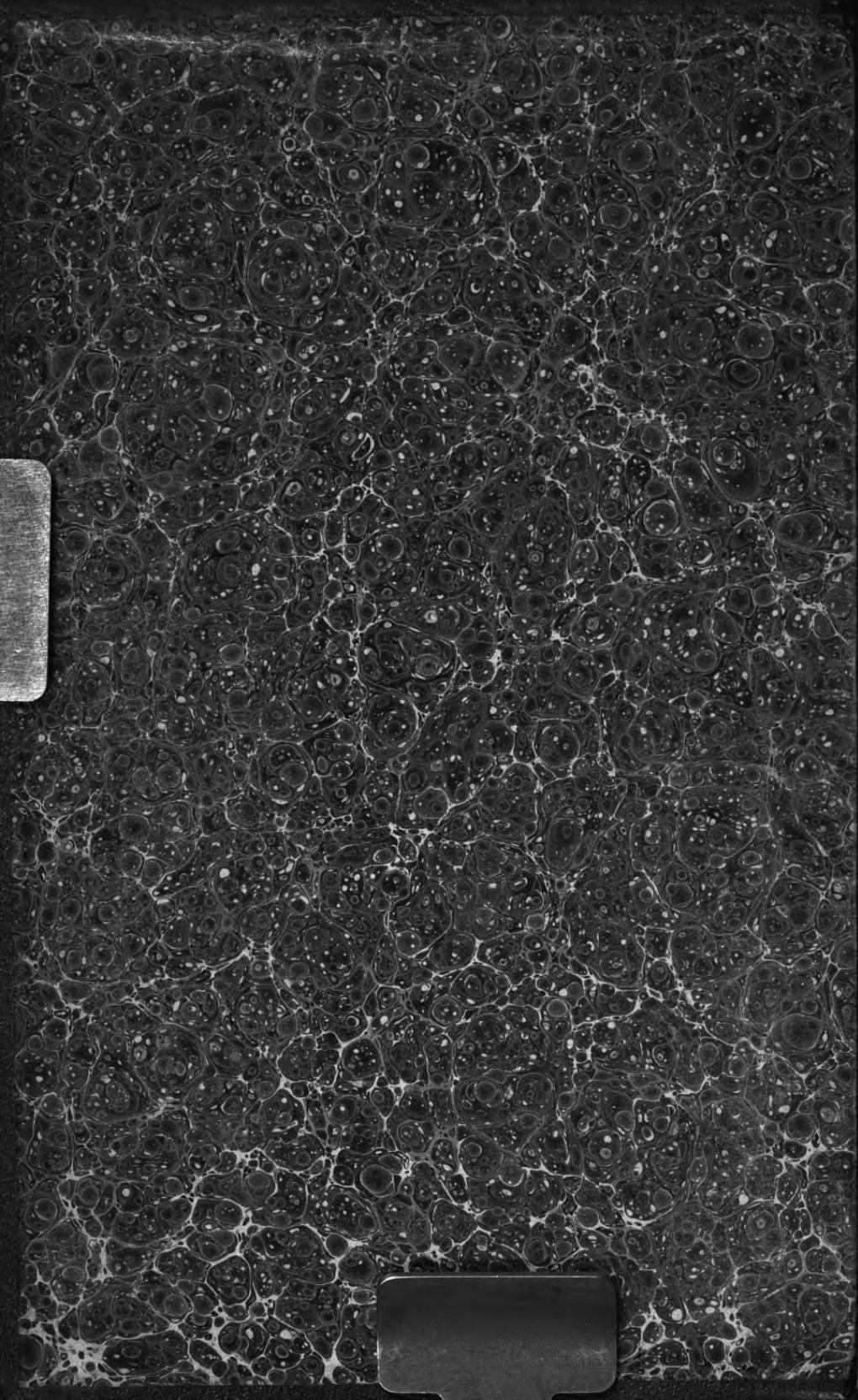
This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

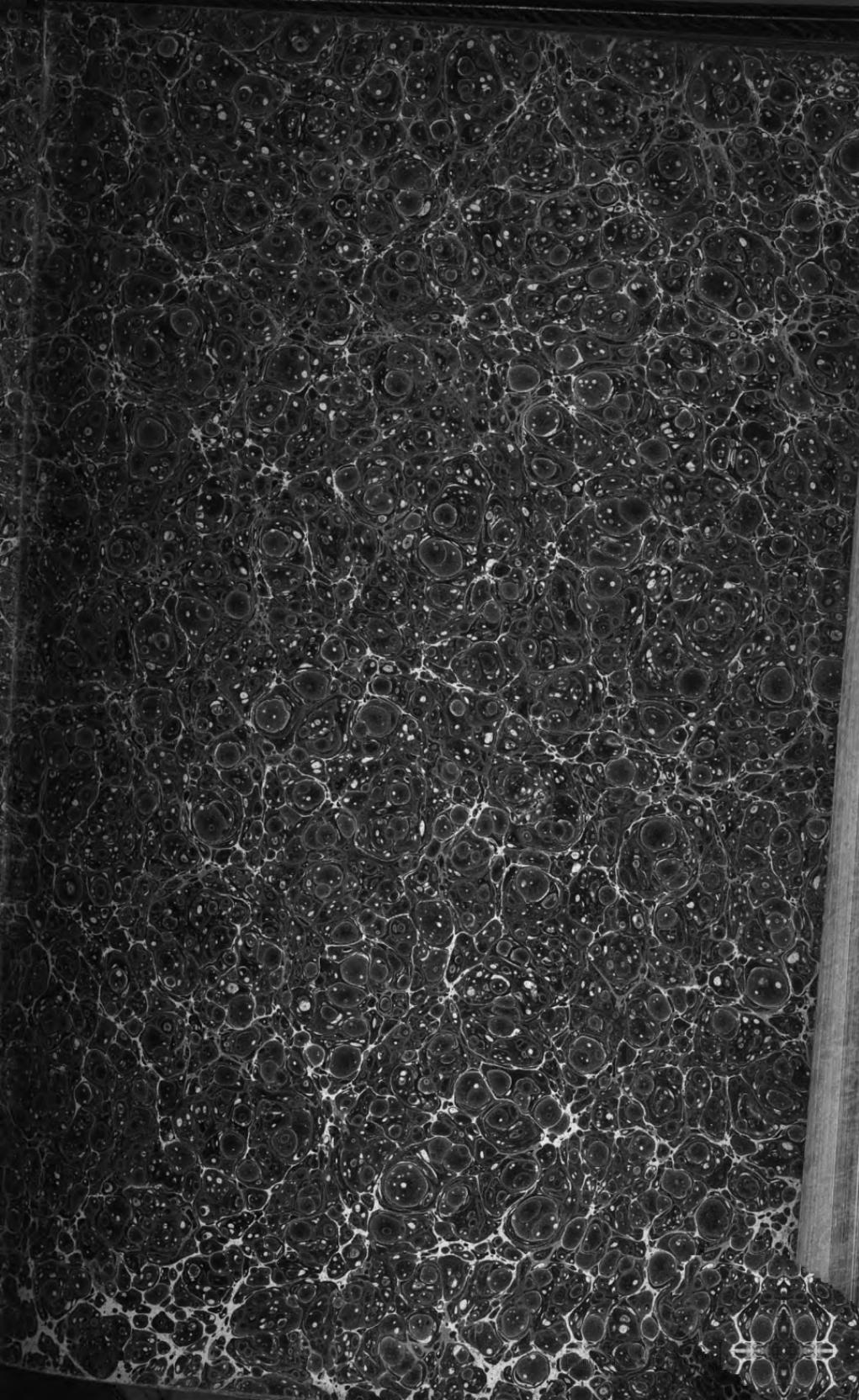
Google™ books

<http://books.google.com>













2204 d. 1

2006.6.

2014.6.

1995.2

2013 d.

# HARMONIA APOSTOLICA.

**OXFORD :**  
**PRINTED BY I. SHRIMPTON.**

# HARMONIA APOSTOLICA :

OR,

## TWO DISSERTATIONS ;

IN THE FORMER OF WHICH

THE DOCTRINE OF ST. JAMES ON JUSTIFICATION BY WORKS  
IS EXPLAINED AND DEFENDED :

IN THE LATTER,

THE AGREEMENT OF ST. PAUL WITH ST. JAMES  
IS CLEARLY SHEWN.

BY THE

RIGHT REVEREND FATHER IN GOD

G E O R G E   B U L L ,   D . D . ,

SOMETIMES LORD BISHOP OF ST. DAVID'S.

K

---

"Απαντα δρβὰ ἐνώπιον τῶν συνιέντων, φησὶν ἡ γραφή· τοῦτ' ἔστι τῶν ὅσοι ἕπονται σαφηνισθεῖσαν τῶν γραφῶν ἐξήγησιν κατά τὸν ἐκκλησιαστικὸν κανόνα ἐκδέχόμενοι διασώζουσται· κανὼν δὲ ἐκκλησιαστικὸς ἡ συνῳδία καὶ ἡ συμφωνία νόμου τε καὶ προφῆτῶν τῇ κατὰ τὴν τοῦ Κυρίου παροντίαν παραδιδομένη διαθήκη.

Clem. Alexand. Strom. 6. [p. 803.]

Οὐδὲν λανθάνει ὑμᾶς, ἐὰν τελείως εἰς Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἔχητε τὴν πίστιν, καὶ τὴν ἀγάπην, ἣτις ἔστιν ἀρχὴ ζωῆς καὶ τέλος. Ἀρχὴ μὲν πίστις, τέλος δὲ ἀγάπη. Τὰ δὲ δύο ἐν ἐνότητι γενόμενα, Θεον ἔστιν. Τὰ δὲ ἄλλα πάντα εἰς καλοκαγαθίαν ἀκόλουθά ἔστι. Ignat. Epist. ad Ephesios. [c. 14. p. 15.]

---

OXFORD :

JOHN HENRY PARKER.

M D C C C X L I I .

42



43



## ADVERTISEMENT.

WHEN a translation of the "Harmonia Apostolica," the "Examen Censuræ," and "Apologia pro Harmoniâ" of Bishop Bull, had been determined upon, it was found that the "Harmonia" had been partially translated and published by the Rev. Thomas Wilkinson in 1801; and though he apologizes in his Preface for its defective execution, and gives his reasons for very large and important omissions, his translation was considered sufficiently correct to form the basis of the present; in which, however, the whole has undergone a very careful revision, and many material alterations; and all the omissions are supplied. That these last were very considerable, will appear from the fact that, besides numerous paragraphs and sentences interspersed through the body of the work, the parts from page 102—117, from 169—181, and from 196—206, in the present translation are new, as are also the entire forthcoming translations of the "Examen Censuræ" and "Apologia."

The author, as is well known, however deeply impressed with their importance, was averse to the publication of such subjects in English; but in excuse for the departure from this his recorded opinion, it must be urged that circumstances are altered in several respects, that the practice of conducting controversy in Latin (as is much to be regretted) has well nigh ceased, and that the question here examined, of Christian Justification, has been brought much more into common discussion in English; so that to

withhold these works now, would be in effect to defeat the object of the Author in writing them, and to deprive those who are desirous of arriving at the truth, of one of the most important aids in examining it; for it can hardly be doubted by any who will give them a careful and patient perusal, that these laborious treatises are highly conducive to a right understanding of the subject.

TO THE  
REVEREND FATHER IN CHRIST,

AND  
MOST HONOURED LORD,

WILLIAM,

THROUGH THE GRACIOUS, AND TO ALL GOOD MEN, MOST GRATEFUL PROVIDENCE OF GOD,

BISHOP OF GLOUCESTER.

---

MOST HONOURED LORD,

THE present work sent to the press under your auspices, is now released from the press and returned to you: having already experienced your kindness, and thus assured of meeting with the same for the future, it confidently betakes itself to the protection and patronage of your illustrious name. Greatly did that saying of St. Ignatius please me<sup>a</sup>, "Let nothing which concerns the Church be done without the Bishop," and therefore I determined to publish no theological work without your advice. Hence I took care to place before you the following Dissertations in manuscript, (written somewhat roughly, though to the best of my abilities,) abiding your decision whether they should be for ever suppressed or committed to the press. The several chapters of each Dissertation were perused by you, (and that too not without care,) your patience overcoming their tediousness; when read, you gave them your sanction, and what is more, with your accustomed kindness towards myself and all I do, adorned them with your praise.

Why therefore should I fear to place before you my work when printed, which when in manuscript gained your approbation?

But whatever the merits of the work thus dedicated to you, my Reverend Father, I wish thereby to manifest my gratification?

<sup>a</sup> Epist. ad Smyrn. p. 6. Edit. Vossii. [c. 8. p. 36.]

tude towards you. All who know me must be aware of the favour you have shewn me. Through your aid especially my lot has fallen in this diocese, with sufficient provision ; to you I am indebted for the leisure I have for these studies.

But why should I mention these things ? Your many and illustrious virtues have gained the love and veneration even of those to whom you are not known either personally, or through any particular acts of kindness ; your published works bear witness to your learning : your prudence and moderation, your modesty, and gravity joined to extraordinary kindness, and lastly the unspotted holiness of your life, are the admiration not only of your own diocese of Gloucester but well nigh of the whole of England.

That Almighty God may preserve and increase these precious gifts and guard you in your Episcopate, and spare you to us for many years ere you return to Him, is the heartfelt prayer of,

Your Lordship's most devoted son,  
G. B.

## A D V E R T I S E M E N T

### TO THE READER.

THE following Dissertations, good Christian reader, originally undertaken for another purpose, (to know which matters little,) and intended for the brief employment of an hour, but which, as the abundance, and, as it were, tide of matter flowed in upon me, and (which is no wonder in such a subject) as difficulty grew out of difficulty, reached this present size, are now printed and committed to your judgment. If I am accused of boldness in publishing so unpolished a work, and of not being afraid to submit it to the nice criticism of this learned age, I shall not defend myself by the well-known apologies of authors. I have done it, not so much through the solicitations of friends (though these were not wanting) as from the conviction that my work, whatever be its intrinsic merits, would be of service to young students in theology, and to such who are as yet but novices in the Epistles of St. Paul.

If it shall be of the least service in bringing them to a true judgment on this most necessary controversy; if in the reading of St. Paul's Epistles (worthy indeed of continued and persevering study) it shall so assist them, as to prevent their wresting to their own destruction, and that of the flock hereafter to be committed to their care, those hard sayings, *δυσ-*  
*νότα*, which not unfrequently, and especially in this question, occur in his writings; if, in short, it be to them a timely antidote against this Solifidianism, or rather libertinism, which some in these dregs of time teach openly and shamelessly, and which many, by incrusting it with empty distinctions in sermons and writings, have palmed upon their hearers and readers, and still do so; if it answer but these ends, I shall be more than fully repaid. The sneers, dislike, and reproaches of those who are so desperately fond of their once received opinions, I hold for naught. We are engaged in a most useful subject, and which (as far as I am aware)

has never yet been treated of in a single and full work. So until a better appears mine may be made use of ; but on this condition, that the reader must not expect to find the delicacies and elegance of language, but must be content (and especially in so hard and difficult a subject) with perspicuity of style ; neither must he expect accurate arrangement ; inasmuch as, following the guidance of one's own mind, and writing for one's self more than for others, I have explained each subject as it occurred to me. Hence you will find some things, though not I hope actually misplaced, still not in their proper place. Elsewhere, especially in the second Dissertation, you will meet with long digressions, which, that they may not offend you, be pleased to recollect that they are neither useless nor entirely irrelevant. If, too, in explaining St. Paul's Epistles, I have not been so fortunate in gaining the sense of one or two passages, as I could have wished, I trust to meet with the reader's clemency, if he fairly attends to the main subject and design of the Apostle.

Lastly, if, kind reader, you gain any benefit from this our work, first thank God, the Fountain and Giver of every good, for it ; and then entreat the Lord by your fervent prayers for the author, who, though disputing about Gospel righteousness, confesses himself to be (and he says it from his heart) the chiefest of sinners, and in the same Lord

FAREWELL.

## CONTENTS.

### INTRODUCTION.

(Page 3.)

Difficulty of the undertaking—method to be pursued.

### DISSERTATION I.

#### CHAP. I.

(Page 6.)

The sense of St. James expounded—what the word ‘justify’ signifies in the New Testament; shewn by many proofs, that this word is used in its judicial sense, meaning to pronounce, or determine, to be innocent.—The particle ‘by,’ in St. James, signifies only the indispensable cause, or preceding condition.

#### CHAP. II.

(Page 11.)

The conclusion of St. James corroborated; first, by proofs drawn from Scripture, of which there are two divisions: one, of those passages which speak in general terms of obedience as necessary to justification; the other, of those which require works of repentance in particular.—An objection of our adversaries answered.—Faith and repentance of the same importance in the process of justification, both only conditions or moral instruments.—What peculiar faith is that, to which sacred Scriptures ascribe so much?—On what account does faith so much excel all other virtues?

#### CHAP. III.

(Page 19.)

A second proof drawn from the nature of justification.—Justification includes three things, the judge, the accused, and the law.—What law that is by which we shall be condemned or acquitted, shewn.—Hence an argument deduced.

## CHAP. IV.

(Page 22.)

The third argument from the nature of faith.—The three acts into which faith is divided by divines, considered (knowledge, assent, confidence.)—That justification is not necessarily connected with any of these, proved.

## CHAP. V.

(Page 28.)

The fourth argument taken from the proceedings of God in the last judgment.—The judgment of God in the next world will in every respect correspond with the divine justification in this.—Our works in that judgment regarded, not as mere signs of faith, but as a very principal part of the condition prescribed in the Gospel covenant.

## CHAP. VI.

(Page 32.)

The fifth and last argument, drawn from the implicit confession of our adversaries.—Two facts unanimously allowed by reformed divines; first, that the faith which justifies should be a living faith, that is, productive of good works. Second, that good works are undeniably necessary to salvation.—The necessity of good works to justification, shewn from both these points.

## DISSERTATION II.

## CHAP. I.

(Page 43.)

The various schemes of divines, for reconciling St. James and St. Paul.—Those who suppose James to speak of the justification of man's faith before other men, and not before God, refuted.

## CHAP. II.

(Page 46.)

Their opinion considered, who suppose St. Paul to speak of a true and lively faith, but St. James of a false and feigned one.—This overturned by various arguments, and the objections of this party answered.

## CHAP. III.

(Page 54.)

The third opinion considered is theirs who, to reconcile St. James and St. Paul, divide justification into the first and second.—It is shortly proved, that this opinion is both false, and also repugnant to the reasoning of the Apostles.—The same shewn of the opinion of Placæus concerning the twofold accusation, from which we are freed in justification.

## CHAP. IV.

(Page 56.)

The true method of removing this difficulty.—St. Paul to be interpreted from St. James, and not St. James from St. Paul.—St. Paul uses the words faith and works with different meanings.—What he means by faith.—That with him faith is all the obedience required by the Gospel, clearly argued and proved.—The contrary opinion of Grotius refuted.

## CHAP. V.

(Page 64.)

Faith is used for all the obedience which the Gospel requires, because it is the beginning and root of all Gospel righteousness ; Rom. 10. 11. compared with verse 12, 23, and explained.—For nearly the same reason all piety is called knowledge in the Holy Scriptures.—The reason why St. Paul, describing the conditions required on our parts unto salvation, makes so frequent use of this word, further investigated.—Chiefly on two accounts ; first, to express the easy performance of the condition ; secondly, to take away all merit.

## CHAP. VI.

(Page 71.)

What St. Paul means by works.—It is shewn from what has been said,—that he does not speak of every work, but those of a certain kind, those namely of the Mosaic law.—This proved from St. Paul's words, both in his Epistle to the Romans and that to the Galatians.—In the next place St. Paul so opposes the Mosaic law as also to refute the Jewish additions to it.—Lastly, since he had also to contend with the Gentile philosophers, he by the way disputes against the works of the natural law, works done by the mere force of nature.

## CHAP. VII.

(Page 76.)

The arguments, by which St. Paul rejects the Mosaic law from justification explained.—The Apostle's argument affects those precepts of the law, which are called moral, but only so far as they form part of the conditions prescribed in the Mosaic covenant.—Hence the arguments must be divided into two kinds, those which include the whole law, and those which refer to the ritual part of it only.—The first argument which relates to the whole law of Moses is taken from its want of pardoning grace, or of remission of sins.—Whether the law of Moses under any view of it can be deemed a law of entirely perfect obedience ?—Does the reasoning of the Apostle in Romans, chapter 3. ver. 20; and Galatians, chapter 3. ver. 10, depend on this idea ?—This question answered in the negative.—Arguments to the contrary answered.

## CHAP. VIII.

(Page 87.)

The true sources of the Apostle's argument laid open, which are two; first, that Jews as well as Gentiles indiscriminately, and all of every nation have been guilty of great sins, and therefore subject to the judgment and anger of God; secondly, that in the law of Moses there is no promise of true and perfect remission of sins, or of freedom from the anger of God, and eternal death, due to sin.—Hence is shewn in what manner the Apostle deduces his conclusion.

## CHAP. IX.

(Page 95.)

The second argument of the Apostle taken from the weakness of the law, or its want of aiding grace.—Certain passages to that purpose produced.—The seventh chapter of the Romans explained.—That St. Paul is there speaking of man under the law, and not assisted by the grace of the Gospel, clearly shewn.—Arguments to the contrary answered.—Gal. 5. 17. explained.

## CHAP. X.

(Page 118.)

The argument of the Apostle's taken from the weakness of the law, more distinctly explained.—The law wanted a double assistance, both the promise of eternal life and the gift of the Holy Spirit.—Of what consequence was the first defect.—Some passages on this head produced.—Four difficulties on this subject removed.

## CHAP. XI.

(Page 131.)

The other weakness of the Mosaic law,—that it had not the gift of the Holy Spirit.—Some passages proving this explained.—Two questions arising from this subject answered.—It is shewn that the Apostle defends justification by the Gospel, in opposition to that of the law, by a “demonstrative” argument taken from the evident gifts of the Holy Spirit, which in the early Church every where followed a belief in the Gospel. Hence light is thrown on that common observation of Grotius, that in the New Testament the Holy Spirit is put after faith.

## CHAP. XII.

(Page 142.)

Two deductions from what has been said in the three foregoing chapters concerning the weakness of the law.—The first of which is, that the Apostle entirely excludes from justification only those works which are performed by the aid of the Mosaic, and (consequently) of the natural law, without the grace of the Gospel.—This proved by a threefold argument from the very Epistles of St. Paul.—Three arguments of Paræus to the contrary, so answered as to throw still stronger light upon the above deductions.

## CHAP. XIII.

(Page 163.)

Another consequence drawn from the Apostle's argument concerning the weakness of the law, namely, that so far from taking from justification the necessity of good works, St. Paul's object is to prove that the true righteousness of works is absolutely necessary to justification, and that the Gospel is the only efficacious means by which any one can be brought to practise such righteousness.—Some passages to this effect shewn.—The principal difference between the law and the Gospel pointed out.

## CHAP. XIV.

(Page 166.)

Some passages pointed out in which the Apostle opposes the ritual law especially.—He so rejects the external and ritual observance of the law from justification, that in its place he substitutes the internal and spiritual righteousness of the Gospel.—Hence an invincible argument against the Solifidians.

## CHAP. XV.

(Page 168.)

Certain Jewish opinions concerning the manner of obtaining justification and salvation attacked by St. Paul, are noted.—Their first error consisted in attributing either too much strength and liberty to the human will, or at least in an ignorance of the necessity of the divine grace.—This shewn from the Rabbins and Josephus himself.—A remarkable passage of St. James, chap. 1. ver. 13. and 14. illustrated.

## CHAP. XVI.

(Page 182.)

The second error of the Jews in placing the hope of their salvation in that civil righteousness, which was confirmed in the law by definite punishments.—Hence it happened that they lived in an obedience, either negative, or external, or at the most, partial and defective.—Each of these shewn and proved from Holy Scripture, and the writings of the Hebrews.

## CHAP. XVII.

(Page 188.)

A third error of the Jews, principally of the Pharisees, that they attached much righteousness to certain traditional rites and customs, and preferred them to the chief commands of God.—The fourth and last error was, that, content with this false righteousness, they did not think of the Messiah, who would give them a better righteousness.—Lastly, from this description of Jewish opinions, four observations are drawn of great use to the right understanding of St. Paul.

## CHAP. XVIII.

(Page 194.)

The conclusion ; containing an epitome of the whole work, with a serious admonition to the reader diligently to guard against four errors in this controversy concerning justification.

# HARMONIA APOSTOLICA.

## FIRST DISSERTATION

ON

ST. JAMES CHAP. 2. VER. 24.

"YE SEE THEN HOW THAT BY WORKS A MAN IS JUSTIFIED, AND NOT BY FAITH ONLY."

BULL.  
7

B



## INTRODUCTION.

### DIFFICULTY OF THE UNDERTAKING—METHOD TO BE PURSUED.

§ 1. ALTHOUGH all, who are truly called Christians, fully allow both the infallible authority of Scripture, and the most perfect harmony of its parts; still, unhappily, it too often occurs that no few apparent contradictions and almost inextricable difficulties are found in that sacred volume. Whether this be owing to the sublimity of the subject, or the singularity of its style, to our ignorance of the opinions and customs of those to whom no small part of Scripture was necessarily addressed (customs which by so very long an interval are almost entirely obliterated), to our own dulness in understanding, or negligence in studying the Holy Scriptures, or, in short, to all these taken together, or to whatever other cause, is not now our intention to enquire. The fact and its consequences we are obliged to perceive and to lament.

§ 2. But, from a great number of Scriptural texts, in appearance, at least, contradicting each other, you will scarcely find one which has so much exercised the understandings of divines, as the passage of St. James now before us. What minute distinctions, ingenious devices, and contrivances, have interpreters used to reconcile this conclusion of St. James with the Epistles of St. Paul! They have indeed made a most important attempt; for this apparent contradiction does not relate to a matter of fact, or history, but to an article of the Christian Faith of the greatest consequence. In general, however, they have laboured in vain; and promising the brightness of noon, they have spread on the Epistles of St. James and St. Paul clouds and thick darkness; but what is most to be lamented, they have involved the doctrine of justification itself, which before was sufficiently easy and plain, in so many distinctions and subtleties, that theology does not afford an article more hard to be understood.

INTROD. § 3. Which some observing, (who could not acquiesce in any opinions they had met with, nor had perseverance to search for better,) this knot, a gordian one indeed to them, unable, as they were, to untie it, they have endeavoured to cut, by doubting or openly rejecting the authenticity of that Epistle which bears the name of St. James<sup>a</sup>. One, indeed, reached such a pitch of boldness and impiety, as to make a violent attack on its author, and charge him with falsehood and error. This was Althamer, who<sup>b</sup>, as Grotius quotes, furiously uses these expressions on an author, not only innocent, but also inspired: "He writes in direct opposition to Scripture; he quotes them falsely, and alone contradicts the Holy Spirit, the Law, the Prophets, Christ, and all the Apostles: his testimony is of no weight." And again, "We know from his very words that he was ignorant of the meaning of faith." With still more dreadful blasphemy, he says, "truly he lies against his own life." Which, with other blasphemies of the same nature, that I shudder to mention, may be found in Grotius.

§ 4. Here then is a difficulty which well deserves an answer, could one be found competent for such a task. With respect to myself, although it is not fit to say much, yet without any vain-glory I may profess that, uninfluenced by party, and unbiassed by any thing but a love of truth, I have studied as attentively as possible, both the second chapter of St. James as well as the Epistles of St. Paul, especially those to the Romans and Galatians, paying in the mean time a proper attention to those commentaries of learned men which I could meet with; and hence I hope that I may possibly say somewhat to throw some light, at least, on the aim of both the Apostles, and may satisfy impartial judges.

§ 5. But not to delay my reader any longer, with God's blessing, I will enter on the subject. For the explanation of which, I think the following method the best. First, we will briefly lay down the sense of the conclusion of St. James, and then support its truth by some arguments. This will be the subject of the first dissertation. Then we will enter

<sup>a</sup> Whom Scultetus himself (which is strange) defends with many arguments. <sup>b</sup> Discuss. Rivetiani Apologeticci, p. Exercit. 5, ad c. 3. 2 Tim. ver. 13.

upon the Epistles of St. Paul, and clearly prove his agreement with St. James in the doctrine of justification. Upon this will be the second, which, if it be more prolix, and contain a greater quantity of matter than the first, should give no cause of wonder, since the great difficulty of the subject renders it unavoidably necessary.

## CHAP. I.

THE SENSE OF ST. JAMES EXPOUNDED—WHAT THE WORD ‘JUSTIFY’ SIGNIFIES IN THE NEW TESTAMENT, SHEWN BY MANY PROOFS, THAT THIS WORD IS USED IN ITS JUDICIAL SENSE, MEANING TO PRONOUNCE, OR DETERMINE, TO BE INNOCENT.—THE PARTICLE ‘BY,’ IN ST. JAMES, SIGNIFIES ONLY THE INDISPENSABLE CAUSE, OR PRECEDING CONDITION.

DISS.  
I. § 1. BEGINNING then with St. James, we shall have little trouble to arrive at the sense of his conclusion, so far, at least, as may be necessary for our present design. We will only observe two things:—

§ 2. First, the word ‘to justify,’ according to its Greek and Hebrew acceptation, is used by him in its most usual sense, that is, as a term of law, meaning ‘to acquit,’ or ‘pronounce guiltless.’ Every unprejudiced person must know this to be the most obvious and common meaning of that word in the Holy Scriptures, and especially in the New Testament. So that it is strange to find a most learned man<sup>a</sup>, who, in other respects, has with great truth explained this doctrine of justification, denying it, and contending that the word justification generally signifies, especially when connected with the word faith, a purifying from vice, or a freedom from the habit of sinning. Grotius, indeed, does allow (for him I mean) that to ‘justify<sup>b</sup>,’ in the second chapter of St. James, signifies ‘to treat any one as just,’ and adds, that the whole context of his argument renders this sense absolutely necessary. Still he entirely denies that this is its general sense, especially in the Epistles of St. Paul. But we, though perhaps a better opportunity may hereafter appear, will easily prove, that this word constantly, and almost always, has the above-mentioned sense in the New Testament.

Rom. 8.33. § 3. There is a remarkable passage in the Romans; “Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God’s elect? It is God that justifieth.” Where the word ‘justify’ is evidently opposed to the word ‘accuse,’ or lay to the charge of, and

<sup>a</sup> In Prolegom. in Epist. ad Romanos,

<sup>b</sup> Vid. secund. annot. ad Jac. 2. 21.

therefore necessarily signifies to acquit an accused person, C H A P. I.  
and to pronounce or declare him free from accusation.' Similar to this is the following passage from the Old Testament, "He that justifieth the wicked, and he that condemneth the just, even they both are abomination to the Lord." Where the opposition of justification to condemnation proves the above interpretations. Moreover, in this sense, Christ Himself uses this word, "By thy words shalt thou be justified, and by thy words shalt thou be condemned." So in the Romans, 'condemnation' and 'justification' are opposed to each other Rom. 5.16. by St. Paul. In a similar sense also the word is used in the first Epistle to the Corinthians, where, after St. Paul had said 1 Cor. 4. 4. that he was conscious of no offence, immediately adds, "yet am I not hereby justified, but He that judgeth me is the Lord." plainly appealing for his justification to the tribunal of God, who would hereafter pass a definitive sentence upon him. It is wonderful, then, what could induce Grotius<sup>c</sup> to place this passage among those where 'to justify' signifies 'to purify from vice.' There is a remarkable place in the first Epistle to the Corinthians, "But ye are washed; but ye are sanctified; 1 Cor. 6.11. but ye are justified :" where every one must perceive that a purifying from vice is clearly distinguished from justification. Hence Grotius found the necessity of inventing in this place a different sense for the word ; that it means, making a greater progress in righteousness ; adding, that the order of the words points out this sense. It is a bad reason : for the order of the words are of themselves sufficiently perspicuous without this comment ; as washing here means the first purifying from sin, by Baptism ; sanctification, the preparing and forming, as it were, of the man to do good works, by the grace of the Holy Spirit, and to lead a holy life ; lastly, justification signifies that love of God, by which He embraces those already leading a holy life, and determines them to be worthy of the reward of life eternal through Christ.

§ 4. But far above all, is that in the Acts, which the<sup>d</sup> learned Hammond, of blessed memory, hath not improperly called the summary of the whole Gospel, and from which the notion of this word 'justify,' in St. Paul's Epistles,

<sup>c</sup> In Prolegomena ad Epist. Rom.

<sup>d</sup> Note on Rom. 3.

DISS. I. may be most fitly taken. The passage is as follows: "Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins, and by Him (that is Christ) all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses." Whence it is extremely clear, that the justification which is preached in the Gospel of Christ, is nothing else than the gracious act of God, by which for Christ's sake He acquits those who truly believe, namely, those endowed with a perfected faith, and frees them from the guilt and punishment of all sins, even the greatest; and for which, according to the law of Moses, there was no hope of pardon. Grotius indeed contends, that the mercy meant by justification in verse 39, is different from that mentioned in verse 38, under the expression, "forgiveness of sins," saying, that remission signifies "absolution from the guilt of sin," and justification "freedom from the power of sin." Who does not here perceive a manifest perversion of the Apostle's words? Nothing is more evident than that the Apostle in the 39th verse explains more fully the same mercy of forgiveness, which in the 38th he had briefly mentioned; shewing both its condition, faith in Christ, and its excellency over that forgiveness which the Law of Moses afforded. For the Law of Moses gave only a temporal forgiveness, the Gospel an eternal: the Law of Moses provided no pardon for some of the heavier crimes, but the Gospel preaches to every believer, the most full and perfect remission of all crimes, however atrocious. And so Grotius has himself excellently explained this very passage<sup>e</sup> on another occasion.

δικαιοῦν. § 5. I will add another argument for this interpretation, μασθῶν λο- in my opinion at least unanswerable. The word 'justify,' γέσθαι. both with St. Paul and St. James, has exactly the same force δικαιοσύ- as 'to impute a reward,' 'to impute righteousness,' and 'to την λογί- ξεσθαι. impute for righteousness.' Now it is well understood, that εἰς δικαιο- 'imputation' denotes the act of God regarding a man as σύνην λο- just, not making him just; and this Grotius neither can nor γέσθαι. will deny. He<sup>f</sup> only contends that it is one thing when a man is said to be justified by faith, but another, when faith

<sup>e</sup> De Satisfact. Christi, c. 10. p. 186.

<sup>f</sup> In Praefat. ad Annot. in Epist. ad Roman.

is said to be imputed to a man for righteousness. But every C H A P. one will see the contrary, who compares the fourth chapter I. of the Romans, verse 2, with verses 3, 4, 5, 6. and 22 with verses 23, 24, 25, and St. James, chapter the second, verse 21, with verse 23. On which last passage, Grotius himself observes, that "to be justified," and "to be called the friend of God," mean the same thing; adding, that in the Romans, Rom. 5. 1. "to be justified," is the same as "to have peace with God." To these you may add the following, "Therefore by the deeds Rom. 3. 20. of the law shall no flesh be justified in His sight." Where it appears, that "justify" is used as a judicial term, both from the words "in the sight of God," that is, "at the judgment-seat of God," and also from the hundred and forty-third Psalm, verse 2; (to which Grotius allows, and the words shew, that St. Paul alludes,) where David deprecates the severe judgment of God. This passage should be particularly observed, since from it clearly appears what St. Paul means by justification in his argument on faith and works.

Hence we deduce our argument thus:

The justification which St. Paul denies to works, he ascribes to faith.

But the justification which he denies to works, is a judicial term, by which, any one is pronounced just at the judgment of God.

Therefore, the justification which he attributes to faith, is of the same nature<sup>b</sup>.

§ 6. Our adversaries produce only one passage from the New Testament, where the words "to justify" can have the other meaning "to be made just," or to make every day fresh *Justum fieri.* progress in inherent and habitual righteousness. It is in the Revelations. "He that is unjust, let him be unjust still, Rev. 22. 11. and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still, and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still." Where to "be righteous," is opposed to be "unjust," and therefore would seem to signify nothing else but to be made just or increase in righteousness. But, however, to deduce the meaning of a word from one or two passages, (although I still doubt whether any other can be given from the New

<sup>a</sup> Vid. Annot. prior. in Jac. 2. 24. <sup>b</sup> See Luke 7. 29; 10. 29; 18. 14. Rom. 3. 4; 2. 13.

## 10 *Particle 'by' signifies the indispensable condition.*

**DISS.** I. Testament,) and to reject that which is far more convenient, and more agreeable to the constant use of the Holy Scriptures, is not the part of a fair disputant. Besides, it may be questioned, whether the Greek word here used be the right reading. For some manuscripts, and among these, that of great antiquity, which was presented by Cyril the Patriarch of Constantinople to the blessed King Charles the First, have, instead of "he which is righteous, be righteous still," this, "he which is righteous, let him do righteousness still." Which reading well agrees with the style of St. John. See John 2. 29; 3. 7. For elsewhere in his first Epistle, 'to do righteousness' has the same sense. Besides all this, Grotius reads the passage as above, although he often quotes it in defence of his interpretation. We may then conclude, that the word "justification" in this subject has the meaning of a judicial term, and signifies the act of God as a Judge, according to the merciful law of Christ, acquitting the accused, pronouncing him righteous, and admitting him to the reward of righteousness, that is, eternal life.

See 3. 3. § 7. And indeed to this meaning of the word justification we must strictly adhere, not only to answer the perversions of the Roman Catholics, with which they have obscured the doctrine of both St. Paul and St. James, but also because it will be of some use, as we shall soon see, to confute the Antinomians and Solifidians, whom, on this question, I have considered as wandering in an opposite, but no less dangerous manner.

**¶** εἰς ἐργαν. § 8. Let us now go on to the other point which we thought necessary to remark, namely, that by the phrase 'by works,' St. James does not mean that our works are the principal or meritorious cause of our justification, for that depends on the mere and gracious mercy of God the Father, whereas the cause thereof is to be placed solely in the death and merits of Christ, and by the Apostle is really so declared. For although the particle 'by' has sometimes that force, yet it is often used in a lowered sense, as it were, signifying the means of obtaining any thing, or the preceding condition, which is generally called the indispensable cause, yet it scarcely deserves the name of a cause. And this mode of speaking is neither unusual, nor contrary to the style of

*sine qua non.*

Scripture. To pass over other texts, when a man is said CHAP.  
to "be justified by faith," the particle 'by' is used in the <sup>I.</sup> *ἐκ πίστεως.*  
same sense. Since no one can be said to be justified by  
faith itself as a principal cause, nor even as a cause at all,  
unless inaccurately speaking. A man, therefore, is said "to  
be justified by works," because good works are ordered and  
established by God in the Gospel Covenant as the necessary  
condition for a man's justification, that is, that he may receive  
the forgiveness of sins, obtained through Christ, and become  
accepted of God to salvation. And thus far of the sense of  
the words.

## CHAP. II.

THE CONCLUSION OF ST. JAMES CORROBORATED ; FIRST, BY PROOFS DRAWN  
FROM SCRIPTURE, OF WHICH THERE ARE TWO DIVISIONS: ONE, OF THOSE  
PASSAGES WHICH SPEAK IN GENERAL TERMS OF OBEDIENCE AS NECESSARY  
TO JUSTIFICATION; THE OTHER, OF THOSE WHICH REQUIRE WORKS  
OF REPENTANCE IN PARTICULAR.—AN OBJECTION OF OUR ADVERSARIES  
ANSWERED.—FAITH AND REPENTANCE OF THE SAME IMPORTANCE IN  
THE PROCESS OF JUSTIFICATION, BOTH ONLY CONDITIONS OR MORAL  
INSTRUMENTS.—WHAT PECULIAR FAITH IS THAT, TO WHICH SACRED  
SCRIPTURES AScribe SO MUCH?—ON WHAT ACCOUNT DOES FAITH SO  
MUCH EXCEL ALL OTHER VIRTUES?

§ 1. LET us now proceed to the second part of our dissertation, which is to corroborate the opinion of St. James, that good works are necessary to obtain salvation.

§ 2. Our first argument shall be drawn from those passages of Holy Scripture, which, teaching this doctrine, no less clearly assert, than they defend it. For it is not to be supposed, that St. James hath advanced any paradox or opinion peculiar to himself. What he says are the words of the Holy Spirit, every where consistent with itself. The Prophets, the Apostles, Christ Himself, all give the same evidence. This doctrine occupies almost every page of Holy Scripture; and I will venture to say, that scarce any other can be produced out of those holy volumes, which is so distinctly laid down, or so often taught. But not to be diffuse, we will divide these passages into two classes.

## 12      *Passages which speak generally of good works*

Diss.    I.    § 3. The first division shall contain those which speak generally of good works, of piety, sanctity, and obedience, (all which have the same meaning,) as the conditions necessarily required, that any one should be acceptable unto God to salvation, i. e. be justified, for these are synonymous

Isa. 1. 16—18. terms. We will produce first that passage in Isaiah, “Wash

you, make you clean, put away the evil of your doings from before Mine eyes. Cease to do evil, learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow. Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord; though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as

Ezek. 33. 14—16. wool.” Of the same import is this from Ezekiel, “Again, when

I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die, if he turn from his sin, and do that which is lawful and right; if the wicked restore the pledge, give again that he hath robbed, walk in the statutes of life, without committing iniquity, he shall surely live, he shall not die.” Who does not perceive in these passages a whole collection as it were of good works, which, if any one does not perform, he is excluded from all hope of pardon and remission of his sins, and that it is required in general that we should cease to do evil, learn to do well, and walk in the statutes of life? Perhaps some one may object, that these things are true with respect to those who lived under the Mosaic dispensation, but do not refer to us. On the contrary, I insist, that these are the very doctrines of the Gospel itself. For the Law did not grant a full pardon to sins, especially to those (as the above are) of the greatest magnitude, which has been just observed by-the-bye, but shall hereafter be more fully demonstrated<sup>1</sup>.

Joh. 14. 21. § 4. But if any one should obstinately deny these things, let him recollect these words of our Saviour, “He

that hath My commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth Me; and he that loveth Me, shall be loved of My Father, and I will love him, and will manifest Myself to

Joh. 14. 23. him.” And, “If a man love Me, he will keep My words, and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our abode with him.” Here it is very clear, that to enjoy the love of God, i. e. to be justified, a man must have

<sup>1</sup> Vid. Diss. ii. chap. viii. 10.

such love as will ensure obedience to the commands of Christ. C H A P. II.  
 Neither must that passage in St. Matthew be forgotten, and it particularly deserves notice, because it solemnly announces 28, 29. Matt. 11.  
 the Gospel Covenant. The words are these: "Come unto Me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn of Me, for I am meek and lowly in heart, and ye shall find rest unto your souls." The yoke of Christ is His law. Whoever does not submit to this, i. e. does not undertake to perform the law of Christ, to him is promised no peace of mind, no pardon from his sins. The words of Christ also in John cannot be mis-taken—"Ye are My friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you." No one therefore is the friend of Christ except upon this condition, that he observe all His commands.

§ 5. We have heard Christ, let us go on to the Apostles of Christ, and let Peter, the chief of the Apostles, speak first, as is right. "God is no accepter of persons; but in every nation, he that feareth Him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with Him." God respects the person of none. Every one, and such only, are accepted by Him to salvation, who work righteousness. Can any thing be more evident? St. John teaches the same, "If we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have communion with Him<sup>k</sup>, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin." Therefore there is no communion with God, no purification from sin by the blood of Christ, (what does this mean, but justification?) except for those who walk in the light, i. e. who do the works of holiness. And that too is a remarkable passage in the Hebrews, "For by one offering He hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified." The word "perfected" in the Greek, (to say nothing of other meanings observed by critics,) in this and other passages of this author, means 'to expiate,' and that so perfectly, that whoever is *expiare*. so expiated, to him nothing further is wanting: he has no

<sup>k</sup> E. V. "one with another," and so the Greek, except perhaps Cod. Al. Tertullian de Pudic. xviii., and some Latin MSS., "with Him," and so Ath., and one or two Greek Fathers. St. Augustine, in 1 John 1. Tract i. vol. iii. ed. Ben. has "cum invicem,"

with one another, but seems to understand it, "between God and ourselves." So Ecumenius, "between us and the light." The preceding verse implies this, if not expressed. Comp. John 17. 21, 23.—ED.

**DISS.** occasion for any other oblation or sacrifice, nor even for a repetition of the same sacrifice. In this sense the word is used in the first verse, and also in the eleventh verse of the seventh chapter of this Epistle. So that this inspired writer clearly restrains the expiation or freedom from sin, obtained by the blood of Christ, to those who are sanctified in heart and deed, strongly hinting that none are justified by the merits of Christ who are not first sanctified by the Spirit of Christ. Justification is certainly subsequent to sanctification,

**1 Pet. 1. 2.** at least the first and yet imperfect sanctification. Which St. Peter also pointedly shews in his first Epistle, where he beautifully describes the order of human salvation. First comes the sanctification of the Spirit to obedience; then follows the sprinkling of the blood of Christ, i. e. to justification.

**Comp.**  
**1 Cor. 6. 11.** It would be almost endless to cite every passage out of the New Testament which relates to this subject. Whoever shall open, even at hazard, these sacred books, will necessarily meet with something, which, if he sincerely reads, and sincerely weighs, shall lead him, as it were by the hand, to this truth.

**§ 6.** Let us therefore pass on to the second class of testimonies, those, namely, which specify some particular works as entirely necessary to salvation. Under this head come those passages which require repentance, without which no sinner can obtain pardon from God. Such texts are to be met with every where in the New Testament, and, therefore, instead of quoting a multitude, we will be content with one **Acts 2. 38.** or two. As “Repent, and be baptized every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and **Acts 3. 19.** ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost;” and “Repent ye, therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come.” In these passages every one must see, that, besides faith, repentance of sins and turning to God is necessary for the forgiveness of sins or justification.

**§ 7.** This also must be observed, that repentance is not a single work standing by itself, but is a collection, as it were, of many other works. In which comprehensive sense it contains the following works, neither few, nor of small import : **2 Cor. 7. 10.** 1. sorrow for sin; 2. humiliation under the hand of God, by

which a man humbly acknowledges himself to have deserved **C H A P.**  
**II.**  
 His anger ; 3. hatred and detestation of sin ; 4. confession **Jas. 4. 10.**  
 of sin ; 5. an earnest and suppliant begging for divine mercy ; **Ezek. 6. 9;**  
 6. love of God ; 7. a ceasing from sin ; 8. a firm determina-**20. 43;**  
 tion of new obedience ; 9. a restitution of every thing ac-**36. 31.**  
 quired by sin ; which work of repentance is so absolutely **1 John 1. 9.**  
 necessary to forgiveness of sins in every one who has it in **Acts 8. 22.**  
 his power, as to become a proverb recognised by all theo-**Ex. 20. 6.**  
 logians, "An offence is not forgiven unless that that has **Prov. 28. 13.**  
 been taken away be restored ;" 10. forgiveness of all in-**Isa. 1. 16.**  
 juries done to us : our Saviour places so great weight on **Acts 11. 23.**  
 this, that He more than once declares, no man can obtain **Ezek. 33. 14,**  
 pardon from God for his trespasses, who does not forgive **15. Lev. 6.**  
 his neighbours theirs against him ; 11. works of mercy or **1-7. Luke**  
 alms ; whose efficacy in obtaining pardon of sin from God, **19. 8, 9.**  
 well appears from that famous passage taken from Daniel, **Dan. 4. 27.**  
 where the holy Prophet gives this wholesome counsel to  
 Nebuchadnezzar, who was yet in his sins : "Redeem thy sins  
 by alms, and thy iniquities by shewing mercy to the poor!"  
 So the Vulgate, following the Septuagint, who translate the  
 Hebrew word by 'alms' according to the oriental idiom. *ελεημο-*  
*στινη.* But it is of little consequence which version we follow, since  
 all allow that mercy to the poor is mentioned in the latter  
 clause of the sentence. Agreeable to this is the doctrine of  
 St. James in this very chapter, "For he shall have judgment **Jas. 2. 13.**  
 without mercy that hath shewed no mercy." What mercy  
 he means is evident from the following verses, 15 and 16<sup>m</sup>.  
 Chrysostom therefore truly says, in his sermon on repentance,  
 "Repentance without alms is dead and unavailing." And *καττερpos.*  
 hence, by the way, arose that custom in the ancient Church,  
 by which they demanded of those who had fallen, for any of  
 the heavier offences, under the censure of the Church, not  
 only confession of sins, and a more regular conduct in future,  
 but also works of mercy, called good-works, before Absolution *ἀγαθοερ-*  
*γιαι.* was granted to them. Observe how the works of repentance  
 extend far and wide, and remember that all these things are

<sup>l</sup> E. V. "Break off thy sins by righteousness, and thine iniquities, &c." Dan. 4. 27.

that text. Isaiah 1. 17. Luke 16. 9.  
 1 Tim. 6. 17, &c. 1 Pet. 4. 8. Heb.  
 13. 16,

<sup>m</sup> See Luke 11. 41. and Grotius on

DISS. I. determined by the Holy Ghost to be indispensably necessary to obtain pardon of sins.

§ 8. It is wonderful how those who acknowledge these truths, (and none but a libertine dare deny them,) can defend their paradox of justification by faith alone; faith being understood by them as separated from the works of repentance. They will say, perhaps, as indeed they are accustomed to say, that repentance is only required as a preceding disposition, by which a sinner is prepared for the forgiveness of sins, but faith is the sole instrument by which that forgiveness is received, as by a hand, and therefore it is not improperly said, we are justified by faith alone. But here they are egregiously wrong, and that in two respects. In the first place, they clearly suppose that the works of repentance precede faith, which is a great mistake; for no man either can or will grieve for sin, detest it, determine upon a better conduct in future, or perform the other works of repentance,

Mat. 3. 18. "works meet for repentance," as the Baptist elegantly says, except he first had a firm faith in the Gospel of Christ. We may therefore press them with this dilemma. If faith alone and by itself justifies, it performs this office either before the works of repentance are produced, or not until after them. If they say before, how then can they call repentance a disposition preceding justification; or how can the works of repentance be required by the Holy Spirit, as necessary to his justification, who hath been already justified by faith alone? But if they answer that faith does not justify until after these works are produced, they must necessarily support one of these two absurdities, either that faith does not exist before the works of repentance, or that it does not operate towards effecting our justification. You will say, that although faith is the source of repentance, and therefore, in the order of nature, be prior to repentance; yet still faith and repentance may begin to exist together, at one and the same instant. I answer, that this is very absurd, and besides perfectly impossible. It cannot be that faith should produce repentance in an instant. For that any one should grieve for sin, detest it, humble himself under the hand of God, should produce an act of love to God, should conceive a design of newness of life, requires some time, and some length

of pious contemplation. These things, I confess, are subtle- C H A P.  
ties; but the answer is worthy of the objection, the one II.  
being well suited to the other.

§ 9. Secondly, What they advance respecting the instrumentality of faith in the matter of justification, is a trifling piece of sophistry. Besides, they have no warrant in Scriptures for what they say; if the word instrument be taken in its strict and proper sense for the secondary efficient cause, it is evident that faith can in no sense be called the instrument of justification <sup>n</sup>. For, in the first place, since justification is the act of God alone, and produced entirely without being merited on our parts, how our faith or any action of ours can give any assistance in effecting our justification, is inconceivable. And, in the next place, every instrumental cause, as we have already hinted, operates according to its own peculiar nature, and the production of the effect may be properly attributed to it. Now, since justification is entirely the gracious act of God, by which He pardons our sins, and grants us salvation, it is extremely absurd to say, that either our faith or our works, or any thing else of ours, forgives our sins, or grants salvation to our persons. Which, however, is said by those who call faith the instrumental cause of justification. You may ask, Is it not right to say, "By faith we accept Christ, and embrace the benefit of justification obtained by Him?" I answer, although many, with great reason, suppose that this acceptance of Christ is rather an act of love than faith, yet, for the present, at least, we will not contend about it. Let it therefore be taken for granted. What I insist upon is this, this act of embracing Christ totally differs, and is distinct from, the act of justification. The first is our own act; the second of God alone. Although, therefore, we should allow that faithfulness is the instrument of that act, yet whoever should infer from thence that faith is also the instrument of justification, would argue contrary to all the rules of reasoning. Upon the whole, therefore, faith can be an instrument only in this sense, because commanded by God, and performed by His grace. For a condition being performed, may in a certain sense be called the means or instrument by which we obtain what is promised upon that

<sup>n</sup> See the Homilies : On Salvation, part ii. p. 17.

DISS. condition. And this is called by some, the moral instrument.  
L And if in this sense the word instrument be taken as the condition or moral instrument, we pointedly deny that faith is the only instrument of justification. Since, as we have already shewn, the works of repentance also are positively insisted upon by the Holy Spirit as no less necessary to obtain justification.

§ 10. You will say, If these things be true, what is the excellency of that faith above the other works of piety, concerning which the Holy Scriptures speak so often and so magnificently? What can be more dangerous than to reject this faith as of itself entirely insufficient to justification, to reduce it into the same rank with other works, and to attribute no less advantages to them than to faith itself? I answer: At the very sight of this objection most are very much startled; and, indeed, at first, I allow it to have a terrible appearance. But, however, if any one will take courage, and examine it more closely, he will immediately find it a mere scarecrow, which might frighten children. For that faith, to which so many and so great things are attributed in the New Testament, is not to be taken for one single virtue, but comprehends, in its complete sense, as is clearly shewn in the proper place, all the works of Christian piety. So that wherever it is understood as a work by itself, and separated from all other virtues, the Holy Spirit, far from giving it the <sup>1Cor.13.13</sup> first rank, places it in the third after charity: "And now abideth faith, hope, and charity; but the greatest of these is charity." And this passage must not be understood as relating only to the duration of charity in the next world, and that it is preferred to faith on that account, which is the pretence of some, since the Apostle points out its superior <sup>See ver. 2.</sup> virtue and excellency even in this life over faith. It must, however, be allowed, that in one respect faith is superior to charity, and therefore to all other virtues, because it is the *root* and *source* of all other works, and the mother, as it were, of the other virtues, not because it necessarily produces them, but because its nature is well adapted to that purpose. Moreover, if its force be excited and strengthened by frequent and serious meditation, it will almost certainly produce them. For whoever firmly believes in the Gospel, and considers it

with due attention, will, in all human probability, become a CHAP.  
II. good man. And, in the last place, there is no human virtue which does not arise, as it were, from faith. Now who does not allow that the mother, although in other respects far inferior, yet because she is the mother, has in that point the precedence of her daughters? No doubt in this sense must be understood the long and magnificent description which the eleventh chapter of the Epistle to the Hebrews gives of faith; where the writer excellently shews that all the noble actions of men renowned in the Old Testament proceeded from faith. Lastly, this is the most probable reason why St. Paul, in his Epistles, comprehends all Christian virtues under the name of faith. He regards, in short, the fruit in the seed.

## CHAP. III.

A SECOND PROOF DRAWN FROM THE NATURE OF JUSTIFICATION.—JUSTIFICATION INCLUDES THREE THINGS, THE JUDGE, THE ACCUSED, AND THE LAW.—WHAT LAW THAT IS BY WHICH WE SHALL BE CONDEMNED OR ACQUITTED, SHEWN.—HENCE AN ARGUMENT DEDUCED.

§ 1. ANOTHER proof of the just reasoning of St. James may be drawn from the very notion and nature of justification. That this may be the better understood, we must explain more fully, what before we only slightly mentioned, namely, that the word *justification* has a legal or judicial meaning, and therefore by its primary sense denotes the proceedings of a trial. But in every trial three things at least must be understood. The judge who gives sentence, the accused who is tried, and the law by which he is tried. In like manner these three things, or certainly something analogous to each of them, are found in *justification*. Thus, for example; when man is said to be justified in the sight of God, by the works of the law, or the faith of Christ. The accused person is man; the judge, God; and the law, according to which judgment is given, is either on one hand, the Mosaic law, or on the other, the law of Christ, sometimes called the law of faith. Neither can we say that any one is justified,

See Rom.  
3. 27.

DISS. unless he be acquitted according to the law by which he is tried, whether that be the law of Moses or Christ. In one word, no man can be justified or acquitted, unless he hath obeyed the law by which he is tried.

§ 2. It only therefore remains for us to enquire, by what law Jas. 2. 12. Christians will be tried? This question St. James will answer for us. "So speak ye and so do as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty." The law then by which we must be judged, is called the law of liberty, and has its name for these three reasons: first, because it frees us from the servile yoke of the Mosaic ceremonies; secondly, because by it alone we are freed from the guilt and punishment of sin; lastly, and chiefly, because by it we are set at liberty from the irresistible power and influence of sin; under whose yoke those who remained in the Mosaic law groaned without any hope of relief. This freedom is granted us by the Spirit of Christ, which inseparably accompanies the law of Christ. These things we have just observed, that no Libertine hearing of the law of liberty, should suppose the Apostle favoured his sentiments.—To return from this digression. The law of liberty is the same as the royal law; the law of Christ as our King, concerning which the Apostle speaks in the eighth verse. What was its nature, the words in the same verse will explain.

"Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." Here the Apostle evidently means the Decalogue or Law of the Ten Commandments: which more evidently appears by the eleventh verse, where some precepts of this Law are particularly mentioned. In short, "the royal law, and the law of liberty, of which St. James speaks, and by which he says we are to be judged, is no other than the moral law itself, as Christ hath explained, and perfected it, and delivered it to His disciples, as His law from the mount, which answers to that of Sinai. This sanction being added to it: Eternal life to those who obey it; but to the disobedient everlasting death."

Matt. 7. 24, &c. § 3. This must be particularly observed, that we fall not into the same error as Luther, and most of our own divines

<sup>o</sup> See St. James I. 25. where the same law is called "the perfect law of liberty."

after his time : who in disputing with the Roman Catholics C H A P.  
concerning justification, and carried away in the heat of con- III.  
troversy, have introduced the following error into the Reformed  
Churches, greatly to their disadvantage. They taught that  
the Gospel consisted of promises only ; that Christ gave to  
the world no law, but only explained the law already given ;  
and freed it from the faulty comments of the Scribes and  
Pharisees ; that the only use of the moral law at present, is  
to bring men to the faith of Christ, or at least, that there  
may be some determinate laws of conduct, recommended  
indeed to us by Christ, and which we are bound out of grati-  
tude to obey; but not imposed upon us on pain of damnation,  
nor as a condition of the New Covenant necessarily to be  
observed to salvation. From these principles unguardedly  
laid down by them, and eagerly adopted by the generality of  
Theologians, arose by strict and regular deduction, the exec-  
rable tenets of the Antinomians, Libertines, and Familists ;  
which those good men by no means expected. However it  
be, those who teach the above error, and at the same time  
exclaim against the Libertines, what do they but condemn  
themselves, in reproving these. They agree in the premises,  
but will not admit the conclusion, though rightly drawn. To  
prevent this dreadful error it must be ever observed, as an  
undeniable truth, that Christ, in His Sermon not only ex- See Matt. 5.  
plained the moral law, but also laid it down as His own,  
and required its observance, assisted by the Grace of the  
Gospel, from all Christians, as a condition of His Covenant,  
indispensably necessary. And of this no one can at all  
doubt, who with any attention reads the conclusion of that  
discourse. The same also well appears from that serious  
warning with which our Lord begins this vindication of His  
law. "For I say unto you, that except your righteousness  
shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees,  
ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven." From Matt. 5. 20.  
which words it is beyond doubt, that it was our Saviour's  
design, not only to vindicate the moral law from the faulty  
comments of the Scribes and Pharisees, but to deliver it so  
vindicated to His disciples, by them to be observed on pain  
of damnation.

§ 4. These things being premised, there arises at length an

DISS. unanswerable argument, in my opinion at least, against the  
I. Antinomians and Solifidians.

Whoever is justified by God through Christ  
 is acquitted by the Law of Christ.

But by Faith alone without Works

no one is acquitted by the Law of Christ.

Therefore no one is justified by Faith without Works.

The minor proposition alone of this syllogism wants proof,  
 which may be thus given it.

Whoever is acquitted by the Law of Christ  
 must necessarily fulfil that Law.

But by Faith alone without Works

no one fulfils the Law of Christ.

Therefore by Faith alone without Works

no one is acquitted by the Law of Christ.

Here the major is self-evident. As to the minor, whoever shall deny that, must necessarily fall into this absurdity; as to affirm either that Faith alone is all the righteousness, which the Law of Christ demands, or that nothing by the Law of Christ is demanded of us on pain of damnation, but Faith. But whoever, after what has been said in the two last arguments, shall seriously affirm this, is not fit to be argued with, and is a subject rather for the physician than the divine.

#### CHAP. IV.

THE THIRD ARGUMENT FROM THE NATURE OF FAITH.—THE THREE ACTS INTO WHICH FAITH IS DIVIDED BY DIVINES, CONSIDERED (KNOWLEDGE, ASSENT, CONFIDENCE.)—THAT JUSTIFICATION IS NOT NECESSARILY CONNECTED WITH ANY OF THESE, PROVED.

§ 1. We will deduce our third argument from the nature of faith itself, thus: if faith be considered alone, and separated from every other virtue, there is no act of it which is saving, or which may not take place in a wicked, and therefore unjustified man. Therefore, it is evidently impossible, that a man should be justified by faith alone, without other

virtues. This consequence is clearer than the sun. With respect to the antecedent, I must say, those who have so strenuously contended that we are justified by faith alone, always appear to me, either not to have known, or at least not to have remembered, what faith is. Those who attribute so much to faith alone, extol faith beyond all faith. To prove this assertion, let it be remembered, that faith is divided by divines into three acts; knowledge, assent, and confidence. We will consider each of them.

§ 2. With respect to knowledge, all allow, that it may be found in the worst. Therefore Cameron broached a strange, new, and entirely unauthorized opinion, in saying, that there was a certain knowledge peculiar to the elect, which from its nature was always efficacious, and saving; and which in one place he calls a "guiding light," and in short, upon which he affirms the conversion of man to God entirely to depend. For this idea he is most deservedly reprieved by Episcopius<sup>p</sup>, and not by Episcopius only, by the Synods of Dort, Alise, and Charenton, is that opinion condemned in specific terms, as Episcopius has clearly shewn<sup>q</sup>.— We will consider this point then as decided.

§ 3. Concerning the assent of the mind, the case is no less clear. For it is certain that a mere assent may be found, not only in wicked men but even in devils. I confess that there are not a few learned men who think that this assent, if it be firm and deeply rooted in the mind, will necessarily produce the practice of piety, and obedience to the commands of God. Neither are their arguments of trifling weight: but those for the contrary opinions seem to me stronger, especially that taken from the first Epistle to the Corinthians, 1 Cor. 13.<sup>2</sup> where St. Paul supposes that a man may have all faith, which no doubt includes this highest degree of faith, and yet not have charity. I cannot at all attend to those, who imagine the Apostle here to put an impossible case. But there is no occasion to say much on this subject; for if that be granted, which these learned men contend for, it cannot injure our argument, provided it is acknowledged (which they indeed willingly allow) that a mere assent, and without that practice

<sup>p</sup> Examin. Sentent. Cameron. c. 2.

<sup>q</sup> Chap. 3.

DISS. of piety, which it is supposed to draw after it, can have no weight with God. And the same may be observed of Cameron's opinions.

§ 4. The remaining act of faith is called confidence, and in this the Solifidians place their greatest confidence; we shall, therefore, more carefully consider what they say on this point. And first, it will be very proper to enquire what they mean by this confidence; for they involve this subject in such intricate expressions, that it is scarcely possible to understand them. Intelligibly, and consistently to explain what they say upon it, requires more than mortal wit. Let him who thinks otherwise try, and however unwilling, he will be obliged to confess the truth of what has been asserted. We will, however, try to produce light out of this darkness.

§ 5. It must be observed, therefore, that whenever faith in the New Testament (considered as separated from other virtues) is regarded only as that assent of the mind by which we believe in the Sufferings, Death, and Resurrection of Christ, and in the truth of the Divine Promises, still that assent is of a nature which properly produces a certain confidence. "Whoever (to use the words of Grotius<sup>1</sup>) believes that what Christ taught is of God, and this among the rest, that those who live according to the Gospel, will obtain eternal life, he must at the same time be confident, that he himself will obtain that blessing, if he so lives. Yet this confidence is conditional. After a man hath already led a Christian life, and is purified from his vices, then that confidence begins to become confirmed, which is called hope, in the Holy Scriptures. This hope is subsequent to justification, and assuredly is not a part of that faith by which we are justified." From these words of Grotius, who certainly has clearly and distinctly stated this matter, we may thus argue: that confidence, which they suppose to be the principal act of justifying faith, is either conditional or positive (infallible.) If the first is meant, nothing can be more certain than that it may be found in every one who believes the truth of Christianity; for it is the necessary consequence of such belief. You will say, But confidence, which is the property

See Rom.  
4. 20, 21,  
24. Heb.  
11. 1; 1  
Joh. 5. 4,  
5; Joh.  
8. 24.

<sup>1</sup> Discuss. p. 41, and 42.

of justifying faith, is such as not only directs the understanding, but powerfully influences the heart and will. CHAP. IV.  
Hence he comes to Christ, and with his whole heart depends on Him for salvation ; or, to use the words of a very learned man : “ It is such a confidence, as casting away every thing else, and depending on the Mediator, attracts the whole heart or soul to Christ, and is united to Him.” But here we may ask, What do these phrases mean, “ to come to Christ, to be attracted to Him with all the heart and soul, to be united to Him ? ” For these expressions, I believe, do not so much describe acts of faith and confidence, as of love. He comes to Christ, who, first believing in the doctrines of Christ, and repenting of his sins, then dedicates himself wholly to Him, and becomes His disciple ; that so through Him he may obtain pardon of his sins, and eternal life. He is attracted to Christ by the whole heart and soul, and united to Him, who sincerely loves Christ, and pants after all those great blessings obtained by Christ, not with a light and faint, but earnest and hearty affection ; and provided he can obtain Christ as his reward, values as nothing all the mad pursuits of the infatuated world ; who, in short, determines always to adhere to the doctrine and precepts of Christ. Whoever shall do these things, he without doubt will, for Christ’s sake, be accepted by God to salvation, that is, will be justified. If these phrases are otherwise explained, I confess I do not understand them. However this may be, it is evident, that this conditional confidence can contribute nothing to a man’s justification, and future happiness, except you suppose it to act upon his will and affections, by producing some act of love in the soul, and by strongly stimulating the whole man to seek those blessings of the Gospel, which he believes both to exist, and that he may obtain them. Certainly neither faith nor confidence availeth any thing, except they are worked by love <sup>s</sup>, or rather are produced by it, and brought to perfection. And for this reason, I do not at all doubt but that love may be rightly called ‘the form of justifying faith,’ I say expressly of justify-

<sup>t</sup> δι’ ἀγάπης ἐνεργουμένη. Gal. 5. 6. per charitatem efficax. The participle ἐνεργουμένη I think must be taken pas-

sively, as is almost always the case in other places in the New Testament.

DISS. 1. ing faith, because it is allowed that faith considered by itself, has its own form : but that faith which and as far as it justifies, must necessarily be rendered complete by true love.

§ 6. Let us now proceed to the remaining part of our argument, which is concerning absolute confidence. This is that degree of mental certainty, with which a man believes that all his sins are forgiven, and he secure of salvation, independent of any condition. And it is too evident, that when almost all the divines, of the Reformed Churches, especially foreigners, speak of confidence as a peculiar act of justifying faith, they mean this absolute assurance. This doctrine hath long been the great disgrace of the Reformed Churches, neither is there any upon which Roman Catholics have exercised greater severity ; and with justice, for it is far from a trifling error, but almost a breach in faith itself. May God in His mercy grant, that such opinions be for ever banished from our writings, at any rate from our teaching ! But our business here is with arguments, and not with prayers, and tears.

§ 7. I say then, that this absolute assurance, can by no means be an act of justifying faith, much less the principal act ; which may be easily proved by this single argument. No one can be certain of his salvation, who hath not first performed all things required for salvation, and so be in fact already justified. Therefore, absolute assurance is not the act of justifying faith, but the consequence of justification. This consequence is self-evident. With respect to the antecedent, I ask upon what grounds they establish this absolute assurance of which they speak ? On the Gospel of Christ ? But how any person can, from the Gospel, be certain of his justification before he hath performed what the Gospel requires for justification, is utterly incomprehensible. Is this certainty obtained by any peculiar revelation not contained in the Gospel ? What is this but changing the firm sound faith of the Saints, into mere enthusiasm, that is, into a groundless fancy. Besides, this peculiar revelation is either agreeable to the word of God, or it is not. If not, it must evidently be rejected : if it be, you relapse into the former absurdity. For no one, by the Word of Christ, can be certain of the remission of his sins, except he has fulfilled

the conditions required in that Word for such remission. C H A P.  
Many arguments of this kind may easily be contrived, as in- IV.  
deed has been already done by many ; but he who is not  
convinced by this single reason, will not, in my opinion, be  
persuaded by the strongest proofs.

§ 8. I will conclude the whole subject in a few words. Confidence in Christ, whether conditional or absolute little signifies, is common to the good and the bad ; so that, if this be the last step and *perfection* of justifying faith, certainly every scoundrel may boast of his salvation. For it is, alas ! too well known, that the greatest part of those who call themselves Christians, secure of the mercy of God, the merits of Christ, and of their own salvation, pass their days without the least anxiety, being at the same time very far short of the practice of true Christianity. Their good works, which they never perform, they disavow, acknowledge themselves the worst of sinners, and then tranquilly depend on Christ, the Mediator, to obtain salvation for them. That they should perform these good works, you could by no endeavours persuade them : but they rush on headlong into this confidence. Those who have the care of souls find no difficulty so great as the convincing unhappy men of this error, deluded by which they carelessly give up all care of their souls.

But, you will say, they are not sincere. This confidence is greatly different from that which inspires the justified. How, I pray, do they pretend a confidence which they have not ? You will never persuade them so. They both know and congratulate themselves, that they truly, and not feignedly, trust in the merits of Christ. This facts prove, for in this confidence they live and are ready to die ; nay, too often really do so die. They therefore truly trust in Christ, but not as they ought, because they do it without any grounds. They depend on the merits of Christ, but despise His commands ; they embrace the promises of the Gospel, but neglect its precepts. This is the only difference between the confidence of the good and the wicked. It is in vain to seek any other. Lastly, St. John clearly informs us what is true and Christian confidence : " And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him. For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things." 1 John 3. 19-21.

DISS. Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence toward God." For surely a secure confidence of mind is the daughter of a good conscience, and arises from good works, and without good works it is undoubtedly ineffectual.

§ 9. To finish this argument: since there is no act of faith considered separately and by itself, with which justification is necessarily connected, since knowledge without practice, assent of the mind without love of heart, confidence in the promises of the Gospel, without a sincere endeavour to fulfil its conditions, are of no avail with God, we must necessarily conclude and believe sincerely, that no one is justified in the sight of God by faith alone, without the other virtues.

## CHAP. V.

**THE FOURTH ARGUMENT TAKEN FROM THE PROCEEDINGS OF GOD IN THE LAST JUDGMENT,—THE JUDGMENT OF GOD IN THE NEXT WORLD WILL IN EVERY RESPECT CORRESPOND WITH THE DIVINE JUSTIFICATION IN THIS.—OUR WORKS IN THAT JUDGMENT REGARDED, NOT AS MERE SIGNS OF FAITH, BUT AS A VERY PRINCIPAL PART OF THE CONDITION PRESCRIBED IN THE GOSPEL COVENANT.**

§ 1. LET us take our fourth argument from the manner in which God will judge mankind at the last day.—By whatever law every one shall be judged in the next world by God, according to the same he will be justified by Him in this.—But in the next world every one will be judged according to his works, and not faith alone.—Therefore in this world every one is justified by God from his works, and not faith *alone*. If I am not very much mistaken this argument is unanswerable.

§ 2. With respect to the major proposition, it is supported by these most evident reasons, taken from the very nature of the future judgment. First, the future judgment—so far as it regards us who live under the Gospel—is in reality only a solemn and public passing of sentence by Christ, the Judge, in the sight of the whole world, by which it will be clearly shewn who in this life, according to the terms of the Gospel Covenant, have been just, and who unjust. I say, so far as

it regards us, because other means must be used with those C H A P.  
who have never known the Gospel, for it does not seem V.  
agreeable to Divine Justice to condemn him for violating the  
Gospel Covenant who never even heard of it. For the proof  
of this we refer to what St. Paul says of those nations who  
know not the written law of God. Yet however God may See Rom.  
determine on such in that awful day, it is most certain that 2. 12.  
we Christians shall be judged only by the tenor of the Gospel  
Covenant ; so that with respect to us, the last judgment will  
be nothing else but the decisive sentence of Christ the Judge,  
concerning our righteousness or unrighteousness, according  
to the law of His Gospel, which has been long enforced upon,  
and sufficiently revealed to us. Whence this act of Christ, as  
regards believers, has been well called by some *declarative* <sup>declarativa.</sup>  
justification, opposed to that justification which by the law of  
Christ we have in this life, and which by the same is not im-  
properly styled *active*, or habitual justification. Both agree <sup>constitu-</sup>  
in the same points, and are under the same regulations ; that  
is, whatever is required at the Day of Judgment of a man to  
be declared just, the same, according to the law of Christ, is  
requisite for his *being made* just in this life. For the sen- <sup>constitu-</sup>  
tence of a judge must in every point conform to the regula- <sup>atatur.</sup>  
tions of the law. It certainly, then, follows of course, if  
according to our works we are declared just in the judgment  
by Christ, by our works we must be *made just* in this life by <sup>constitu-</sup>  
the law of Christ. But, secondly, there is another act of <sup>imur.</sup>  
the future judgment necessarily connected with the former ;  
that by which the reward of eternal life is openly conferred  
on the faithful. And in this the proceedings of the Almighty,  
sitting in judgment at the Last Day, is no less agreeable with  
His proceedings in justification in this life. For who will  
attempt to deny that a conferring a right to heavenly rewards  
is the principal act of justification ? Certainly the words of the  
Apostle, speaking of justification, clearly prove this : compare  
the third verse with the fourth of the fourth chapter of the  
Epistle to the Romans, where he explains "was imputed for  
righteousness" by this phrase, "was imputed as a reward." So  
that to impute any thing to a man for righteousness, and to im-  
pute a reward to a man for any thing, is the same, or at least  
are both contained in the same idea of justification. Therefore

DISS. the regulations of this act of the Last Judgment are the same I. with the former. For when we are justified in this life, a right to eternal life is truly conferred upon us, according to the law of Christ, when we are judged. In the next world the same right is decided and confirmed by the solemn sentence of the judge.

§ 3. That this is an accurate description of divine judgment in the next world (that it is a decisive sentence pronounced by the judge, both on our righteousness, and also on our consequent right to eternal life, which we here obtain, according to the law of Christ,) may be proved from many

See Rom. very strong passages in the New Testament. But that pas-  
2. 5, 6, 12,  
13, 16;  
1 Cor. 4. 5;  
3.13; Mat.  
12. 36, 37.  
1 Cor. 4. 4. sage, in the first Epistle to the Corinthians, which for another reason we have before praised, deserves particular attention : “For I know nothing by myself, yet am I not hereby justified, but He that judgeth me is the Lord.” It is plain from what follows in the fifth verse, that he alludes to the judgment to come, clearly teaching that the Almighty judge will then certainly and infallibly pronounce of our righteousness or unrighteousness in this life. Thus far of the major proposition.

§ 4. Let us proceed to the minor :—but whoever can deny this, must shut his eyes against the clear light of Scripture. For how often is it there expressly said, that God will judge every man according to his works ? Besides, the very cause and reason of the sentence, by which eternal life is given to the just, is evidently taken from their works : which passages should be more carefully observed, because they answer a foolish objection of theirs, who say, that eternal life is given to our works only as signs and effects of faith. For from the passages referred to above it is plain, that our works, in this matter, are considered as the very thing on account of which (by the merciful covenant of God through Christ) eternal life is given us. None hath expressed this matter better than the excellent Vossius <sup>t</sup>: “It is asked, whether a reward is promised to works, as signs of faith ? Now we conceive that they say too much, who suppose it promised to works as deserving it ; and that they say too little, who think it promised to them only, as signs of faith. For there are many passages of Scripture, by which it is shewn that our works, in the business of

See Mat.  
25. 21, 23,  
34, 35.

<sup>t</sup> De Bonis Oper. Thes. 10.

salvation, are regarded as indispensably requisite, or as a primary condition, to which the reward of eternal life is inseparably connected." This very learned man proves his opinion from the passages already produced, adding some others. Both extremes must be carefully avoided ; that which makes works self-deserving of eternal life—the error of the Roman Catholics, at which every heart must feel shocked—and that which denies them all other connection with heavenly rewards, than as they are signs of that faith to which salvation is promised. This opinion, as we have seen, is at open variance with many very striking passages of Holy Writ. A middle path must be chosen; and we say, that the only foundation of that connection which our works have with eternal life, is this : that they are a condition required in the Gospel Covenant, to which condition, upon its performance, are most graciously promised, in the same Covenant, eternal rewards.

§ 6. Moreover, that good works are not to be regarded in the business of salvation as mere signs of faith, Grotius has well shewn by this reason : "Every sign is inferior to the thing signified : but charity, by which these works are performed, and which therefore must be considered as part of them, is greater than faith." And it also appears from what St. James says, "By works is faith made perfect, and works co-operate with faith." Well, then, does the perfection of the thing signified depend on the sign, or does the sign co-operate with the thing signified ? It is of no use to dwell on such trifles.

## CHAP. VI.

THE FIFTH AND LAST ARGUMENT, DRAWN FROM THE IMPLICIT CONFESSION OF OUR ADVERSARIES.—TWO FACTS UNANIMOUSLY ALLOWED BY REFORMED DIVINES; FIRST, THAT THE FAITH WHICH JUSTIFIES SHOULD BE A LIVING FAITH, THAT IS, PRODUCTIVE OF GOOD WORKS. SECOND, THAT GOOD WORKS ARE UNDENIABLY NECESSARY TO SALVATION.—THE NECESSITY OF GOOD WORKS TO JUSTIFICATION, SHEWN FROM BOTH THESE POINTS.

DISS. I. § 1. WE are at last arrived at our fifth and last argument; but this we will deduce from the implicit consent of all, and therefore of our adversaries themselves. Such indeed is the force of truth, that frequently she makes her opponents speak in her words, undesignedly indeed, and unconsciously; and error is often as contradictory to itself as to truth. We have an instance of this in the present case. For there are some points in which all the Reformed Divines agree, and which being allowed, this doctrine of the necessity of good works to justification, neither can, nor ought to be denied. But before we enter upon this argument, it is right to inform our readers, that we are not here speaking of the public Confessions of Faith, of the Reformed Churches, but of the private opinions of certain learned men, who profess to follow those Confessions. For with respect to the Confessions of the Reformed Churches, it is clear that they all, or at least the principal, and most excellent of them, are professedly on our side of the question. For although they teach, *that man is justified by faith alone without works*, yet they explain that expression in a sense, which we readily admit. Thus the authors of those Confessions expressly say, that this sentence is to be figuratively taken; so that in the word faith, grace, to which it is opposed, must be understood; and that to be justified by faith alone, is the same as to be justified by grace alone, and not by the merit of works; and, properly speaking, faith and the other virtues, and good works, are of equal validity, and the same necessity to justification; neither in this matter is any thing more to be attributed to faith than to good works; so that they reject faith itself, just as much as they do good

works from justification. The latter part of our second C H A P.  
VI.  
c. 18. § 6. Dissertation will satisfy any further doubts on this subject. Whatever difficulty, therefore, or error hath involved this most evident doctrine of the justification of man, as taught by Protestants of the present day, it must be attributed entirely to the mistakes of certain private men, who have not clearly understood the opinions of the purer, and if I may so express myself, the primitive reformation: yet still these divines, although they have, by their Scholastic absurdities, darkened this otherwise clear and perspicuous doctrine, wandered not so far from the truth, but that, praised be God, they have sanctioned by their consent, certain points from which it will appear that our opinion is undeniably true, and beyond the power of contradiction. Of these, we shall here treat only of two.

§ 2. In the first place then, all the divines of the Reformed Churches, with a few exceptions, among the more rigid Lutherans, and those who do not deserve to be reckoned among the Reformers, unanimously acknowledge, that a faith, living and not dead, a faith which has good works united with it, moreover, which neither is, nor can be, without good works, is the true and justifying faith, as they call it, which by this peculiarity is distinguished from historic and temporary faith, and the faith of miracles. Here then what is the difference? Whoever properly attends to this subject, will assuredly allow, that the point on which this controversy turns, is a metaphysical subtlety. Whether, forsooth, the faith, *which* is living, or faith, *in that* it is living, is required to justification? in short the matter comes at last, as some very learned divines<sup>u</sup> have clearly shewn, merely to the use of the particle *quatenus*, *as far as*, and hence have arisen much anger and division. Were it not for the importance of the subject we are upon, one could scarcely restrain from laughter, at finding these words, in writings of divines of no small character, "Faith pregnant with good works, justifies before she brings forth." The mountains are in labour, and they have produced a mouse.—After much turning and twisting, when we at last arrive at the summit of the controversy, we are

*qua est  
viva.*

<sup>u</sup> Examen Censur. c. x.

DISS. <sup>L</sup> left by these doctors at this trifling and almost imperceptible point of distinction. Learned men would certainly have my leave to amuse themselves with such trifles, if I did not perceive that they obtruded these subtleties on others seriously, and almost as if they were articles of faith ; (as if they were scarcely orthodox, who could not pronounce this “Shibboleth ;”) and if it were not most unhappily proved by melancholy experience, that these empty distinctions, these far-fetched contrivances, are used for the support of the most dreadful errors, which the common people deduce from these doctrines. Most wisely did Grotius\* say, “Much danger is the consequence of these incautious expressions. For most men hearing and reading these things” (namely, that we are justified by faith alone without any works) “while they live in sin and do not amend their conduct, still promise themselves salvation. Because to be sure, as they say, Christ died expressly for this purpose, that He might save them ; and applying to themselves, by faith, the righteousness of Christ, which is most perfect and worthy of a heavenly reward, His merits become theirs. If this can be so managed, every thing else is certainly superfluous, and it is of little consequence how they live. Unconditionally hath Christ made satisfaction for the punishment they deserve to suffer ; unconditionally hath He obtained eternal glory for them.” In one word, whoever of the common people shall receive this doctrine undisguisedly delivered, namely, that faith is the only instrument of justification, and that good works have no weight, are of no importance in this matter, though you should afterwards invent a thousand distinctions, you will never persuade him to perform any good works, as altogether necessary either to his justification or salvation.

Diss. 11. 9. § 3. Now, though we have already sufficiently proved that good works not only accompany justifying faith, but also are no less required to justification than faith itself, and that they are as much to be regarded a cause in this matter as faith (that is, that faith and works are jointly prescribed as the only condition of justification in the Gospel Covenant) ; that also more is attributed in the Holy Scriptures to love, which produces every other work, than to faith itself ; and that faith

\* Discuss. p. 47, 48. [Vol. iii. p. 691.]

has no weight with God, except when, and inasmuch as, it CHAP.  
brings forward this charity, still out of a great abundance, VI.  
we will produce a few remarks from this second chapter of  
St. James.

§ 4. First then, when it is expressly said by St. James, that a man is justified by works, the particle *by* has evidently  $\epsilon\zeta\tau\rho\gamma\omega\nu$ . a more extensive meaning than that of mere connection. For if faith alone, and by itself, performs the work of justification (good works only standing by as it were), it can in no sense be said that a man is justified by works; secondly, when the Apostle in the twenty-second verse, speaking of the faith of Abraham, affirms, that "faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith<sup>y</sup> made perfect:" is it not clear,  $\epsilon\tau\epsilon\lambda\epsilon\omega\theta\eta$ . that faith and works do co-operate in the business of justification (of which he had been treating in the words immediately preceding the twenty-first verse), that faith also is of itself imperfect, and is not conducive to the end of justification unless it is perfected by good works?

§ 5. What Cameron on this passage opposes to our interpretation, (with all due deference to so great a man), is extremely weak. He is wonderfully critical on the word "co-operate." He observes, that "if it was St. James's  $\sigma u e p \gamma e i v$ . intention to teach that faith co-operated with works to justification, he would no doubt have chosen other words, and said that works co-operated with faith, rather than faith with works;" as if these expressions conveyed different meanings. The word "co-operate," signifies a joint operation, and he who says that faith co-operates with works, says at the same time, that works co-operate with faith. With equal reason, may a man say, that by these words, "We are fellow-workers (co-operators) with God," is not 1 Cor. 3. 9. meant the co-operation of the Divine grace with the la-  $\sigma u e p y o t$ . bours of the Apostles in preaching the Gospel, because then it would have been said, God is a fellow-worker with us.

§ 6. Upon the latter words, "and by works was faith made perfect," Cameron thus remarks: "faith is here said by

<sup>y</sup> "A thing is said to be perfected operating causes  $\lambda\kappa e v \sigma u v a r t l o w$ ," Gro-  
when it produces its proper effect. tius in locum,  
Faith cannot do this without its co-

36 *In what sense faith is said to be perfected by works.*

DISS. St. James to be perfected by works, not because works make  
I. faith perfect, but because faith, while it produces works,  
2Cor.12.9. shews that it is perfect. Thus in the second Epistle to the  
Corinthians, the power of Christ is said to be perfected in  
infirmities, because then it chiefly exerts and shews itself.”  
But the answer is easy. Whatever may be determined con-  
cerning this passage, it is certain, that the word, “to perfect,”  
τελειοῦν. in this passage of St. James, signifies not only to shew per-  
fection, but to give it. This is evident from the preceding  
passage, in which faith and works are said to “co-operate,”  
that is, work together. Hence it is manifest, that works  
perfect faith, not only by shewing it, but also by co-operating  
with it; that is, by adding to it a certain force and power.

§ 7. Another argument of Cameron’s is no stronger, by  
τελειοῦν-  
σθαι. which he thus contends against the meaning of the word “to  
make perfect” in this passage. “How,” says he, “can faith  
be understood to be perfected by works, if works do not add  
a certain perfection to faith in the work of justification?  
But it is clear that no perfection is added to faith by works  
in the matter of justification, since they proceed from faith  
as from a cause, and they so proceed from faith as a cause,  
that that is not a good work which does not proceed from  
faith. For whatever is without faith is sin, and by faith the  
heart is purified, whence all works come and receive their  
value.” I answer; it is indeed true, that the expression,  
faith is perfected by works, can scarcely be understood in  
any other sense than that works give perfection to faith in  
the matter of justification; and this is what St. James affirms  
and we support. Cameron endeavours to prove the contrary  
by these two arguments: first, because good works proceed  
from faith as their cause: secondly, because works receive  
their value and goodness from faith. The first argument is  
very weak, because it supposes that nothing caused can  
exceed the excellence of its cause, which is most false. The  
sun for instance generates animals, and yet the least of them  
in the order of beings is more perfect than the sun, as being  
endued with feeling, which the sun is without. The father  
begets a son, who far excels him in beauty, strength, wisdom,  
and virtue. So faith produces love, which yet is far more  
noble than faith. Again: if we are to believe Cameron, faith,

love, and all the other virtues of the elect, arise from a C H A P. VI.  
certain knowledge and experience, with which their minds are illuminated by the Holy Spirit, as from a cause on which they necessarily depend. Will then this learned man say, that in the matter of justification no perfection can be added to that knowledge by faith, love, and the other virtues ? So that this man falls by his own sword.

§ 8. The other argument of Cameron is clearly false ; for every virtue has distinct properties, by which it exists as a virtue, and does not borrow this from faith. But if there be any universal virtue which fills, as it were, all the rest with goodness, and gives them their value and importance, that certainly is charity, the true love of God and our neighbour, from which whatever arises will at last be grateful and pleasing to God, although it should seem otherwise of but little value. See Mat. 10. 41, 42. The passages which Cameron produces prove nothing. For in Mark 9.41. that text, "whatever is not of faith is sin," the Apostle is not speaking of Evangelic Faith, upon which we are here treating, but of that persuasion by which any one thinks that is lawful which he does, as is evident from the context. The other passage, in which he says, "the heart is purified by faith," is also foreign to the purpose. For although faith be the means which God uses in purifying the heart, still that heart must be purified and warmed with the true love of God and our neighbour, before God will deem it worthy of salvation. It is true, indeed, that every work really good arises from faith ; Heb. 11. 6. but it is also true that faith is not of itself sufficient to perform any good work, nor to be accepted by God to salvation : for love must be added to it, by which a man comes to God (that is, sincerely worships Him) and diligently seeks for Him as the faithful rewarder of all those who pray unto Him, as is immediately added in the same passage. In the same manner also, without a true knowledge of the divine will, it is impossible to please God, that is, to perform this very will. Yet whoever should hence conclude that this knowledge will by itself obtain salvation of God, and that faith, charity, and the other Christian virtues, can add no perfection to it in this matter ; and, in short, that on its account only are good works estimable in the sight of God, such an one would become truly ridiculous. But we have already said more than

38 *Works St.Paul speaks of wholly excluded from justification.*

DISS. sufficient to rescue this famous passage of St. James from  
I. false explanations.

Ver. 26. § 9. In the last place, whoever contends that man is justified by faith alone, and that works have no effect in the producing that event, is equally absurd with him who should affirm that man lives by the body alone, and that the soul contributes nothing to his life; for this is considered by the Apostle as a true comparison. This then is too evident to be by any means evaded.

Rom. 4. 5. § 10. Moreover, it must be observed, since the principal reason why most have recourse to this idle evasion is, that they may not contradict the Epistles of St. Paul, where most frequently works are excluded from the business of justification, that if any one will pay proper attention, he will presently perceive, that the works whereof St. Paul speaks, he not only excludes from the act of justification, but rejects entirely, as not at all necessary. This is very evident from Rom. 3. 28. the following passage: "To him that worketh not, but believeth on Him that justifieth the wicked, his faith is counted for righteousness." Which shews that a man is not only justified by faith without works, but that even he who is without works is justified. St. Paul again says the same, except we commit actual violence upon his words: "Man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law." For there, by the phrase, "without works," works are not only clearly excluded from justification, but also are separated from that faith which justifies, and from that man who is justified. Wherefore their ingenious contrivance, who teach that works are necessarily united with justifying faith, although not in the act of justification, is no less absurd in itself, than opposite to the words of St. Paul; for the sake of explaining which however it was invented: and thus far of the first point.

§ 11. The second point receives a no less unanimous consent from Reformed divines; namely, that good works are necessary to obtain salvation. I might hence conclude, in conformity with this doctrine, that therefore good works ought to be determined as necessary no less so to justification; and this is the reason of such conclusion. In justification, as we have observed in the fourth argument, a right

is given us to salvation and eternal life, and this all C H A P. VI.  
acknowledge. How then can good works be determined necessary to obtain eternal life in him, to whom already, by justification, the reward of eternal life hath been adjudged without works? Here some will answer, that good works are a condition necessary to obtain salvation itself by the promise of God, but not so that any one thereby obtains a right to justification, for that is freely given to faith alone in justification. But first, when men acknowledge that good works are a preceding condition necessarily requisite for salvation, and yet deny that by works a right is obtained to salvation, they clearly shew, either that they do not know what a condition is, or else are ready to contradict themselves. Now a condition, such as we here mean, is the condition of a promise, agreement, or covenant; but a promise, agreement, or covenant, confers a right to the benefit contained in it only on the performance of the condition, and therefore a condition always refers to some right to be obtained. Whoever therefore allows that good works are a condition necessarily to be performed to the obtaining eternal life, by the divine promise, he by this very act confesses, that a right to eternal life cannot be obtained without works. Secondly, Whoever denies that a right to salvation can be obtained by works, opposes the clear and express testimony of the Holy Spirit. For hear what Christ Himself says: "Blessed are Rev.22.14. they that do His commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life." To this may be added, all those passages of the New Testament in which eternal life is clearly declared by the Almighty to be justly due to our works. See 2Thes. 1. 7. Heb. From these texts we may thus argue. If the reward to 6.10. 2Tim. eternal life is due of right to our works, then from our works 4. 8. we obtain a right to that reward; (such a right certainly as hath its only foundation in the gracious covenant of God, through Christ.) The terms are correlative; to whom a reward is given of right, necessarily he hath a right to that reward, and the converse.

§ 12. It would be easy to add much more: but he who still retains his reason, and the love of truth, will easily see from what we have already said, that our doctrine is deducible, by a consequence clearer than the light, from the very con-

DISS. I.—essions of our adversaries. And indeed it is very wonderful, that they who acknowledge the necessity of good works to attain salvation on the promise of God, should be so averse from our opinion, that good works are also necessarily required to justification. For by the same arguments through which they are induced to reject this, they must necessarily reject the other also, if they are consistent with themselves. For why do they deny that good works are necessary to justification? First, because this opinion detracts from the merits of Christ; secondly, because it contradicts St. Paul. But who does not perceive that these arguments equally militate against the other opinions which they support? With respect to the merits of Christ, to them our salvation, no less than our justification, is entirely due. Freely are we saved, freely are we justified. With respect to St. Paul, it is manifest that the works upon which he treats are by him just as far removed from having any effect in our salvation as in our justification. Works which are excluded from either are so from both; this appears from many passages of St. Paul, particularly from that in the Epistle to Titus, chapter 3, verse 5, compared with that in the Epistle to the Ephesians, chapter 2, verses 8, 9. But it is now time for us to consider other passages of the same nature in the writings of that Apostle.

# HARMONIA APOSTOLICA.

## SECOND DISSERTATION.

ON

ROMANS, CHAP. 3. VER. 28.

"WE CONCLUDE THEREFORE THAT A MAN IS JUSTIFIED BY FAITH, WITHOUT  
THE WORKS OF THE LAW."

COMPARED WITH ST. JAMES, CHAP. 2. VER. 24.



## CHAP. I.

THE VARIOUS SCHEMES OF DIVINES, FOR RECONCILING ST. JAMES AND  
ST. PAUL.—THOSE WHO SUPPOSE JAMES TO SPEAK OF THE JUSTIFICATION  
OF MAN'S FAITH BEFORE OTHER MEN, AND NOT BEFORE GOD, REFUTED.

§ 1. We have now sufficiently proved the conclusion of CHAP.  
St. James, concerning the necessity of good works to jus-  
tification. That being so strongly established and con-  
firmed, it only remains that we should treat of the agree-  
ment between the two Apostles, St. James and St. Paul.  
Let us hear both. St. James says thus: “Ye see then that Jas. 2. 24.  
man is justified by works, and not by faith alone.” The  
conclusion of St. Paul is directly opposite to this. “We Rom. 3. 28.  
conclude therefore that a man is justified by faith without  
the works of the law.” What a difference, and how shall we  
reconcile them!

§ 2. But let not the reader be discouraged; with a little  
patience he will certainly find these Apostles, though appa-  
rently disagreeing, in the most perfect harmony with each  
other, and themselves. I will, moreover, venture to promise,  
however incredible it may appear, that from what St. Paul  
hath said concerning works, I will bring additional proofs for  
the doctrine of St. James, of justification by works. But  
before we make this attempt, it will be right, and almost  
necessary, to consider first what schemes of reconciliation  
others have adopted.

§ 3. In the first place then, many think that St. James  
does not attribute to works, justification in the sight of God  
(of which St. Paul speaks), but only a declaration and proof  
of it before men, which cannot be done by internal faith,  
which is invisible, but by external works, which as the out-  
ward effects of faith demonstrate the inward cause; that is,  
they suppose St. Paul to treat of the justification of man  
before God, which is by faith alone; but St. James of the  
justification of man's faith before other men, which can be  
by works only. And this foolish scheme they attempt to  
prove, principally by two arguments.

41      *Their arguments who suppose St. James to speak*

DISS.    § 4. In the first place, it is evident, they say, from the  
II.       very words of St. James, "Shew me thy faith by thy works."

Jas. 11. 18. Is it not evident from hence, that St. James only means, that by works a proof is given of faith to men? What the Apostle, it may be answered, here says of the proof of faith to men, does not complete his principal design, but is only annexed to the leading question of justification before God; which proves that so far is any one from being justified without works by faith alone, before God, that not even men can be certain (humanly speaking) of another's faith, unless pious acts, the best marks of faith, attest it. We will soon establish this truth by some incontestable arguments.

Gen. 15. 6.    § 5. They argue thus: Abraham is said to be justified by the sacrifice of his son Isaac, but before God he had been justified long before that, by faith. Therefore, justification here signifies a man's being declared just before men, and not made so before God. I answer, that this objection is built on a false idea, that justification is, as they assert, an instantaneous act, entirely completed at once, in a single moment. This can by no means be admitted. For justification is a continued act, and only then perfectly finished, when a man hath entirely, and to the last, fulfilled the condition of that covenant, by which he is justified. Therefore, although Abraham had been justified before, still he might be said even then also to be justified, when in will, at least, he had sacrificed his only son to God. Moreover, he then became a peculiar object of divine approbation, by an act of obedience truly admirable, a greater than which could not perhaps be expected of man. And hence I am persuaded, that this is the very reason why the Apostle dwells upon this act of Abraham's, when he could otherwise have entered more deeply into his subject, by referring to the first origin of the matter. For it is certain, that Abraham, when he was first thought worthy of the divine favour, approved himself before God, not by faith alone, but by an act of obedience by no means trifling, when in obedience to the divine promise he left his father, and his father's house, and with the greatest cheerfulness entered upon a pilgrimage, long, uncertain, and replete with dangers of every kind. The

Heb. 11. 8. author of the Epistle to the Hebrews particularly dwells

upon this action of Abraham's; and it was indeed an exploit truly heroic, but still far inferior to the other, when at the intimation of God, he was ready to slay and offer up in sacrifice, Isaac his son, his only son, his best beloved, the son of the promise, the destined heir of the world, and this too by his own hands. When Abraham was doing this, he had arrived at the highest pitch of obedience, and had recommended his submission to God by a proof which perhaps cannot be surpassed; then too his justification had every thing but received its final and entire completion. Hence St. James affirms, that Abraham, for giving this wonderful proof of his obedience to God, was called the friend of God. The Apostle undoubtedly alludes (as Grotius in his first annotations on this passage has aptly remarked) to Gen. 22. ver. 16, and the following verses, where God makes a new covenant with Abraham because he had not spared his son through his love to God, confirming it by an oath<sup>a</sup>, and thus received him into a higher degree of friendship.

§ 6. Should these arguments appear rather obscure, yet I trust those by which we shall soon prove the absurdity of this interpretation of St. James, will be clearer than the light itself. We say then, that this interpretation is both absurd in itself, and at the same time inconsistent with, or rather diametrically opposite to, the very words of St. James. It is absurd in itself, and has not even the appearance of truth. For who, in that age, was so mad, as to contend with the Apostle, that a man was justified, that is, declared just in the sight of *men*, by faith alone; since faith, it is generally allowed, is an internal action, only produced in the heart, and therefore being wholly removed from human observance, can shew itself by its external effects alone, by fruits agreeable to its nature.

§ 7. In the next place, this comment is repugnant to the very words of the Apostle. For, first, it must be observed, that while the Apostle denies man to be justified by faith alone, he allows it to be by faith in part. "By works, and not by faith alone." Now a man is justified in the sight of other men by works alone, and not by faith in any measure, for this escapes human notice, being an internal action, while

<sup>a</sup> How greatly this oath is to be valued, see Heb. 6. 13, &c.

**DISS.** the former only are objects of our senses. Secondly, What if this interpretation produce from the Apostle's words an evident solecism? For if it be true that St. James is here to be understood as speaking of the justification of our faith before men, then his conclusion, "Ye see a man is justified by works, and not by faith alone," must be thus understood. Ye see that the faith of a man is justified by works, and not by faith alone. What can be more absurd, and more unworthy of such an Apostle? Thirdly, This interpretation is well refuted by these words of the fourteenth verse. "What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works; can faith save him?" Is it not hence evident, that the Apostle is speaking of the acceptance of man to salvation with God, and not of the approbation of man with other men? Fourthly, St. James, as we have elsewhere shewn, means the same thing by "Being <sup>b</sup>justified, and being called the friend of God." He is speaking, therefore, of a justification similar to that by which a man is admitted into the favour and friendship of God. Fifthly, and lastly, "To be justified" is used by St. James in the same sense as "To be imputed for righteousness" is in the other Scriptures, ver. 23. But who ever supposed this expression of the imputation of righteousness by God Himself, to signify the declaration of a man's righteousness among his fellow creatures? I conclude, therefore, that this interpretation of St. James is palpably absurd, and therefore to be rejected.

λογίζεσθαι  
εἰς δικαοστύνην.

## CHAP. II.

**THEIR OPINION CONSIDERED, WHOMO SUPPOSE ST. PAUL TO SPEAK OF A TURE AND LIVELY FAITH, BUT ST. JAMES OF A FALSE AND FEIGN DONE.—THIS OVERTURNED BY VARIOUS ARGUMENTS, AND THE OBJECTIONS OF THIS PARTY ANSWERED.**

§ 1. A SECOND idea for the purpose of this reconciliation supposes there is in the word faith, a double meaning. St. Paul, say its supporters, speaks of a true and lively faith,

<sup>b</sup> Diss. I. 5.

which is efficacious by works. St. James of one false, feigned, and in fact, dead, which is only a shadow, a resemblance of faith, and not a true faith. No wonder then that St. Paul ascribes to a lively faith, that justification which St. James denies to a dead one.

§ 2. Before we treat of this opinion, we must remark, that many unite this interpretation with the foregoing one, so that in comparing the words of St. James with St. Paul, they suppose two double meanings, one in the word justification, which with St. Paul means the justification of man before God: but with St. James, stands for the declaration of a man's righteousness before other men. The second, in the word faith, which with St. Paul, means a lively faith, but with St. James, a dead one. How confused, inconsistent, and contradictory to itself is all this! For if justification be in St. James, the declaration of a man's faith in the sight of other men, and at the same time if he means by the word faith, a false and dead faith, does it not follow, that the Apostle says a false and dead faith is declared before men by good works? What can be more absurd? However, this observation being remembered, we will proceed to examine this second interpretation alone, and distinct from the former.

· § 3. As to what they say concerning the faith meant by St. James being a dead faith, and without works, we will grant it upon this condition: that they on their parts shall allow that all faith by itself is dead, and only receives its life from works, that is, that without works it is of no avail with God, as to our salvation, as the Apostle openly teaches. But this our adversaries will not do, for they think that there is a certain kind of faith, which has in itself a power of justifying, for which it is in no respect indebted to works, although it cannot be separated from them. Their meaning then is, that St. James speaks of such a faith as is imperfect in its kind, and not possessed of the true nature of faith. In a word, which is only a resemblance of faith, and not faith itself.

§ 4. But how greatly does their interpretation differ from the words of the Apostle. For first, St. James approves of the faith concerning which he speaks: "Thou believest there

**DISS.** is one God, thou doest well." Therefore he cannot be understood as speaking of a pretended faith. Secondly, The faith See ver.24. of which the Apostle speaks, he allows, does in part justify a man. But by a pretended faith, one not true, no man can be said to be justified in any degree whatever. Here Pareus<sup>c</sup> would remove this objection, by saying, "that the Apostle does not affirm, but deny, that faith alone justifies; that is faith solitary, without works; neither does he divide justification between works and faith, but attributes it entirely to works, and denies it entirely to faith; and therefore he does not say, ye see that by works also, but, ye see that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only." Amazing acuteness! for the Apostle does not say that faith *alone*, or *which is alone*, does not justify, but, it *only* does not justify, "not by faith only." And if for the adverb "*only*," you put the adjective "*alone*," we are just where we were. Hence then it appears, that the Apostle teaches thus: the faith of which he speaks, will justify when united with works, but will not when alone, and without works. Now this can in no sense be said of a faith false and feigned. I should certainly be astonished at what Pareus asserts, that St. James attributes justification entirely to works, did I not recollect he understood St. James as speaking only of justification before men. But if any one in his senses can think so now, after what has been said to the contrary, I am persuaded he is determined to be blind. Thirdly, It is evident from the following consideration, that the Apostle denies, not only that a false, but even that a true faith has alone the office of justifying. That faith which was in Abraham, undoubtedly was a true faith, and not a mere resemblance: but this very See ver.21. faith of Abraham could not justify him without works, for he is said to be justified by works. Fourthly, and lastly, The Apostle expressly speaks of that faith which sometimes co-operates with works, and by works is assisted towards its See ver.22. end, that is, justification, which cannot be applied to a false faith. <sup>d</sup>We have already vindicated this verse from bad interpretations. I briefly therefore conclude thus: St. James is plainly arguing of that faith to which nothing is wanting

<sup>f</sup> Explicat. dubiorum, c. 3. ad Rom. dub. 9. in resp. ad obj. 3.

<sup>d</sup> Diss. I. vi. 4, &c.

but good works, and which, if they be added to it, will certainly render a man acceptable with God, and place him in a state of salvation. But a false faith is imperfect in its nature, it cannot be added to good works, and if it could, would not therefore become a true faith.

§ 5. Let us now turn to those arguments by which our adversaries endeavour to support their interpretation. They produce two only, which deserve consideration. First then, they object, that the Apostle speaks of such a faith as may be found in the very devils, and therefore must not be understood as speaking of the true faith. To this I answer: It is most certain; since both the Apostle so testifies, and reason itself confirms it, that the assent and faith of devils are true, that is, not feigned. But this faith is of no advantage to them, because it doth not produce love in them. The cause of which perhaps is both because they know themselves to be excluded from the grace of the Gospel by an irreversible decree, and because their nature is so perfectly depraved, that even should the hope of pardon be given, it would perhaps be impossible for them to love God, and to be inclined to any good act. The force therefore of the Apostle's argument is this: the very devils have faith and assent, to whom this faith is yet of no advantage, because it does not produce piety in them; by parity of reasoning, you, whoever you may be, who trust in your faith will, like them, reap no advantage from it, except to your faith you add works. You will allege that real faith is at least a real virtue, which even those will allow, who deny that it is sufficient alone to justification: but in devils, no real virtue can be found, and therefore no real faith. But this may be easily answered. For the very faith which in man is a virtue, is in devils entirely deficient in that quality<sup>e</sup>. And for a very evident reason; the object of faith, or thing to be believed, is known by devils, with such strong, and indisputable evidence, that they must believe through invincible necessity, and therefore in their belief is nothing praiseworthy or virtuous. But faith is not produced in man after the same manner, since the objects of faith are proposed to us as very credible, and

<sup>e</sup> See Estius, b. iii. dist. 23. sec. 5.

D I S S. confirmed by arguments of such a kind, as may abundantly convince minds which are impartial, dispositions not biassed<sup>f</sup>. However, these articles of faith are not urged upon us by an evidence which cannot be resisted. For then, among the hearers of the Gospel there would be no unbelievers, when alas! there are far too many. This liberty of believing in man, makes that faith in him a virtue, and a praiseworthy act of obedience, which in devils deserves no praise, because there is to them no liberty of not believing. This answer derives no little support from St. James himself, who praises in man only, that faith which he allows may be found in devils. "Thou believest there is one God, thou doest well;" that is, this faith is a virtue deserving of some praise, but it is not sufficient, it will not secure salvation, except the works of love be added to it.

§ 6. The other objection is taken from the 17th, 20th, and 26th verses of this chapter, a dead faith is not a true faith: but the faith against which St. James argues, is by him called a dead faith: therefore, &c. I answer: It seems a strange matter, that learned men should use such an argument, since there is no passage of St. James which more clearly overturns their whole interpretation. This every one must perceive who shall consider the 26th verse with fair impartiality. "As the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also." For here observe, in the first place: when faith without works is said by St. James to be dead, the word 'dead' does not refer so much to the nature of faith, as to its effect, that is, he does not mean that faith without works is not a true faith, but that such a faith has no effect, that is, is of no avail with God, and does not promote the justification or salvation of man. This clearly appears from the fourteenth verse compared with the seventeenth, where faith that cannot save, and faith that is dead, are terms meaning the same thing. This also is still more manifest from verses 16 and 17: where, in the simile used by the Apostle, the words, "what doth it profit," are opposed to "faith is dead." Secondly, it must be observed, that the

<sup>f</sup> Vide Thom. Bradward. de Causâ Dei, lib. i. cap. 1. Coroll. par. 32. p. 59. et Grotius de Verit. Religionis Christ. lib. ii. in fine, and the Schoolmen generally.

Apostle does not say, as a man without the spirit is dead, but C H A P.  
"as the body without the spirit is dead:" and thus this — II.  
frivolous objection of some vanishes. A dead man is not a  
man, but only the corpse of a man; so a dead faith is not  
faith, but only the corpse of faith. For the Apostle does  
not compare dead faith with a dead man, but only with a  
dead body. As, therefore, a dead body is truly and properly  
a body, so a dead faith is truly and properly faith: but a  
dead body can do nothing, can exercise no action of life; so  
likewise a dead faith can do no good, and contribute nothing  
to the salvation of man. Thirdly, the body, if it be animated  
by the spirit, becomes a living body, and performs the functions  
of life, so the faith of which St. James speaks becomes, when  
works are added to it, a lively faith, and contributes to salvation,  
which none in their senses can assert of a false faith,  
since to such faith is wanting the true nature of faith, which  
it cannot obtain of works. In short, what is not a true body  
never can be united to a soul, neither by its means can the  
soul exercise the functions of life. In the same manner, it is  
utterly impossible that good works should be added to that  
faith which is not a true one. Fourthly and lastly, from the  
simile of St. James this at least is manifest, that good works  
perform the same office to faith in matters respecting justifi-  
cation and salvation, as the soul does to the body in what  
respects life, that is, as it is through the spirit that the body  
lives and performs the functions of life, so it is through good  
works that faith lives, that is, promotes our salvation. For since  
these expressions "faith is dead," "cannot save," "can profit  
nothing," all signify the same thing, as we have just shewn,  
it follows of course, that the expressions opposed to these,  
"a faith that lives," "profits," "works out salvation," have  
also the same meaning.

§ 7. One may well wonder what those who teach that  
faith is the only instrument of justification, and that works  
effect nothing in this matter, have to oppose to all this. But  
hear Cameron. In the first place he asks with some indigna-  
tion, whether those who strictly press this simile of St. James,  
will say, that "as the spirit is the cause of life to the body,  
so works are the cause of faith?" But the learned gentleman  
in this his question plays a little trick. For it is not necessary

In Jac. 1:  
26.

**DISS.** for those who say that the spirit is the cause of life to the body, should affirm that works are the cause of faith; besides, if they did, they would abuse the Apostle's simile. For St. James neither says nor hints, that the spirit is the cause of the body, but of life to the body. By similar reasoning, works are not the cause of faith, but the cause of life to faith: that is, they cause the faith of a man to promote his justification, and work out his salvation, which by itself, and without works, it could never perform. And we hesitate not to assert this, since St. James himself teaches the same. Cameron proceeds to ask, "Shall we next say that works give motion to faith, as the spirit does to the body?" Yes to be sure: for that motion of faith by which it approaches salvation is owing to works, without which faith cannot save man. For this is taught

**See ver. 14.** in express terms. At last this learned man concludes with this argument: "It is very true that the Apostle says faith co-operates with works, but that the body co-operates with the soul no man in his senses ever said." I answer, in the first place, if we allow the whole argument, what would be the consequence? only this, that the Apostle's simile is not perfectly exact: in which there is nothing wonderful, for few similes can be found so perfect and accurate as to fail in no point. It was sufficient for the Apostle's simile, that it excellently explained his principal intention, which was to shew that faith by itself would not effect salvation, but with the addition of works it would attain its end; namely, salvation: evidently in the same manner as the body is dead, and can execute nothing without the soul, but the spirit being added to it, it revives, and can perform the usual occupations of life. But in the next place, what absurdity, I wonder, would there be, if any one should say, that the body co-operates with the mind: must he be instantly put into a strait waistcoat? That the body in a certain sense does co-operate with the mind, no sensible man will deny. For although the soul be the spring and source of all action, still the body co-operates with the mind, and is added to it as an instrument, which the spirit uses in most of its works, and without which it is impossible it should perform them. Thus the eye, hand, foot, and other members of the body, obey the soul, as instruments to effect each, according to its appointed use, her several

wishes: so that in this point also the resemblance holds. C H A P.  
For although love be that virtue, which in the matter of II.  
salvation God chiefly regards, and which only, according to  
the gracious covenant of God, attracts salvation by a necessary  
connection, yet even this love must be joined to faith; since  
without it, it is impossible to please God. Still as the body *Heb. 11.6.*  
is so subjected to the soul in action as to have in itself no  
power which it does not borrow from the soul, so faith co-  
operates with love to salvation in such a manner, that alone  
and by itself it has no power in promoting salvation, but only  
so far as it is perfected by love. But we have already taken  
too much pains with such a trivial objection.

§ 8. I will therefore add only one more observation, which  
may be of some use. From this simile of the Apostle's may  
be established that distinction of faith, which our moderns so  
greatly blame, merely because used by the Roman Catholics,  
into ‘imperfect’ and ‘perfected.’ I much wish that all the other “*informis*  
*et for-*  
*mata.*”  
distinctions of the Schoolmen were as agreeable to the Scrip-  
tures. For ‘imperfect faith’ is as the inanimated body of the  
Apostle, and ‘perfected faith’ as the body animated. Thus in  
both cases the faith is a true one, as in both the body is real;  
but as the inanimated body can do nothing, so faith, not  
animated by good works, cannot promote salvation. The  
moderation therefore of the excellent Bucer deserves our praise,  
who thought that in this we had no fault to find with the  
Roman Catholics. I hesitate not to quote his words, as they  
are very well worth our notice. They are from his notes on In *Psal. 11.*  
*edit. Ar-*  
*gendorat.*  
Psalm 11. “I cannot but wish those had a sounder judgment who have given so much trouble with this paradox,  
'We are saved by faith alone,' while it is carried to such a pitch as if righteousness were completed by a mere state of mind. Where then is that love, which with one little word would have stopped all this mischief? They might have said, We are justified by perfected faith, or by faith we obtain the inclination to good works, and therefore righteousness, or faith, is the foundation and root of a good life, as Augustine said, for no one must be scandalized at the truth.” Properly to understand this distinction it must be observed, that when the Apostle makes works the substance of faith, they are considered by him in their root, that is, not in their

DISS. outward effect, but in their inward affections, such as a good  
II. inclination, and love, which is as much the substance of faith, as the soul is of the body, so far at least as faith justifies. For St. James perceived that faith without an inclination of acting, is dead, just as the body without the soul is dead.—And thus much of the second interpretation of St. James.

### CHAP. III.

THE THIRD OPINION CONSIDERED IS THEIRS WHO, TO RECONCILE ST. JAMES AND ST. PAUL, DIVIDE JUSTIFICATION INTO THE FIRST AND SECOND.—IT IS SHORTLY PROVED, THAT THIS OPINION IS BOTH FALSE, AND ALSO REPUGNANT TO THE REASONING OF THE APOSTLES.—THE SAME SHEWN OF THE OPINION OF PLACÆUS CONCERNING THE TWOFOLD ACCUSATION, FROM WHICH WE ARE FREED IN JUSTIFICATION.

§ 1. The third method of reconciliation which we shall briefly consider is theirs who, by dividing justification into the first and second, suppose they can easily remove the apparent disagreement between the Apostles. These lay down that the beginning of justification, according to St. Paul, must be obtained by faith alone without works, but the continuation, perfection, and completing of it, is only done by works, and this is all that St. James insists on. Most writers of the Roman Catholic Church greatly esteem this interpretation, and many Reformed divines allow it when accommodated to their sense. I say, when accommodated to their sense, because the Roman Catholics mean by their first justification, the infusion of the first grace, which is produced by that faith wherewith the heart is purified. But the Reformers by their first justification, mean the first entrance of a man into the favour and friendship of God, which they suppose St. Paul teaches is to be obtained by faith alone.

§ 2. Still this distinction is in both cases false, and contradictory to the meaning of both the Apostles. The Roman Catholics are wrong, because they take it for granted, that the word justification in the writings of St. Paul means the infusion of habitual grace, which they never can prove that

it ever does. The Reformers are wrong because they suppose a man to receive the first justification by faith alone without works, which cannot be allowed. For no man, as we have already proved by indisputable arguments, can obtain even this first grace of justification, who hath not performed the works of repentance. I readily allow, that the works which precede this first justification are much less and fewer than those which follow it. For after justification, God, in token of His great love, pours upon us a greater measure of His Spirit, by which we are enabled to perform great and excellent works, and thus they who had been ‘just,’ become in the highest sense ‘holy,’ as Grotius<sup>g</sup> elegantly expresses it. And in this sense, as he also observes<sup>h</sup>, must be understood many things which the ancients have said concerning justification by faith alone, and especially that of Augustine’s, which is in every one’s mouth. “Good works follow a man justified, but do not precede him, that is to be justified.” Augustine is certainly not to be understood of every work, but of a long continuance of works, so that his sense may be this: the works which precede justification are less and fewer than those which follow it. Without some explanation of this kind, that maxim so often used, will with difficulty be freed from an evident falsehood.

§ 3. It now only remains for us to shew that this scheme of reconciliation, as understood both by Reformed and Roman Catholic divines, is contrary to the design and intention of both Apostles. St. James, so far from allowing the first justification to be owing to faith alone, without works, utterly rejects faith by itself as a thing foolish, useless, and entirely dead. Neither does this idea any better apply to what St. Paul says. It is clear from the whole train of his reasoning, that he removes the works of which he speaks, not only from the first, but the second justification, and therefore, as we have already shewn<sup>i</sup>, from salvation itself. This third method of reconciliation therefore is equally unfortunate.

§ 4. The last opinion which now remains, is that which I find greatly pleased that learned man, Placæus, and I am

<sup>g</sup> Vot. pro pace. p. 22.

<sup>h</sup> In Annot. in Consult. Cassan. ad Art. 4.

<sup>i</sup> Diss. I. vi. 12.

**DISS.** not sure whether it be not peculiar to him. He thus explains it<sup>k</sup>. "Justification is opposed to accusation; two charges are laid against us at the judgment. First, it is objected that we are sinners, that is, have violated the covenant of the law; secondly, that we are unbelievers, that is, have not performed the condition of the covenant of grace; namely, faith. From the first accusation we are justified by faith alone, through which we embrace the grace and righteousness of Christ; from the latter, by works, which are the proofs of faith. St. James regarding the latter accusation, properly asserts that man is justified by works and not by faith alone: but St. Paul, regarding the first, contends that man is justified by faith only."—Thus far he. But not to speak of other mistakes in this opinion, the learned man is mistaken in his whole system. For he first asserts that faith is the whole and only condition of the Gospel covenant, and that works are only to be regarded as signs and proofs of faith, all which have been already proved erroneous; and secondly, that works are admitted by St. James, as necessary to the latter justification, and faith as sufficient by St. Paul to the first, both of which we have seen are far from the truth, and with respect to St. Paul, shall soon particularly prove it. Thus this last opinion does not take away any part of the difficulty. Let us then seek for a better.

## CHAP. IV.

**THE TRUE METHOD OF REMOVING THIS DIFFICULTY.—ST. PAUL TO BE INTERPRETED FROM ST. JAMES, AND NOT ST. JAMES FROM ST. PAUL.—ST. PAUL USES THE WORDS FAITH AND WORKS WITH DIFFERENT MEANINGS.—WHAT HE MEANS BY FAITH.—THAT WITH HIM FAITH IS ALL THE OBEDIENCE REQUIRED BY THE GOSPEL, CLEARLY ARGUED AND PROVED.—THE CONTRARY OPINION OF GROTIUS REFUTED.**

§ 1. The methods proposed by others to reconcile St. James with St. Paul, we have now considered and rejected, upon the best grounds, as insufficient; it is now time to explain the true solution of this difficulty.

<sup>k</sup> Theses Theolog. Salmur. vol. i. de Justif., Thes. 41. p. 35.

§ 2. And from what we have already said, this may be laid down as a foundation: that it is more agreeable to reason, to explain St. Paul by St. James than the contrary. For besides that the words of St. James are so very express, clear, and evident, that he who hesitates about their sense may well be said to seek a knot in a bullrush; it also deserves particular attention, that many of the ancients, and among them Augustine, supposed this Epistle of St. James with the first of St. John, that of St. Jude and the second of St. Peter, to have been written against those who, mistaking the sense of St. Paul's Epistles, held that faith without good works were sufficient to salvation. Which opinion is greatly confirmed by St. Peter, where he says, that in the Epistles of St. Paul <sup>2 Pet.3.16.</sup> may be found some things hard to be understood, which by bad men are perverted to the worst sense, and to their own destruction. For certainly if you attend to the subject, you will find no doctrine in the Epistles of St. Paul which is more liable to false interpretations, or which, indeed, from the first ages of Christianity to the present, has suffered more, than this very dispute concerning justification by faith alone without works. What adds a farther degree of probability is, that St. James uses the same example of Abraham, to prove works are required for justification, from which St. Paul in the whole of the fourth chapter of his Epistle to the Romans deduces that man is justified by faith without works.

§ 3. However this may be, the meaning of St. James is clear, and whatever obscurity or difficulty there is, must be attributed to the Epistles of St. Paul. This difficulty of St. Paul's words must rest either in the term 'justification' or in the word 'faith,' or 'works.' With respect to the word 'justification,' we have already shewn<sup>1</sup>, I hope, that in the writings of St. Paul it signifies the action of God, as a judge, acquitting man, pronouncing him just, and conferring upon him the reward of eternal life. Concerning this there is no dispute: the difficulty then must be in the name 'faith' or the word 'works.' In reality, St. Paul uses each word with a different meaning upon different occasions, which we shall now prove.

§ 4. First, then, we must enquire what St. Paul means by

<sup>1</sup> Diss. I. i. 6.

**DISS.** the word 'faith.' The answer which we have before given to  
II. this question we shall here more largely explain and demonstrate. Faith, then, to which justification is attributed by St. Paul, is not to be understood as one single virtue, but denotes the whole condition of the Gospel covenant, that is, comprehends in one word all the works of Christian piety. For Zegerus <sup>m</sup> rightly observes: "Absolute and perfect faith, of which frequent mention is made in Scripture, is that by which we not only believe there is a God, but also by believing in Him with truly pious affections we approach to God, and feel ourselves dependent on Him. And this word unites in its meaning, hope, charity, and good works." And he adds, "it ought therefore to be observed, that wherever St. Paul and the other Sacred writers attribute justification, salvation, life, and the like, to faith, they speak of a faith lively and perfect, that is, one which includes hope, charity, and good works."

§ 5. If we prove this point, we shall find less difficulty with the other passages of St. Paul. And first, it is very evident from the comparison of several passages with each other, in Gal. 5. 6. which St. Paul may be his own interpreter: "For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love," and, "In Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature;" "Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God." Who, after reading these verses, will any longer doubt what St. Paul means by faith? Assuredly it is clearer than light itself, that the faith to which St. Paul attributes justification is only that which worketh by love, which is the same as a new creature; which, in short, contains in itself the observance of the commandments of God. To this add those passages where St. Paul explains faith by Rom. 10. 16. obedience. Thus, "But they have not all obeyed the Gospel," for Isaias saith, "Lord, who hath believed our report?" πιστεύειν. Who does not here perceive that to 'believe' and 'to obey the Gospel' signify the same with St. Paul. But if any one doubts what St. Paul means by 'obeying the Gospel,' let him consult the fifteenth chapter of his Epistle to the Romans,

<sup>m</sup> In Praef. ad Annot. ad Ep. Pauli.

verse 18, where that expression is explained ‘by obedience in word and deed.’ Hence we frequently read of ‘the obedience of faith,’ that is, the obedience that arises from faith.

C H A P.

IV.

*περὶ ὑπα-**κοῆς πίσ-**τεως.*

Compare

Rom. 1. 5.

16 ; 5. 19,

26 ; 2 Cor.

7. 15 ; 10.

5, 6 ; also

1 Pet. 1. 2,

22.

1 Cor. 13. 2.

2 Cor. 1. 4.

§ 6. This also is very clear, that the Apostle places no value on mere faith, when separated from love; “And though I have all faith, and have not charity, I am nothing.” The objection which some make, that St. Paul here speaks only of the faith of miracles, and not of perfect faith, is very futile. For, first, he expressly speaks of all kinds of faith: “Though I had *all* faith.” So all knowledge stands for knowledge of every kind; and so ‘all tribulation.’ Secondly, the faith of miracles is the highest degree of faith possible, neither is there any faith considered merely as such, and separated from charity, greater, or more excellent than it. For whoever so heartily believes in the Gospel of Christ, and trusts in Him, as by means of this faith to be able to perform the greatest miracles, surely his faith and confidence has reached the highest pitch. When therefore our adversaries allow that faith of miracles, considered by itself, has no weight with God, they at the same time confess that there can be no simple faith which at all contributes to the salvation of man. The Apostle’s meaning is very clear. “If I had all kind of faith,” even to that degree by which miracles are performed, nay, farther still, not only such as to perform miracles of an inferior nature, but those also of the greatest consequence, as the removing an immense mountain, “I am nothing,” that is, nothing in point of grace, as Aquinas, or in point of gracious acceptance with God, or, as Cajetan observes, nothing with respect to communion with God, or, in short, which is much the same thing, this faith will not profit me in obtaining eternal life, unless I add charity to it. Thirdly, I think none will deny that St. Paul here is speaking only of the true and Gospel love, and not of charity of every kind. To compare which with dead gifts would be bestowing on it cold praise indeed. It is saying nothing to prefer true love to unsound knowledge, lying prophecy, or a false faith. This, as Erasmus <sup>In loc.</sup> well remarks, would be the same as if any one, wishing to magnify the strength of a bull, should assert he was as good as, or better than, a lion dead or deprived of teeth and paws. It is certain, then, that the Apostle, desirous of impressing us

**Diss.** with the great value of love, compares it with the true and perfect gifts of the Spirit, knowledge, prophecy, and faith. Fourthly, and lastly, The Apostle, in the last verse of the chapter, is allowed by all to speak of true and real faith. We must therefore suppose him to speak of the same in the beginning, since the argument is continued throughout, or otherwise we shall make the Apostle reason sophistically.

§ 7. A great dispute hence arises, Can true faith be possibly separated from love? I have, for my own part, not the least doubt of it, and my reasons arise from what we have already said. For, first, the contrary opinion makes the supposition of the Apostle absurd<sup>n</sup>. Secondly, it is certain that knowledge and prophecy, which he ranks with faith, may be separated from love. But, as is truly the case, this point, however decided, cannot affect our present subject, since whether you suppose true faith to be inseparably connected with love, or the contrary, this at least is evident from the words of the Apostle, that no faith can aid the salvation of man, unless such as is, and so far as it is, perfected by love. It is moreover evident, that the same faith, which if it could be separated from love, would profit nothing, when united with love, has no weight by its own influence, neither any power or virtue of justification, which it does not owe to love.

§ 8. Again; it appears that the faith to which St. Paul attributes justification includes obedience in it, from this consideration, that he himself elsewhere states that obedience Rom. 2.13. to the precepts of God is necessary to justification: "For not the hearers of the law are just before God; but the doers of the law shall be justified;" and that here he restrains the law to those precepts which are moral, those which are of universal and perpetual obligation, appears from the whole context of the passage. The Apostle insists, in express words, that the observance of this law is entirely necessary to justification. Here Calvin<sup>o</sup>, and others after him, object, that St. Paul in this passage argues upon his opponents' principles, and not accurately and according to the truth. Calvin's words are these: "The Apostle urges this judgment of the law against the Jews only, because they could not be justified by the law except they fulfilled the law; if they transgressed

<sup>n</sup> See Diss. I. iv. 3.

<sup>o</sup> In loc.

it, a curse was instantly ready for them." A little before he C H A P.  
indignantly uses these expressions according to his custom: IV.  
"Whoever abuses this passage to erect upon it the righteousness  
of works, deserves the scorn of boys." Expressions of  
this kind might indeed be rather expected from a boy than  
so great a man. For although by these words we readily  
allow that the Apostle aims at the Jews principally, who were  
greatly elated by the knowledge of this eternal law more  
clearly revealed to them than to others, and rested satisfied  
with the bare knowledge of it, as if that alone were sufficient  
for their salvation ; still we doubt not, but that these words  
belong indiscriminately, to all who wish to be justified, and  
are blessed with the same knowledge of that law, and they  
are said upon the strictest principles of truth, and not those  
of the opponent. The reasons appear from the text. For  
first, if as the Apostle says, "God will render to every man <sup>Rom. 2.</sup>  
according to his deeds. <sup>6-11.</sup>" To them who by patient continuance  
in well-doing seek for glory and honour and immortality,  
eternal life : but unto them that are contentious and do not  
obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and  
wrath, tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that  
doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile ; but  
glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good,  
to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile." If, I say, these  
opinions are not made upon the opponents' principles, but are  
true for all men, then they must be applied to all, and not to  
the Jews only ; and who will attempt to deny this ? Then  
undoubtedly the words of the thirteenth verse must be under-  
stood in the same manner, since by the particle 'for,' they are  
connected with what had gone before ; neither do they assert  
any thing more than what is contained in them. Bucer  
therefore rightly observes<sup>p</sup>, "that this verse depends upon the  
former one, 'God will reward every one according to his  
works.' For hence it follows, that God will bestow eternal  
life upon those who do the law, those, that is, who sincerely  
study its performance." Calvin's idea, that here justification  
is treated of upon an impossible condition, i. e. if any one  
should perform the law, is clearly refuted by the sixteenth  
verse, which all interpreters unite with the thirteenth verse,

<sup>p</sup> In loc. p. 110. ed. 1562.

**D I S S.** the rest being included in a parenthesis, thus : “the doers of  
 II. the law shall be justified.” “In the day,” &c.; where it is  
ver. 12. said that the doers of the law shall be actually and really  
ver. 16. justified at the day of judgment. Let any one who doubts,  
 read, and weigh without favour or partiality, the whole pas-  
 sage, and it will be strange if he does not allow that this is  
 the very meaning of St. Paul. You may say perhaps, can  
 any one then perform the law of God? here Bucer shall give  
 the answer. “As in the preceding verses to do good or evil  
 meant to act with a good or evil design, to be attentive and  
 diligent, so to do the law, or be a performer of it, is nothing  
 else than to dedicate one’s self to the law, and to meditate  
 upon it, for the purpose of conforming our life to it. This  
 evidently is what God every where requires in His law.” In a  
 word, this opinion of St. Paul’s is the same with that of  
 St. James, which applies with greater force to Christians.  
 “Be ye doers of the law, and not hearers only, deceiving  
 your own selves.” To which the words of Christ Himself  
 may be added. Before I dismiss this remarkable passage, it  
 may be proper to repeat what the learned Estius hath said  
 upon it. “It evidently appears that St. Paul hath de-  
 signedly recommended with such force, good works as in-  
 dispensably necessary to justification, and eternal life, that he  
 might forearm his reader, lest by not properly comprehending  
 his following doctrine, where he shews justification to be  
 of faith without works, he should be offended, and fall into  
 some error.” Thus far assuredly I entirely agree with him,  
 being persuaded that this was really done by the great pre-  
 science of God.

**§ 9.** In my opinion there is another passage where St. Paul  
 expressly states obedience to the commands of God to be  
Rom. 6. 16. necessary to justification : “Know ye not that to whom ye  
 yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom  
 ye obey, whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto  
 righteousness?” Here Pareus supposes there to be a rhe-  
 torical figure called hypallage, and that the words, ‘of obe-  
 dience to righteousness,’ are put for ‘of righteousness to  
 obedience.’ But I confess I cannot at all perceive the ne-  
 cessity for this figure, and besides, such a change takes away  
 an evident opposition made by St. Paul. For there is no na-

tural opposition between ‘obedience’ and ‘death ;’ and I think C H A P.  
that these words would be most clearly paraphrased if the word IV.  
‘obedience’ be taken for the law of the Gospel which is obeyed,  
and the passage will then run thus : “ Know ye not that to  
whomsoever ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants  
ye are to whom ye obey, whether of sin unto death, or of the  
Gospel unto justification ?” where to the word death, this  
word ‘justification,’ or some other of the same import, must  
be opposed : for the Greek word which is here translated δικαιοσύνη.  
‘righteousness,’ very frequently means ‘justification.’ But δικαίωσις.  
this is a work of superfluity, since from what has been already  
said it is sufficiently clear, that faith stands in the writings of  
St. Paul for general obedience to the commands of Christ.

§ 10. Grotius however<sup>9</sup>, rejects this interpretation, where  
after mentioning the opinions of others concerning this word  
faith, he thus blames this of ours. “ Others by the word  
faith, understand all that obedience which the Gospel de-  
mands : but this doth not agree with the words of the  
Apostle, where he prefers love to faith, and faith is said  
to perform its work by love, evidently distinguishing love,  
which is the principal part of that obedience, from faith.” 1Cor.13.13.  
Gal. 5. 6.  
Yet this argument proves nothing against us. For we do  
not deny that faith is sometimes separated by the Apostle  
from love and its works, we only affirm that when the Apostle  
attributes justification and salvation to faith alone, though he  
says faith alone, yet he means every thing which is wont to  
follow faith. And we think this follows from those passages  
where he separates faith from love. For since the Apostle  
there declares, that faith without love in the sight of God is  
nothing worth ; we thence solidly argue, that he means faith  
perfected by true love, when even in other places he attri-  
butes almost every thing to faith, otherwise he would con-  
tradict himself.

<sup>9</sup> In Praef. ad Annot. in Rom.

## CHAP. V.

FAITH IS USED FOR ALL THE OBEDIENCE WHICH THE GOSPEL REQUIRES, BECAUSE IT IS THE BEGINNING AND ROOT OF ALL GOSPEL RIGHTEOUSNESS :—ROM. 10. 11. COMPARED WITH VERSE 12, 23, AND EXPLAINED.—FOR NEARLY THE SAME REASON ALL PIETY IS CALLED KNOWLEDGE IN THE HOLY SCRIPTURES.—THE REASON WHY ST. PAUL, DESCRIBING THE CONDITIONS REQUIRED ON OUR PARTS UNTO SALVATION, MAKES SO FREQUENT USE OF THIS WORD, FURTHER INVESTIGATED.—CHIEFLY ON TWO ACCOUNTS ; FIRST, TO EXPRESS THE EASY PERFORMANCE OF THE CONDITION ; SECONDLY, TO TAKE AWAY ALL MERIT.

D I S S.      § 1. HAVING thus proved the foregoing, perhaps it will be  
II.                worth our while to consider why St. Paul expresses himself  
in this manner. The foundation upon which, as we before  
hinted<sup>1</sup>, this mode of speaking is built is in short this : that  
faith is the beginning and root of all Gospel righteousness,  
without which no virtue contributing to salvation can exist  
in a man, and which therefore, if it be not impeded, will  
attract all other virtues to it, so that St. Paul, when he ex-  
presses all the obedience described in the Gospel under the  
name of Faith, speaks in the same manner as the Latin  
writers do when they use ‘hearing’ for ‘obeying,’ as in  
the Andria of Terence : “Shall I assist Pamphilus, or listen  
to the old man?” which figure is called the metonymy of  
the antecedent, for the consequent ; and although faith be  
not, with respect to the other virtues, a mere antecedent, but  
as we have observed, the cause, yet not the only or necessary  
one, so this kind of speaking may be referred to that figure  
which puts the cause for the effect. There is a very apposite  
example of this in the tenth chapter of the Epistle to the  
Romans, in the eleventh verse we have “whoever believes in  
Him, (that is, the Lord,) shall not be ashamed,” which is thus  
explained in the thirteenth : “Whoever calleth on the name  
of the Lord (that is, sincerely worships God) shall be saved.”  
Calling upon the name of the Lord in this and other pas-  
Ps. 14. 4; sages, evidently signifies the entire and complete worship of  
53. 4. Is. God ; so St. Paul, when he attributes salvation to faith,  
43. 22.&c.

<sup>1</sup> Diss. I. ii. 10.

means that faith which unites to itself the worship of God through Christ, and according to the direction of the Gospel. —  
What then, you will say, does the Apostle mean by expressing all this by the word faith? In the fourteenth verse he gives you his reason. "How shall they call on him, in whom they have not believed?" Clearly, without this faith no one can properly worship God in Christ, and it naturally produces this worship. For it can never happen that he should worship who does not believe, and it seldom happens that he who believes, does not worship. Here we must observe by the way, that three things in this sentence are mentioned by the Apostle, 'prayer,' 'faith,' and 'hearing,' or knowledge; each of which is necessary to salvation, but on different accounts. But knowledge and faith are necessary only as means, because without them no one can perform that worship which is acceptable with God unto salvation: but worship is necessary of itself alone, and reaches most nearly the effect of salvation by the power of the Gospel Covenant.—But to proceed.

§ 2. For the same reason piety, which is required unto salvation, is frequently denoted in Scripture by the name of knowledge. Besides, to this knowledge salvation itself is expressly attributed by Isaiah: "By his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many." "There is," as Forerius rightly observes on this passage, "a certain knowledge of God and Christ in the Scriptures, which is attended by all those things which Catholic teaching declares to be necessary to salvation. There is, I say, a certain knowledge, called by the schoolmen *cognitio affectiva*, which has in it as much love as faith, and which is true and perfect wisdom." Wherefore the Scripture is wont to comprehend all piety under the name of knowledge, both because none can be pious without a sound knowledge of God and His will, and principally because that knowledge greatly assists and incites us to piety, which reason may be also particularly applied to faith.

§ 3. And though this reason alone might be sufficient, yet when I reflect how frequently St. Paul uses this figure, when I more accurately attend to the aim of his arguments, I can easily believe that the Apostle has a farther view. I perceive then that there are two reasons why St. Paul, in describing the

BULL.

F

- DISS.** conditions required of us for our salvation, makes so frequent  
II. use of the word faith. The first is, because thus he expresses the easiness of the condition, since it is easy to believe that, to which this faith refers, and from which piety, comprehended in this word, almost necessarily flows; namely, that mortal man may rise again from the dead, and ascend into heaven, nay, that he really will rise again and go into a state of happiness, if he obeys God. For that hath been strongly proved by the resurrection of Christ from the dead, and by His ascent into heaven, and our faith in these facts is built upon the clearest testimony. This, if it be firmly believed, and seriously considered, will almost, if not altogether, necessarily produce in us that piety which God demands: as
- 1 Joh. 3. 3.** St. John teaches, "And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure." And we may perhaps learn from the following passage in the Epistle to
- Rom. 10.6.** the Romans, the reason why the condition laid on us by God has the name of faith given it. For there the Apostle, wishing to prove the ease of justification by the Gospel above that by the law, after he hath observed in the fifth verse, "For Moses describes the righteousness which is of the law: that the man which doeth those things shall live in them:" immediately adds, "But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise: Say not in thine heart," &c. But what saith it? "The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart, &c.:" as if he had said, The righteousness of the law prescribes many important and severe precepts, but contains no promise of eternal life, by which we may be animated to perform them: it only says, 'If you do these things, you shall live,' i. e. shall be long lived, have in this world a long and happy life; but of eternal life it says not one word. But the righteousness of faith is far more easy to be performed, for it only contains such precepts as commend themselves to us by their own excellence, and besides, which is of the greatest importance, it encourages us to perform these precepts by most certain and most valuable promises. The source of this Gospel righteousness, from which it naturally arises, is nothing but that faith whereby you believe that it is possible for a man to ascend into heaven, and after he goes down into the grave to return thence again. And this is so

evidently proved by the ascent of Christ into heaven, CHAP. by His death, and by His rising again, that any one denying it, does the same as if he would draw Christ down again from heaven, and deny either that He died or rose again. But this is so certain, that God seems to have engraved it in our hearts, that we should believe it, and placed it in our mouths that we should confess it. Since then these things are so manifest, from which depends the truth of those points which are the principal articles of our faith, and from which piety necessarily arises, it follows that faith itself and piety must be easy to us. For since that is easy, upon which the rest in a certain manner depends, then every thing else must be easy too. This interpretation of the above passage seems clearly, in my opinion, to be preferred as by far the most easy and apparent, and the most agreeable to the Apostle's reasoning. Another passage from St. John's Epistle throws no small light upon it. "For this is the love of God, <sup>1 Joh. 5. 3.</sup> that we keep His commandments, and His commandments <sup>5.</sup> are not grievous. For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world, and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith; who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?" In which words the Apostle shews both the easy performance of the Gospel precepts, and that this easiness depends upon that faith by which we believe Jesus to be the Son of God, and (which is the natural consequence of this) that His promises given in the Gospel are most certain; as if he should say, the precepts of Christ may indeed seem in themselves to be severe, and to exceed the measure of human infirmity, especially those which require a denial of ourselves and a bearing of the cross: but if you regard the certainty and value of His promises, this apparent difficulty instantly vanishes, and His precepts appear most easy of performance. For though our contest be with the world, that is, with the enticements, dangers, bad examples and evils arising from the world, which are apt to seduce us from the path prescribed in the Gospel, yet if with a firm and lively faith, we embrace those inestimable promises made to those who conquer, we shall then obtain an easy and ready victory over the world. Thus far of the easy performance of the con-

**D I S S.** dition laid on us, which may be the first reason why St. Paul  
II. in treating on this subject gives it the name of faith.

§ 4. Secondly, there is another reason for it, which is this, that by this name the merit of that obedience which the Gospel demands is excluded. For the word faith by its very sound impresses the mind with the idea of grace, and excludes all notion of merit, and this it does from a triple cause: first, because it supposes a revelation and calling on God's part given to man through grace only, before man had performed any obedience to God, and therefore man had not performed that obedience which is expressed by the word faith of his own accord, that is, by his own powers or abilities; but God, merely through His wonderful goodness, was beforehand with man by revealing the divine will to him in an extraordinary manner<sup>s</sup>. Assuredly no one from the foundation of the world ever yet found the way to salvation without the direction and assistance of God, that is, through faith. And this constitutes a marked difference between the righteousness of 'nature' and of 'faith': the latter, man performs led on and excited by the gracious revelation and calling of God, and therefore must attribute what he hath received to the Giver. That such was the obedience of Abraham, of whom the Jews boasted so much, the Apostle strongly contends, as we shall afterwards shew in its place. But he who performs the other kind of righteousness 'self-taught,' by his own strength, effects it without any master or director, and therefore its praise, if it be worthy of any, seems to belong to the man himself. This is what the Apostle means when he so frequently opposes

**See Rom. 9.11; 2Tim. 1. 9.**  
 'works' to the 'divine calling.' And that Apostolic man, Clement of Rome, in his Epistle to the Corinthians, says that all who are called according to the mercy of God, are saved, "Not by our wisdom or understanding, but by faith, by means of which, from the beginning, the Almighty God hath justified all men." Which testimony of Clement's we shall hereafter give at length in a more convenient place. But the grace of this divine calling was much more manifest in those (to whom St. Paul wrote his Epistles) to whom the

\* No man hath ever yet seen, or known Him: but He hath revealed Himself: and that by faith, by which alone man is allowed to see God. Justin. Epist. ad Diog. [c. viii. p. 238.]

Gospel was preached by the Apostles themselves, God giving CHAP.  
V. His testimony to them by the most wonderful miracles. Secondly, the word 'faith,' by which Gospel obedience is expressed, excludes merit, because it supposes not only a divine revelation, but also such promises to be made by God who makes the revelation, as by their force and efficacy will strongly excite man to that obedience, and which therefore far surpass all that obedience which can be undertaken by faith in them. When therefore by the word faith we express the piety we perform to God, we mean that such is the force of those promises which we receive by faith that they produce in us that piety by their excellence and certainty; and therefore this piety to God, from whose goodness all these promises flow, must also be conceived as expressed in the name faith. This argument receives no small support from this remarkable passage : "Whereby are given unto us <sup>2 Pet. 1. 4.</sup> exceeding great and precious promises, that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust." This 'divine nature,' this exceeding holiness by which we become in a certain degree similar unto God, and which frees us from the pollutions of the world, is declared to be received 'by those exceeding great and precious promises,' which are given us by the infinite goodness of God and Christ, evidently because this divine piety is produced in us by faith in these promises. In the same sense must be understood those passages in which our Regeneration and heavenly birth are said to be caused by the 'Word' of the Gospel. In these See 1 Pet. <sup>1.23 comp.</sup> places it is evident that by the 'Word,' we must understand <sup>25. Jas. 1.</sup> the promises contained in the Word. And lastly, in this <sup>18, &c.</sup> sense particularly must be understood that grand doxology and blessing of St. Peter: "Blessed be the God and Father <sup>1 Pet. 1. 3.</sup> of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to His abundant mercy hath begot us again unto a lively hope by the Resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead." Where the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, as its faith was built on the strongest proofs possible, is announced as the means whereby we are born of God 'to a lively hope,' that is, as I imagine, to that 'lively hope' which is wont to produce purity, of which St. John speaks. Moreover all the glory and honour of our

70 *Faith expects its reward only from the free gift of God.*

DISS. II. salvation is wholly attributed by St. Peter to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to His unbounded mercy in giving us such undeniable proofs for our faith in that Resurrection. But among the promises of the Gospel, that of the assistance of the Holy Spirit is particularly eminent, which being received by faith renders all other promises efficacious, and works in us that righteousness See Gal. 3. 14. which the Gospel demands. And in this sense the obedience of faith signifies obedience of that kind which a man performs relying on the grace and assistance of the Holy Spirit, and is opposed to that righteousness which a man performs in a state either of the law, or of nature, by his own strength only, without divine inspiration.

§ 5. Thirdly, the word ‘faith’ excludes merit in this sense also, because so far as it refers to a free promise, it expects its ‘reward’ only from the free gift of the God who promises. And this, if I mistake not, is the chief reason, why the Holy Spirit is wont to express all the obedience taught in the Gospel, by the word ‘faith,’ because by this word is shewn that the obedience we pay to God does not obtain righteousness, or salvation by ‘its own force, or merit,’ but ‘by force of the covenant, or free promise,’ which is received by faith. This is what St. Paul seems to teach when he opposes the Gal. 3. 18. ‘law’ to the ‘promise.’ “If the inheritance (*i. e.* of eternal life) be of the law it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by a promise.” Where, as Beza well observes, he silently overturns an objection of the Jews to what he had said in the preceding verse, namely, that the promise given to Abraham 430 years before the law, could not be rendered void by the law. For the Jews might say, We allow the promise not to be destroyed by the law, therefore we join them together. But, saith St. Paul, these two can never be united, that the inheritance should be of the law and the promise conjointly, since the righteousness of the law (he speaks ‘as a man’ ver. 15.) confers merit, and excludes grace, and therefore is repugnant to a free promise, if the law be given for the purpose of salvation<sup>t</sup>. But because the

<sup>t</sup> The emphasis in the word ‘gave,’ is to be observed, which word in the original is derived from ‘grace,’ and

so Beza has correctly expressed it by *gratificatus est*, ‘freely gave,’ or ‘gave as a favour.’ Compare Rom. 4. 13-15.

promise of eternal life given in the Gospel is founded in the C H A P.  
meritorious satisfaction of Jesus Christ, and confirmed by VI.  
His most precious blood, therefore the obedience of faith  
continually refers to Christ, as the only propitiation : and See Rom.  
His most perfect obedience in life and death is the only <sup>3. 24. 25.</sup>  
circumstance, which makes our imperfect and spiritless  
obedience acceptable to God unto salvation, and to carry off  
the reward of eternal life. Melancthon therefore rightly says  
of the word faith : “ When we say we are justified by faith, Corp.  
we look up to the Son of God sitting at the right hand of Theol. p.  
His Father interceding for us; we say that we are reconciled  
on His account, and thus take the merit of reconciliation  
from our own virtues however numerous.” And in this sense  
the Gospel obedience expressed in the word faith, excludes  
that obedience, and all those works which are repugnant to  
the free promise of and reliance on Christ the Mediator,  
*i. e.* those which are performed with any confidence and  
opinion of our own merit. But all this will receive a clearer  
light from what will be said when we come to the analysis of  
St. Paul’s arguments. In the mean time this will be suffi-  
cient to shew what St. Paul means by the word faith.

## CHAP. VI.

WHAT ST. PAUL MEANS BY WORKS.—IT IS SHEWN FROM WHAT HAS BEEN  
SAID,—THAT HE DOES NOT SPEAK OF EVERY WORK, BUT THOSE OF A  
CERTAIN KIND, THOSE NAMELY OF THE MOSAIC LAW.—THIS PROVED  
FROM ST. PAUL’S WORDS, BOTH IN HIS EPISTLE TO THE ROMANS AND  
THAT TO THE GALATIANS.—IN THE NEXT PLACE ST. PAUL SO OPPOSES  
THE MOSAIC LAW AS ALSO TO REFUTE THE JEWISH ADDITIONS TO IT.—  
LASTLY, SINCE HE HAD ALSO TO CONTEND WITH THE GENTILE PHILOSO-  
PHERS, HE BY THE WAY DISPUTES AGAINST THE WORKS OF THE NATURAL  
LAW, WORKS DONE BY THE MERE FORCE OF NATURE.

§ 1. THERE is another difficulty in the word ‘works’ as  
used by St. Paul, and this is indeed the consequence of what  
we have already proved; namely, that faith, in St. Paul’s <sup>iv. 4.</sup>  
Epistles, means all the works of Christian piety. This being  
allowed, it is certain that the works which St. Paul excludes

**DISS.** from justification are not all kinds of works, but of a certain <sup>II.</sup> description only. Distinctly to explain of what kind these are, is a matter of no little labour, and we have now arrived at the chief difficulty of our work.

In Rom. 3,  
20,

§ 2. But that we may more easily get over it, let us first carefully enquire, what is the Apostle's aim in arguing against works. Now the best method of determining this, is accurately to mark who those were, against whom St. Paul contended. For Isidorus Clarius well observes : " If we consider what controversy was then in agitation, it will not be so very difficult to see the end and design of this Epistle, but without this consideration, our endeavours will be in vain."

Matt. 5-7.

§ 3. The following is a brief account of the matter. The Gospel of Jesus Christ, at its first preaching to the Jews, was obstructed in its progress amongst them by this great prejudice, namely, that it was diametrically opposite to the religion and law which they had received from God by the hands of Moses, and had confirmed by many great miracles. This calumny, for such it really is, Christ Himself answered, and clearly defended His law from that imputation in His famous Sermon to His disciples, where He openly professes that He came not to destroy the law, but to fulfil it. For those things, as Justin <sup>u</sup> remarks, which in the law are by nature just and good, and pious, Christ hath perfected, by explaining them more clearly than they had ever yet been, by strengthening them by some more strict precepts; and by inclining the dispositions of men to obey them, by the greatness and certainty of the promises, and by the seal of the Holy Spirit. But the Mosaic rites Christ fulfilled and completed, by performing that for which they were invented, and of which they were the types. But by fulfilling and completing them, He at the same time abolished them, not so much by taking away the authority of the law, as the cause why the law, so far as it related to these rites, was given, and which from the first was decreed to die at His death.

§ 4. This the Jews would not understand; but being ignorant of the end and design of God in giving the law, dreaming that it was to be eternal, and despising the revela-

<sup>u</sup> Dial. cum Tryph. 45. p. 141. Vid. Grotius in Matt. 5. 17.

tion of a far better doctrine, they tenaciously adhered to C H A P. their dead, and now almost deadly ceremonies. For they VI. reasoned thus: that their present law was undoubtedly divine, and came from God, which could be proved by the most unexceptionable evidence, and therefore it would be an act of the greatest imprudence, and even impiety, to change it for a law, new, different, if not altogether contradictory to it, of whatever kind, or under whatever pretence that law was brought forward. Persuaded by these ideas, even the more pious Jews continued obstinate against the miracles of Christ, although the finger of God was in them sufficiently conspicuous; they opposed them therefore as temptations sent by God to try their constancy in His law. The rest, each according to his abilities, easily invented some excuse or other, by which they might seem with reason to reject these miracles.

§ 5. This prejudice no doubt prevented many Jews from embracing the Gospel of Christ. But besides this, even those of them who, convinced by the evidence of the miracles of Christ, believed His Gospel, were still possessed by such a reverence for the Mosaic law, such a love for their ancient rites, that they could hardly suffer themselves to be separated from them. Whence it happened, that the Mosaic law was retained by some even after they had become Christians. For they could neither endure their mind to reject the Gospel of Christ, confirmed by so many and so great miracles on the one hand, or on the other to revolt from the law of Moses, which they were fully persuaded came from God. For some time hesitating from this difficulty, they at last determined to unite the laws of Moses and Christ together, much in the same manner as Mezentius is said by Virgil, to have tied the living and the dead together.

§ 6. The event of this scheme was truly unfortunate, for there were not wanting some abandoned teachers to add oil to the fiery zeal of these Judaizing Christians; men who, although they did themselves profess Christianity, were still vigilant in disturbing the affairs of the Church, and whose only concern for the law of Moses or of Christ, was to make their own gain of them both. At length they arrived at such a pitch of madness, as to resolve that the observance of the Mosaic

**DISS.** law was necessary unto salvation, not only to the believing Jews, but also unto Gentiles converted to Christianity. This excited wonderful disturbance in the Churches of the converted Gentiles, so that a Council was held upon this very subject by the Apostles at Jerusalem, in which at last the dispute was settled to the satisfaction of the Gentiles, and the release from the Mosaic rites so greatly desired by them was decreed by the Apostles. From this most wholesome decree arose peace, comfort, and confirmation in the Christian Faith, not only to those Churches where these teachers had excited those disturbances, but they were diffused with equal joy among all the Churches of the Gentiles which had been troubled by these Judaizing Christians. In one word, this terror of the Mosaic yoke being taken away, the Gentiles, who had before been affrighted at the Gospel, clogged with such a burden, now came over to the Faith of Christ in crowds. So the Churches were confirmed in the

**Acts 16. 4.** faith, and increased in numbers daily.

5.

§ 7. But alas ! this flourishing state of the Gentile Churches did not last long : for soon after this, these wretched contrivers, these dogs of the circumcision, as the

**Phil. 3. 2.** Apostle calls them, again arose and miserably disturbed the flock of Christ, then reposing in the utmost quiet, so that the last state of the Gentile Church became worse than the first.

**Gal. 5. 9.** For this Jewish leaven had corrupted the whole Christian world. Every where among the Gentiles they revived ceremonies, dead and almost buried. There were two Churches it appears, where these teachers of the law particularly prevailed, the Roman and Galatian. In which latter so universal was the ruin that these disturbers of the peace of the Church had spread, as to extort from the most mild Apostle this wish:

**Gal. 5. 12.** "I would they were even cut off which trouble you."

§ 8. Against these corrupters of Christianity among the Gentiles, the great Apostle of the Gentiles, inflamed by the love of God, arose. And that he might totally eradicate their pernicious doctrine, and cut off for ever all means of boasting in the law, and at the same time either convert those Jews who, yet strangers to the faith of Christ, placed all hopes of salvation in the law, or at least silence them ; he, as if professedly, entered into a discussion of the whole

Mosaic covenant, laying open its origin, nature, end, and use, proving by many arguments in his Epistles to the Romans and Galatians, that it never was the design of God, that this law should be considered as a covenant of eternal life and salvation ; that by it no man had ever yet obtained true justification, and that no one ever would. These things being allowed, every one, I think, must see that the works which St. Paul opposes must chiefly be understood to be the works prescribed in the Mosaic law, which indeed the Apostle sometimes declares, where he does not call them works simply, but the works of the law.

§ 9. To this must be added, that the Apostle argues against the works of the Mosaic law in such a manner as at the same time to reject those very corrupt opinions which the Scribes and the Pharisees among the Jews had added to it. In reality, the Mosaic law, of itself sufficiently imperfect, weakened by the glosses and vain interpretations of these Rabbins, became at last much more imperfect, and almost entirely lost the strength which it had. They weakened the precepts of God by so many distinctions, so many dispensations, that you might in vain seek for the law in the law itself; so much indeed was it injured, that the religion of the people of God, a people instructed in the divine oracles, had become almost worse than paganism, and the principles of the best philosophers. It was now time for Jehovah to stretch out His hand, since men had rendered His law so <sup>Ps. 119.</sup> <sub>126.</sub> perfectly vain, and this He did through Christ, who in His sermon to His disciples, sets Himself against these dogmas <sup>Matt. 5.</sup> of the Pharisees, and thus seriously warns His disciples : "Except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven." Christ, as Grotius well observes, <sup>In locum,</sup> mentions the Scribes as the most learned of the Jews, the Pharisees as remarkable for the reputation of peculiar sanctity, and whose sect was the strictest in Judaism. He <sup>Acts 26. 6.</sup> there shews that the Jewish Church was in such a wretched and deplorable state, that its principal teachers and leaders most shamefully erred in the interpretation of their own law. Neither is it probable that the teaching of the Pharisees had grown better in St. Paul's time. That obstinate people no

**D**I S S. doubt adhered immoveably to their own absurd explanations.  
II. — And this, if by no other means, may be proved from the Gal. 1. 14. example of St. Paul, who (as he himself testifies) before his conversion was exceedingly zealous for the traditions of his fathers. The righteousness, then, which the Jews sought from the law, was not so much the righteousness of the law, as their own; not such as God demanded of them, but such as they had foolishly imagined for themselves, the fiction of Rom. 10. 3. their own brain; this St. Paul properly calls ‘a righteousness of their own’ opposed to ‘the righteousness of God.’

§ 10. Lastly, as the Apostle had to contend not only with Jewish teachers, but also with gentile philosophers, he also examines works done according to the rule of the natural law, and proceeding from human strength only, and he affirms that these also are of no avail unto salvation. In proving this, as the Gentiles were not much given to this error, the Apostle takes no great pains; but is content to do it by way of digression, and in a cursory manner. This then is the analysis of St. Paul’s treatise. Whatever he has said against the righteousness of works, either in his Epistles to the Romans and Galatians, or elsewhere, must be understood according to this rule.

## CHAP. VII.

**T**HE ARGUMENTS, BY WHICH ST. PAUL REJECTS THE MOSAIC LAW FROM JUSTIFICATION EXPLAINED.—THE APOSTLE’S ARGUMENT AFFECTS THOSE PRECEPTS OF THE LAW, WHICH ARE CALLED MORAL, BUT ONLY SO FAR AS THEY FORM PART OF THE CONDITIONS PRESCRIBED IN THE MOSAIC COVENANT.—HENCE THE ARGUMENTS MUST BE DIVIDED INTO TWO KINDS, THOSE WHICH INCLUDE THE WHOLE LAW, AND THOSE WHICH REFER TO THE RITUAL PART OF IT ONLY.—THE FIRST ARGUMENT WHICH RELATES TO THE WHOLE LAW OF MOSES IS TAKEN FROM ITS WANT OF PARDONING GRACE, OR OF REMISSION OF SINS.—WHETHER THE LAW OF MOSES UNDER ANY VIEW OF IT CAN BE DEEMED A LAW OF ENTIRELY PERFECT OBEDIENCE?—DOES THE REASONING OF THE APOSTLE IN ROMANS, CHAPTER 3. VER. 20; AND GALATIANS, CHAPTER 3. VER. 10, DEPEND ON THIS IDEA?—THIS QUESTION ANSWERED IN THE NEGATIVE.—ARGUMENTS TO THE CONTRARY ANSWERED.

§ 1. As we do not think it sufficient to have shewn the general intent of St. Paul in his disputation concerning

works, whatever be the works he means, we shall here more distinctly treat of the subject. For since the works of the Mosaic law, and the Jewish opinions added to it were not all of the same kind, it will be worth while clearly to explain what works and opinions the Apostle opposes, and what arguments he applies to each.

§ 2. Now the law consists of two parts, moral and ritual, to both of these St. Paul undoubtedly alludes. That he treats of the moral precepts of the Mosaic law, although some deny it, is sufficiently evident from his own words : "Therefore by the deeds of the law shall no flesh be justified in His sight, for by the law is the knowledge of sin;" whence it may be concluded, that the law, whose works St. Paul excludes, is that by which is the knowledge of sin, which beyond all dispute must be meant of the moral law contained in the decalogue : for so the Apostle explains himself, quoting from the decalogue, "Thou shalt not covet," and almost through the whole of that chapter he treats principally of the moral law, so in the same Epistle he says, "Do we then make void the law through faith ? God forbid : yea, we establish the law." These words cannot well be understood of the ceremonial law, which can scarcely be said to be confirmed by the faith of Christ. And in the next chapter "Because the law worketh wrath, for where no law is there is no transgression," is chiefly true of the moral law. For almost all transgressions are breaches of the moral law. Therefore the reasoning of the Apostle is undoubtedly applicable to the moral law also.

§ 3. The following observation also must be added, as equally clear. The works of the moral law are not excluded from justification by St. Paul, simply as such, but only so far as they are required in the Mosaic covenant, and are part of the condition annexed to that covenant ; in a word, so far only as they may be considered separate from evangelical grace. The very learned Estius, in solving this difficulty, uses the following distinction : "It must be observed," says he, "that the work of the law has a double sense, it either means the work which the law requires, which work is truly good ; for it is said, 'The doers of the law shall be justified,' or the work which is done out of the law, that is, from a

C H A P.  
VII.

Rom. 3. 20.

Rom. 7. 7.

Rom. 3. 31.

In Rom. 3. 20.

Rom. 2. 13.

**DISS.** mere knowledge of the law, and not by faith. In which latter sense, St. Paul here speaks of the works of the law, meaning assuredly those which are done by the bare assistance of the law: of which kind were those which the Jews formerly, and still do perform, not considering the grace of a Redeemer to be necessary towards leading a just life. For whatever these works may be, they are of no avail unto true righteousness: because by the works of the law no man shall be justified before God." And indeed it is most true, that by the works of the law, the Apostle generally means works done by the strength of the law, and these works he in particular excludes from justification: at the same time it is equally certain, that from the works of the law, however accurately performed, no one could obtain true justification under the Mosaic covenant, because it proposes no true justification, that is, such as is united with the gift of eternal life. This great blessing arises from the covenant of grace, only confirmed by the blood of the Mediator. So that, as to the Mosaic covenant, the works of the moral law performed under it must be excluded from justification, and indeed are so excluded by the Apostle. But these things we will more fully prove, when we come to the arguments of the Apostle, whose reasoning on this subject we have determined to explain at full length, that its sense may more clearly appear.

§ 4. The arguments then, by which St. Paul contends against the law, may be disposed into two divisions: the one of those which belong to the Mosaic covenant whole and entire; the other of those which particularly regard the ceremonial law. Of the first division there are two principal arguments which the Apostle uses, taken from the double defect of the Mosaic covenant; the want of pardoning grace, and the want of assisting grace.

§ 5. The first argument of the Apostle respecting the whole Mosaic covenant is taken from the want under which that covenant labours, of a pardoning grace, or the remission of sins; where the Apostle proves the universal guilt of both Jews and Gentiles, and that they, and each of them, are guilty of such sins as can expect in that law to find no pardon or remission true and perfect. This is evidently

St. Paul's meaning in his Epistle to the Romans, where, C H A P.  
after a long catalogue of crimes charged upon Jews and <sup>VII.</sup>  
Gentiles, in the law, he draws the following conclusion : <sup>Rom. 3.</sup> 10—20.

"Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in His sight." In the same sense must be understood what the Apostle says, when he proves by this reason, Gal. 3. 10. that all who are under the law are subject to a curse, because it is written, "Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them."

§ 6. But here I find I have met with a difficulty at first setting out. It is questioned whether this reasoning of the Apostle's depends upon the supposition that he determines the Mosaic law, so far at least as it is given to Jews, to have been a law of perfect obedience, admitting no excuse, and moreover impossible to be performed? And whether the Apostle on this idea concludes that all men by this law are sinners, and through their sins are guilty unto eternal death and condemnation, and therefore that no one can be justified by this law? Most indeed allow this to be the case, asserting, that the Mosaic law bound all those to whom it belongs (if not absolutely, yet conditionally, unless they saved themselves by the covenant of grace) under penalty of eternal death to the most perfect obedience, that is, such as embraces all kinds of innocence in the purest sense of the word, even such as is perpetual, excluding all imperfection, infirmity, and inadvertency throughout life. But I cannot persuade myself to subscribe to these opinions, for reasons which I shall hereafter give. In the mean time, to form an accurate idea of this controversy, it must in the first place be particularly remembered, "that to be deemed by God unworthy of the reward of righteousness and eternal life," is totally different from "being deemed by God to be deserving of the punishment of eternal death." With respect to the first, indeed, to be accounted by the Almighty unworthy of the reward of eternal life, it is sufficient not to have that perfect innocence which I have just described; for God may with the greatest justice refuse to any man the reward of eternal life for the least imperfection. Nay more, God may also, if He pleases, take that immense blessing of

D I S S. II. eternal life from the most perfect innocence, if that could be actually found on earth; for it is entirely the free gift of God, and can never be due to any merits of any creature. As to the latter, that any one should be deemed deserving the punishment of eternal death, it is only necessary that he hath not performed that obedience which he might have performed. Hence it follows, that no man can be condemned for want of the most perfect righteousness, unto eternal death, that is, unto that torment which awaits the wicked in the next world, since such righteousness is simply impossible for any man in this life: but it is manifest that the Apostle in this dispute wishes to prove that both Jews and Gentiles indiscriminately, on account of not performing the righteousness of the law, not only do not deserve the reward of eternal life, but are also subject to the divine anger and eternal death,

Rom. 3. 19; 1. 20; 2. 1. Resp.ad64. words of Episcopius, "can be farther from the truth, than quest. 20. quest. 20. that the Apostle should wish to prove men guilty unto death and condemnation, as a well-deserved punishment, on account of having violated, or not kept a law which he supposed to be utterly impossible for them to keep, or not to violate? Neither can we suppose that St. Paul had an opponent who would not willingly have allowed that there was no man who could so keep the law as never to offend in the least point, and that so no one could be justified by the law; and who would not at once have objected to the Apostle, that men were improperly considered as already deserving of punishment, since it is certainly impossible for them to escape error, or keep the law in this perfect and perpetual manner." The foundation of these expressions is this, that it is repugnant to divine justice, that any one should be obliged to things plainly impossible, especially under pain of eternal death.

§ 7. To this some object that God gave us in the first man before the fall, strength sufficient to perform this most perfect obedience, but that he, as the representative of us all, committed sin by which he lost those powers; and therefore God can justly demand of us the same obedience, and that under pain of eternal death. But this is extremely absurd:

for since man through the fall lost these powers not by the fact but by the ill desert, that is, by the act of God with- drawing them as a punishment, that God, after having thus deprived him of these powers should expect of him the same obedience, is as contrary to His wisdom and justice as if a magistrate, having cut off a criminal's feet for a punishment, should next order him to walk away, and because he did not go, punish him with death. Far be it from us to form such ideas of a God of infinite goodness and wisdom.

§ 8. Let us come to the law of Moses. That it was a law of perfect obedience is extremely improbable, which will appear, if we consider, as Grotius<sup>x</sup> has observed, that the old law must be regarded under two points of view; first, carnally and literally, as being the instrument of the Jewish state: secondly, spiritually, as "being the shadow of better things to come." since, then, in this latter sense, the law will be nothing else but a type of the Gospel, no person in his senses will call it a law of perfect obedience, at least in the same sense as a law of perfect obedience is here understood. We then must allow, that the law of Moses was a law of perfect obedience under the former view. But this supposition would be very absurd; because, first, in this law God expressly appointed certain sacrifices which should expiate such crimes as might be committed, not presumptuously, or in contempt of the law. But now where any pardon of sins is granted, there perfect obedience is not demanded, these two being contradictory. Secondly, so far from the law of Moses demanding perfect obedience of the Jews, it is very manifest, some things were permitted them in that law by the Almighty, on account of the hardness of their hearts, which very nearly partook of the nature of sin. Among these, the chief are polygamy, and permission of divorce for trifling causes. I conclude, therefore, that since by the law of Moses, literally considered, many sins were forgiven the Jews, and some (which we Christians at least consider sins) even expressly permitted them; it is beyond all doubt, that this law, so regarded, never demanded an entire and perfect obedience.

See Num.  
15. 22—29.

See Deut.  
24. 1. com-  
pared with  
Matt. 19. 3.

§ 9. However, there are not wanting arguments by which

\* De Satisfac. Christ. ch. 10. p. 183, 184.

**DISS.** some would prove this supposition to be true, and that hence  
II. St. Paul deduces the impossibility of justification by the Mosaic law. We will carefully weigh them that we may see if they have any weight sufficient to preponderate against a truth so manifest as the above. The following are the two which they principally allege.

**§ 10.** Their first argument is taken from a passage already quoted by us; "For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse; for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things" &c. Where they say it is manifest, that the Apostle deduces the impossibility of justification by the Mosaic law from this circumstance, that by it no one was free from the curse, who did not perform all the commands of that law. I answer: It is neither necessary nor consistent that the above expression, "continueth not in all things," should signify perfect obedience, or an innocence from every frailty, such as we before described, since such obedience would be impossible to a mortal, neither does it appear agreeable to divine equity, that any for want of it should be subject to an eternal curse. The sense therefore of the above passage is, Every one is cursed, that is, subject to the curse and the punishments of the law, who does not persevere in doing and observing all things which the law requires. But he is supposed to do all things who does not wander from the intent of the law, who keeps its essentials, as we have said, entire, or as others express themselves, who keeps all those precepts of the law which contain the 'substance of life,' of which kind are the particular points mentioned by Moses. In one word, he who permits himself to do nothing knowingly and willingly against the law of God, although perhaps in some things he may offend through ignorance and inadvertency.

**Deut. 27.** In one word, he who permits himself to do nothing knowingly and willingly against the law of God, although perhaps in some things he may offend through ignorance and inadvertency.

**Jas. 2. 10.** Great light will be thrown upon this text from the following similar passage; "Whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all," that is, is subject to the punishment and curse laid upon the transgressors of the law. Who does not perceive that this passage from St. James entirely corresponds with that from St. Paul? But it is very certain that these words of St. James must not be interpreted of an all-perfect innocence, since the Apostle

is clearly speaking of that obligation of the law which is binding upon us Christians. It must be understood that here, not every offence, even the most trivial (as some will have it) is intended; of trivial offences, St. James speaks as follows: "In Jas. 3. 2. many things we offend all;" and again, "If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man." For even if the word 'offends' seems to be spoken of some lighter offence, yet from the context of the passage and reason itself, it appears, that St. James is speaking of those sins by which a man wilfully and knowingly transgresses the law. Reason itself demands this interpretation; for how could it be true, that he who in other respects keeps the whole law, should be guilty of transgressing every precept, because he has unwarily offended by an idle word or immoderate laughter? The context of the Apostle teaches the same: for in the first place, he expressly mentions those sins only, which are most heinous, as murder and adultery; then the reason by which he confirms ver. 11. this maxim, and which immediately follows it, requires this interpretation: For He that said, "Do not commit adultery," said also, "Thou shalt not kill." As if He had said, Since the obligation and authority of all divine laws is the same, he who violates one of these, and knowingly transgresses the law, by that very act spurns and despises the authority of the whole. Neither does he appear to keep the others because he thinks it impious to violate so great authority as theirs, but because he is not inclined to transgress against them. For why else does he not observe that law also which he breaks, since it has the same authority with the rest, if it be indeed enacted by the same lawgiver, from whom the others derive their authority? But if he was equally inclined to offend against the rest as against this, there appears no cause why he should not readily do it. St. James therefore speaks of those sins which are committed against the end of the law and the authority of the lawgiver. Agreeable to this, is what Augustine wrote to Jerome, who had consulted him Epist. 29. in a very long letter on this very passage: the sum is, he who offends in one thing is guilty of all, because he offends against love, upon which depend the law and the prophets. "For," says he, "he is deservedly guilty of all, who offends against that upon which all depend."

**DISS.**    § 12. Perhaps some one may reply, Well, let this passage  
 II. of St. James be so interpreted; still the same interpretation by  
 no means agrees with the aim of St. Paul in that passage in  
 his Epistle to the Galatians. For since the Apostle had no  
 other means of proving that all who are under the law are  
 subject to the curse, but by this passage, "Cursed is every  
 one that continueth not in all things" &c., he shews with  
 sufficient clearness, that no one can continue in all things,  
 or that the law demands a most perfect obedience which no  
 one can perform. In answer to this, I totally deny that this  
 is intended in the Apostle's argument, to prove which, we  
 will reduce it to a syllogistic form, thus :

Cursed is he who doth not continue in all things which  
 the law commands ;

But they who are of the works of the law do not continue  
 in all these things ;

Therefore they who are of the works of the law are under  
 the curse.

*εἰς ἔργων  
 νόμου.*  
 ver. 10. For the Apostle evidently speaks of those who are 'of the  
 works of the law,' that is, those who seek righteousness in  
 the law, either being ignorant of, or despising the grace of  
*ἐκ πιστέως.* the Gospel, whom he opposes to those who are 'of the faith,'  
 ver. 9. that is, those who believe in the Gospel and embrace its  
 grace, and have obtained the blessing of Abraham, the  
 promise of the Spirit, by which they fulfil the righteousness

ver. 14. of the law, and so escape its curse. Of the former indeed,  
 he shews that they neither have, nor can continue in all  
 things which the law commands, but he does not make the  
 same determination concerning the latter. In one word,  
 against the possibility of fulfilling the law in every thing by  
 the grace of the Gospel, (so far as it is imposed upon us as a  
 law, that is, under pain of eternal death, or ever hath been  
 imposed upon mankind from the fall of the first man,) the  
 Apostle hath never said a word, nay hath often openly  
 acknowledged the possibility of it, as we shall afterwards see.

Deut. 6. 5. § 13. Another argument of our opponents remains, in  
 which they boast as unanswerable, taken from the following  
 passage. "And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all  
 thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength." You  
 see here, say they, the most complete and perfect love

of God to be required in the law. But we may reply, that this argument turns against themselves. For since God here does not demand any other love than that which may be performed by all the heart, all the soul, and all the strength, it is evident that He demands nothing of us above, or beyond our strength, that portion of grace being taken into the consideration, which God communicates, or is ready to communicate, to all. Now it is certain that we can all of us obey God with all our strength, for it is a contradiction in terms, to assert that we cannot do any thing according to our strength. The truth of this answer may be strongly established by these reasons: first, God promises that He would give to His people what He here demands, a circumcised heart, that they may love Him with all their hearts. Deut. 30.6. Secondly, God Himself testifies that there have been those who thus loved Him. Thus it is said of King Asa and all the people, "that they sought the Lord with all their heart and all their soul;" of David we read, "that he followed God with all his heart, doing that which was right in His eyes;" but that is a remarkable testimony which the Holy Spirit gives of King Josiah, "that he turned to the Lord with all his heart, with all his soul, and with all his might, according to all the law of Moses." That undoubtedly is said to be done with all the heart, to which any one gives the chief part of his study and application. In the same sense as we say a man gives himself up entirely to his books, as Estius well remarks, to whom the reader may refer.

Sent. B. 3.  
dist. 27.  
§ 6, 8.

§ 14. I will finish these remarks by observing, that our opinion of the possibility of fulfilling the law, so far at least as it ever was a law imposed on man by God, is not a modern opinion, but ratified by the unanimous consent of all the ancients, who wrote before the Pelagian controversy had polluted the springs of pure and primitive doctrine. The author of Questions and Answers to the Orthodox (among the works of Justin) in the answer to question 103, which is: "How God, commanding those things which are above our strength, namely, that we should not sin, can condemn the sinner to torment, since a man cannot fulfil the law, as the Apostle testifies: 'No flesh can be justified by the works of the law?'" says what well deserves our attention. "What is

D I S S. all the righteousness according to the law? It is to love God more than oneself, and our neighbour as oneself: which things are not impossible to men willing to perform them. This expression therefore, ‘by the works of the law no flesh shall be justified,’ does not refer to the impossibility of doing impossible things, but to the unwillingness of performing what is possible, since we do not use our will for impossible but possible things. For praise or blame arises from our doing, or not doing things which are possible and in our power, so that we sin, by not choosing to do, and not on no account of the impossibility.” Basil the Great, in his Homily on that text of Moses “attend to thyself,” rejects the opinion of those who affirm that the precepts of the law are impossible to be performed, as impious, and not to be borne. His words are: “It is impious to assert that the precepts of the Holy Spirit cannot be kept.” So also Chrysostom; “We do not then think these precepts to be impossible, for they are both useful and very easy to us if we would watch.” He expresses himself in the same manner in the eighth Homily on Repentance, and on the 101st Psalm. Neither did most of the Catholics, who wrote after or against the Pelagian heresy, think otherwise. Even Augustine himself, however in other respects he might have grown too warm in that most unfortunate controversy, did not hesitate to allow that God had commanded possible things, and in this sense too, that each individual believer was able to fulfil every and each command. And with Basil he condemns the contrary

Serm. 191. de Tempore. opinion as guilty of blasphemy and heresy: “We condemn also the blasphemy of those who teach that God hath commanded any thing impossible to be done by man, and that the commands of God cannot be kept by individuals, but only by a community at large.”

<sup>r</sup> Vid. Vossii Hist. Pelag. lib. v. part I. Antithes. 6.

## CHAP. VIII.

THE TRUE SOURCES OF THE APOSTLE'S ARGUMENT LAID OPEN, WHICH ARE TWO; FIRST, THAT JEWS AS WELL AS GENTILES INDISCRIMINATELY, AND ALL OF EVERY NATION HAVE BEEN GUILTY OF GREAT SINS, AND THEREFORE SUBJECT TO THE JUDGMENT AND ANGER OF GOD; SECONDLY, THAT IN THE LAW OF MOSES THERE IS NO PROMISE OF TRUE AND PERFECT REMISSION OF SINS, OR OF FREEDOM FROM THE ANGER OF GOD, AND ETERNAL DEATH, DUE TO SIN.—HENCE IS SHEWN IN WHAT MANNER THE APOSTLE DEDUCES HIS CONCLUSION.

§ 1. From what has been already said, I think it is sufficiently evident, that the law of Moses did not require sinless obedience, that is, an innocence free from the smallest transgression under pain of eternal death, and that the Apostle's arguments are not founded on such a supposition<sup>2</sup>. It remains therefore for us to consider in what manner the Apostle proves his conclusion; I think therefore, with deference to better judgments, that the reasoning of the Apostle depends upon these two points.

§ 2. First, that both Jews and Gentiles indiscriminately, and all of every nation universally, were guilty of dreadful crimes, and therefore subject to the judgment and anger of God. This he particularly points out with respect to those Jews who sought righteousness in the law (as in answer to the first argument we have observed in the last chapter;) See Gal. 3.<sup>10.</sup> but the same is shewn to be the case of all men in the third chapter of the Epistle to the Romans, where the Apostle charges Rom. 3. both Jews and Gentiles with the guilt of many great crimes.

§ 3. But that the context of this passage may be rightly understood, two things are to be particularly observed, one respecting the charge itself, the other, the persons against whom it is made. First, with respect to the charge, it must be observed, that it is not for all offences, even the most trifling, but for sins strictly speaking<sup>a</sup>, that is, the more enormous offences, and such as deserved eternal death.

<sup>a</sup> Vid. Episcop. Respons. ad 64 Question. quæst. 20.

<sup>a</sup> "The whole world, or the greatest portion of mankind, deserve the severest punishment, not for any thing born in

them (i. e. not on account of the imperfection of their nature), but for wicked and cruel deeds," &c. Grotius on Rom. 3. 19.

CHAP.  
VIII.

**DISS.** This appears both from the words in which the opinions proved in the preceding chapter, and more fully demonstrated in this, are expressed by the Apostle, "We have before proved both Jews and Gentiles to be all under sin." Where the phrase, 'to be under sin,' clearly means 'to be subject to it' 'to be in the habit of committing great offences.' **Rom. 7. 14.** Such are also said "to be sold to sin;" and also from the context of the whole passage, where the sins enumerated by the Apostle are all of the most heinous nature.

**§ 4.** Secondly, if you consider against whom this charge is brought, they are both the Gentiles and the Jews: all regarded in that state in which they were before, and without the grace of the Gospel. This is even manifest from the design of the Apostle, which was to invite both Jews and Gentiles, convinced of their own guilt and misery, to seek and embrace the grace of the Gospel. St. Paul therefore contends, that both Jews and Gentiles in that light are all under sin. But you will object, that there were some at least among the Jews, who before the preaching of Christ, led a pious and blameless life, and were free from such vices as the Apostle here mentions; as Zacharias, Elizabeth, Simeon, and others. To this I reply, that the observation is very true, and without doubt, among the Gentiles too, there were some who sincerely and heartily cultivated virtue and righteousness as far as it was known to them; and of this I am persuaded both by reason and the Apostle himself,

**See ch. 2. 14. 15. 26, 27.** who hints as much in this Epistle. But as the objection only relates to the Jews, we will confine our answer to them, leaving the reader to adapt it to the Gentiles with some little alteration. I say then, in the first place, that these pious men were extremely few among the Jews, and, compared to the rest, as a drop in the ocean. And therefore the Apostle made no great account of them; but it was right on account of the extreme small number of the pious to overlook them entirely when speaking of the wicked, who were in such numbers. And certainly expressions such as these, which the Apostle uses, are very common in Scripture, where they are undoubtedly used hyperbolically. Secondly, those few who were righteous under the law, did not receive their righteousness from the law, but owed it to the Gospel-

See John  
3. 2; Isa.  
66. 23;  
Joel 2. 28;

grace which before the preaching of the Gospel, in all prior C H A P.  
VIII.  
ages, ever exerted its power, although more sparingly and less frequently than, than since. In one word, they were led by the Spirit, not of the law, but of the Gospel, and are to be reckoned among those who are ‘of the faith,’ and not ‘of the works of the law;’ therefore the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews shews, that all the famous deeds of the pious men who lived in the times of the Old Testament, arose not from the law, but from faith. Thirdly, it is very improbable but that these few, at some time of their lives, fell into some sins or sin, which might be deserving of eternal death. Indeed this is certain, since of those men to whom a blameless and perfect obedience of the law under the Old Testament is attributed, it is said expressly, that they had one time or other fallen into enormous sins and well deserving death; as Asa, David, Josias, and others. And in this sense I think the following passage must be understood; “All have sinned, and fallen short of the glory of God.” These words seem to be universal, and to except none as not having been guilty at some period of their lives of some offences, or some one greater sin.

§ 5. And this seems to be what the Scriptures assert in various places, as for instance, “For there is no man that sinneth not;” and, “If we say that we have no sin we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us;” and, “If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us.” That this passage must be understood of sins strictly speaking, and not of trifling errors only, and is entirely general, is proved both from the matter itself, and from what follows in the second chapter of the same Epistle. And even here it must be observed, that St. John speaks in the past time. “If we say that we *have not sinned*,” that is, before our knowledge of the Gospel. Evidently the holy Apostle meant that the Christians to whom he wrote, should diligently keep themselves free from the crime of ingratitude, and because they were freed from sin, should not attribute that effect to themselves, or to the law of Moses, or of nature, but to the grace of the Gospel only. Otherwise he does not appear to deny but that after the knowledge of the Gospel, and the reception of its grace, some might be without sin,

Acts 2.  
17;  
Ps. 14. 2, 3;  
145. 14, 15;  
Phil. 2. 21.

2 Chron.  
16.  
1 Kings  
1. 5.  
2 Chron.  
35. 22.  
ver. 23.

1 Kings  
8. 46.  
1 Joh. 1.  
8. 10.

1 John 2.  
1, 2.

DISS. so that the word 'sin<sup>b</sup>' is used by him not for acts of mere  
 II. ignorance, nor for sudden, unforeseen offences, but for those sins which require time for the performance, as Grotius observes, and do not prevent deliberation. The possibility  
 1 Joh. 2. 1. of this he clearly hints at, where he earnestly exhorts Christians not to sin. Perhaps it may be objected that the  
 1 Joh. 1. 8. Apostle uses the present tense, "if we say that we have no sin;" he teaches therefore, that no man, even after receiving the Gospel, either is, or can be, free from those sins which are strictly so called. But this objection is easily removed.  
 ἀμαρτίαν  
 ἔχειν.  
 ἀμαρτά-  
 νεῖν.  
 ἀμαρτίαν  
 ποιεῖν.  
 Joh. 9. 41; sense then is, If we say that before the knowledge of the  
 15. 22, 24. Gospel, we did not grievously offend, and therefore were guilty of eternal death, and even now would be guilty, were it not for the aid of the Gospel, we are clearly liars, and ungrateful to the Gospel, and that Truth which we profess. In short, St. John himself interprets his own meaning, since what he before said in these words, "we have sin," he afterwards explains not by 'we sin,' in the present, but 'we have sinned,' in the past.—But let us now return to St. Paul.

§ 6. From what has been said, it appears that the whole of the first point upon which the Apostle grounds his argument is this, that Jews as well as Gentiles, as to the far greatest part of them, are plainly under the dominion of sin, and enslaved by the worst vices. And they who of either people were the best and the most pious, did not so live as not to fall into some sins, or some sin at least, of a dreadful nature, and worthy of death, and therefore all Jews and Gentiles indiscriminately, are all, without exception, subject to God's wrath and eternal death.  
 ver. 19.

<sup>b</sup> "Such as have not sinned from the beginning are not to be found; and such as have not sinned after conversion but rarely: and they become such by coming to the saving word, but are not such before they come: for without the word, and that the perfect word, it is impossible for a man to become without sin." Origen. cont. Cels. lib. iii. p. 153. edit.

Spenc. (c. 69. p. 493.)

(The 'perfect' word is opposed to the imperfect participation which the heathen enjoyed. See Just. Mart. Ap. 2. § 8. 13. Ed.)

<sup>c</sup> For this is "not to have sin, not to be guilty of sin." Aug. tom. vii. de Nupt. et Concup. i. 26. [vol. x. p. 295.]

§ 7. What the Apostle next takes for granted in his argument is this, that in the law of Moses is promised no true and perfect remission of sins, or redemption from divine wrath, and eternal death due to sin. To this the Apostle manifestly refers in the afore-mentioned chapter, where having deduced this conclusion from the supposition just proved, ‘that no one can be justified in the sight of God by the works of the law,’ immediately adds this second supposition, without which his whole argument would have been unsupported, in these words, “for by the law is the knowledge of sin;” which sentence must undoubtedly be considered exclusively, thus ; By the law is the knowledge of sin only, not the remission ; by the law therefore is no justification.

§ 8. I very well know that there are some who, after Origen, interpret this passage not as speaking of the law of Moses, but of nature : but they are mistaken<sup>d</sup>. For in the first place, though many, before the law was given, had a knowledge of their offences, their own consciences accusing them, yet still that knowledge was very obscure and imperfect, for the natural light of reason was so darkened by sin, that they did not consider many things to be sins which really were so, and accounted many trifling which were heinous. But by the law given by God, and inscribed upon tables, a much more clear and perfect knowledge of sin arose, not only how far it might be repugnant to right reason, but also how it was an offence to God, and would be severely punished by Him ; both which by the light of nature only, they could very imperfectly know. See Rom. 7. 7. If, secondly, you interpret this part of the law of nature, it will not be of equal force against the Jew, who might say, Although by the law of nature there is the knowledge of sin only, yet more must be attributed to the divine law which he had received. Again : if you interpret these words of the written law of Moses only, they will have no force against the Gentiles, who have nothing to do with this law; it follows therefore, that this passage must be interpreted of both laws, that of Moses and that of nature. I answer, by no means ; for in the first place, if you understand the Apostle as speaking of the written law only, still his argument will remain in full force against the Gentiles, since it is drawn in this

<sup>d</sup> Vid. Estium in loc.

**DISS. II.** manner: If the law given by God as a kind of interpreter of the natural law obscured by sin, explaining and renewing it, be still unable to produce righteousness, much less can the natural law alone do it. Wherefore, if from the works of the written law, no Jew can be justified, it must be understood as a necessary consequence, that much less can the Gentile be justified by the works of the natural law. But, secondly, what St. Paul observes of the Mosaic law, applies particularly to the Gentiles, because of them, many who believed in the Gospel, had by the instigation either of Jewish teachers, or other Judaizers, been led into such an admiration of the Mosaic law as entirely to despise, or but lightly esteem, the most holy Gospel of Christ. Therefore, undoubtedly, the Apostle undertook this careful examination of the Mosaic law, chiefly for the sake of these Gentiles, who had been thus unfortunately seduced.

**Gal. 3. 10.** § 9. But this defect of the Mosaic law in promising no freedom from the divine wrath incurred by sin, is more clearly shewn by the Apostle in his Epistle to the Galatians, where he pronounces all who are of the works of the law ‘to be under the curse,’ that is, so bound by the condemning sentence of the law, that no hope of relief in that law appears to them; which he more openly teaches in the thirteenth ver. 13. verse; shewing that Christ alone, who was made ‘a curse’ for us, can redeem us ‘from the curse of the law.’

§ 10. We said expressly, that the law contained no true and perfect remission of sin, because we very well know, that by the Mosaic law some pardon, of whatever nature it may really be, is given to sins, although voluntary and heinous. For although those sins which were committed through manifest pride, rebellion, and presumption, could be expiated by no sacrifice, but were punished by death, without pardon See Num. and mercy, except the special favour of God intervened; bers 15. 25. &c. “yet,” as a learned<sup>e</sup> man has well observed, “among these 26. &c. sins must not be reckoned all which are voluntary, or have been designedly committed, but those only which arise from an impious contempt of the commands of God, or the obstinacy of an insolent disposition.” That persons of the opposite opinion are in error will appear from considering, that God

<sup>e</sup> *Episcop. Institut. Theolog. iii. 3. 2. (vol. i. p. 71.)*

hath provided sacrifices for sins such as these, the 'not restoring of the pledge, cheating of another, denial of finding any property, and that with an oath.' Therefore in the Mosaic law, pardon was provided for sins even of a more heinous kind. But of what nature was this pardon? It was external, civil, temporal, and regarded only this earthly life.

C H A P.  
VIII.

Lev. 6. 2-4.

§ 11. For the law, so far as it was the instrument of civil society, intended 'for the happiness of the community,' promised long life to those who lived according to the law; as, *Beautidi-nem πολιτικήν.* on the other hand, it threatened a violent death to transgressors. But God the Supreme Lawgiver, in His mercy, *Lev. 18. 5.* *See Exod. 20. 7.* lest the whole people should be cut off by the punishments due to sin, determined that some only of the most atrocious crimes should be expiated by death, (as those which militated against civil life and customs, as also against that *theocratical* polity for the protection of which the Mosaic law was given, such as idolatry, murder, adultery, &c.) but that for men guilty by the breach of some legal rite, or by some crime inferior to those above mentioned, sacrifices should be offered, and so the punishment of corporal death, which the man deserved, should be transferred to the beast. So that the sacrifices of Moses afforded an earthly redemption only, since by divine appointment they freed men from violent and untimely death, but produced no remedy against death itself. In short, they granted no pardon to which the gift of eternal life was united, for of that neither promise nor mention is made in the law of Moses.

§ 12. To this the divine author of the Epistle to the Hebrews alludes when speaking of sacrifices prescribed in the law: he denies that they could 'make perfect the conscience of the worshipper,' that is, can free a man in the sight of God from the internal guilt of sin, but were only efficient 'to the purifying of the flesh,' to free a man externally from corporal punishment and death. In the same sense must be understood what the same writer teaches with much force, that no perfection could be expected from the priesthood of Aaron, that is, from the sacrifices offered by that priesthood. "The law made nothing (that is, no man) perfect." In which passages, 'by perfection,' is principally meant a full and perfect, that is, eternal freedom from all

Heb. 7. 11.  
ver. 19.  
also 10. 1.

DISS. sin, both small and great, which he very truly denied could  
 II. — be done by the Mosaic law.

§ 13. Whoever properly comprehends these things will clearly see why the Apostle refuses justification by the law of Moses, not because it demanded a most perfect, and therefore an impossible obedience, as the condition of justification, but because it provided no true justification whatever, that is, one united with the gift of eternal life, upon any conditions.

§ 14. From these premises then the Apostle deduces his conclusion, which is this; that neither Jews nor Gentiles (whom he comprehends under the expression ‘all flesh’) can be justified by the law of Moses in the sight of God: which words are decidedly significant, because the law had a certain justification peculiar to itself before men, and effectual in obtaining earthly happiness, but not the kingdom of Heaven: which the author of the Commentaries attributed to Ambrose<sup>f</sup> well explains thus: “It is true, that no man is justified by the law, but this is before God, for he is justified before men, so as to be secure in this life. But if he would be justified before God he must follow the faith of God; otherwise though he be safe here, he will be guilty hereafter.”

§ 15. The whole of the Apostle’s argument may be comprehended in this syllogism:

At the judgment-seat of God, no man can be justified by the law of Moses, who is guilty of those sins for which no remission is provided at that judgment-seat by that law:

But all, both Jews and Greeks, are guilty of those sins for which no remission is provided at that judgment-seat by the law of Moses:

Therefore no man, Jew or Greek, can be justified by the law of Moses at the judgment-seat of God.

Hence the Apostle infers, that both Jews and Greeks must have recourse to another covenant affording more extensive mercy; to that, namely, established by the blood of Jesus Christ, in whom is not a temporal only, ‘but an eternal remission and salvation.’ For a most full and perfect forgiveness of all sins, however heinous, united with the gift of eternal life, is promised to all those who, through faith in

Heb. 5. 9;  
9. 12.

<sup>f</sup> In Gal. iii. Op. vol. ii. p. 220.

Christ, earnestly repent themselves of their former sins, and C H A P.  
VIII. dedicate themselves to God and a holy life. For here indeed St. Paul urges upon Gentiles as well as Jews, what he had before particularly recommended to the Jews only, “Be it Acts 13.38, known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man (Christ) is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins, and by Him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.” Where the Apostle appears to affirm two things, not only that through Jesus was preached a spiritual remission of sins (which the law did not provide), but that every one who believed in Him should be justified from all things from which no man can be justified, not even in an earthly sense, by the law of Moses.—And thus far of the Apostle’s first argument.

## CHAP. IX.

THE SECOND ARGUMENT OF THE APOSTLE TAKEN FROM THE WEAKNESS OF THE LAW, OR ITS WANT OF AIDING GRACE.—CERTAIN PASSAGES TO THAT PURPOSE PRODUCED.—THE SEVENTH CHAPTER OF THE ROMANS EXPLAINED.—THAT ST. PAUL IS THERE SPEAKING OF MAN UNDER THE LAW, AND NOT ASSISTED BY THE GRACE OF THE GOSPEL CLEARLY SHEWN.—ARGUMENTS TO THE CONTRARY ANSWERED.—GAL. 5. 17, EXPLAINED.

§ 1. The second argument by which St. Paul proves the impossibility of justification by the Mosaic law, and which equally affects the whole law, is taken from another defect of that covenant, its want of aiding Grace. For as the old law gave no full and sufficient pardon for past sins, so neither did it afford any assistance to prevent future ones. The Apostle makes great use of this argument, shewing, that the law is of itself very weak, and entirely destitute of that strength by which unhappy men might be drawn from the dominion of sin and an inveterate habit of sinning, to a righteousness, true, agreeable to God, and productive of salvation.

§ 2. That remarkable passage in the Epistle to the Romans

**DISS.** refers to this fact: "For what the law could not do in that it  
II.  
**Rom. 8. 3.** was weak through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the  
likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the  
flesh." *Tò ἀδύνατον τοῦ νόμου* the Latin version has well  
rendered by *Quod impossibile erat legi*; for the genitive case  
when joined with such adjectives has the force of the dative;  
 $\epsilon\nu\phi$ , "in that," is 'because,' 'inasmuch as,' *quia*, or *in quantum*:  
"was weak," *διὰ τῆς σαρκὸς*, 'because of the flesh,' i. e. 'the  
carnal affections of men checked its power;'  $\epsilon\nu\delta\muoi\omega\muata$   
*σαρκὸς ἀμαρτίας*, 'of flesh exposed to, or under the power of  
sin;' "and for sin" *καὶ περὶ ἀμαρτίας*, is the same as 'because  
of,' 'on account of' sin: as *διὰ τὰ παραπτώματα*, "for our  
Heb. 10. 6; offences," or as others, and the margin of our Bible, 'a sacrifice  
13. 11.' for sin; "condemned sin in the flesh," that is, 'He destroyed  
sin by the deliverance up of His own flesh to death:' or 'by  
that oblation of His own flesh He destroyed sin in our flesh:  
by the change of the antecedent for the consequent, 'to con-  
demn' is here put for 'to put to death,' as 'condemnation'  
for 'death:' because such is generally the fate of the con-  
demned: 'He put to death,' that is, gave us the power of so  
doing: by destroying or putting to death, we mean the taking  
away the efficiency or power.

The following then seems to be the most simple interpreta-  
tion of the passage: The law could by no means repress the  
carnal affections of men, or free them from the force and  
tyranny of habitual sin, and lead them to true righteousness.  
The Son of God alone could perform this, and He hath  
actually done it, who by the merit of His death hath not  
only freed us from eternal death due to our sins, but hath by  
the power and efficacy of His death also enabled us to be dead  
unto sin itself, and alive unto God and true righteousness, as  
it follows in the fourth verse, "that the righteousness of the  
law might be fulfilled in us."

§ 3. The author of the Epistle to the Hebrews says the  
same, when he concludes, 'that the disannulling of the com-  
chap. 7. 18. mandment going before' was necessary 'on account of the  
weakness and unprofitableness thereof.' Here the word  
 $\epsilon\nu\tau\omega\lambda\eta$ . 'commandment' seems intended to signify the whole law of  
Moses, with all its precepts, although the ceremonial law is  
there principally referred to: but the same is more clearly

taught where speaking of the whole Mosaic covenant, he C H A P. says, that it was not ‘faultless,’ and therefore hints that it IX.  
was defective in some point. What that defect was, he chap. 8. 7.  
shews from the words of Jeremiah, namely, that it was ver. 9.  
unable to retain the covenanted in their duty, or to assist them in the performance of its commands. For when God, according to the prophet, says that he would abolish the Mosaic covenant and substitute another in its place, because the Jews had not remained in that covenant, he clearly proves this, that the cause why the Jews did not remain in that covenant did not wholly arise from their faults, but from some defect of the covenant itself, or else what would have been the use of abolishing that covenant, and substituting a new one for it?

§ 4. But to prove this matter there is no occasion to select verses from various passages, when we have before us the seventh chapter of the Epistle to the Romans, in which the Apostle professedly treats upon this subject; where, after he had in the four first verses laid open that great mystery 2 Cor. 12. which was the first among many others revealed to him, before all the other Apostles, that not only the converted Gentiles, but even the Jews themselves, who had embraced the faith of Christ, were no longer bound by the law of Moses, but were as free from that obligation as a woman is free from the bond of marriage upon the death of her husband, he next proceeds to shew what and how great a ver. 5, 6. privilege this is, that he might excite the Jews to embrace it with all eagerness. His words may be thus paraphrased: ‘When we were under the discipline of the law,’ (for so the words must be explained, being opposed to what follows, ‘but now that we are delivered from the law,’) ‘the motions of sins which were’ (according to Chrysostom ‘made manifest’ or ‘known,’ or even ‘which happened’) ‘by the law did work in all our members to bring forth fruit unto death, so from the law we had this fruit only, that on account of sins committed against it we should become subject unto death. But now we are delivered from the law, the authority of the law by which we were hitherto bound being broken, and hence we have no longer to serve God by carnal ceremonies and external rites, but we are arrived at that true newness of life,

DISS. and that internal purity of mind, which was the end and  
II. design of the old law.'

§ 5. Here it must be observed that the Apostle is not satisfied with saying that the law was not able to take away the evil inclinations of men, but according to his usual manner, carries it into the opposite extreme, by proving that the law indirectly served to excite and inflame them. This he hints in these words: "The motions of sins which were by the law." Undoubtedly those evil inclinations were not only known by the law, but in a certain sense took their rise, or at least their activity from the law. For our old Adam, and the indulgent nature of sin, being irritated by the prohibition of the law, and naturally inclined to any thing forbidden, began to exert its force, while it became more ardent from the desire of what was forbidden. Or, as others think, because the law provides no punishment for some crimes, especially internal ones, such as the desire of what is forbidden, hence men, taking occasion of sinning safely, and with the hope of impunity, indulged themselves in internal uncleanness of this kind. Whichever may be the case, it is certain that the Apostle shews the law of Moses to have provided not only no remedy for this offence of evil desires, but that the offence was increased by the giving of the law.

*ἀφορμὴν  
λαβόντες.*  
ver. 8.

ver. 7.

§ 6. But because this expression might appear odious to the Jews, and give them an opportunity of accusing the Apostle as having taught that the law was the cause of sin, and therefore evil, he prudently anticipates and takes away this objection, by shewing that the law is free from any blame on its part, since it had performed all that is possible for a law to do, in forbidding all sin, even internal sinful desires, which without the law men would scarcely have known to have been sins. If then men after the giving of the law became worse, that arose not from the nature of the law, but from themselves abusing it. On this point the Apostle dwells up to the thirteenth verse, where he starts a new objection, arising from the above answer: "Was then that which is good, made death unto me?" that is, the cause of death. The Apostle answers, "God forbid," that it should be called the cause of death, since it is only an occasion, and that too not given, but taken. For sin is the true cause of

this death, or rather the carnal affections of men enslaved by vices which are contrary to a 'spiritual' law. Hence when they knew the law and wished to perform it, they could not, being hurried away by these affections. From this he deduces an argument by which he vindicates the holiness of the law; namely, that even bad men themselves approve it while they transgress it, their own consciences punishing them in silence for the offences committed against it. And in describing this contest between the mind and the members, between conscience and the flesh, of a man under the law and destitute of the grace of the Gospel (speaking figuratively and in his own person) the Apostle proceeds from the sixteenth verse to the end of the chapter. In the following chapter he repeats what he had already in the former chapter observed, (whence he had made a digression to answer the objection proposed in verse seven, and which digression continues to the eighth chapter,) and what he had observed was this: That the bond of the Mosaic law was broken, and that no one would be in future condemned for not performing its ceremonies, provided he seeks for salvation according to the Gospel; and he then shews that all Christians were by the Gospel freed from the dominion of sin, from which there was neither hope nor possibility of freedom by the Mosaic law.

chap. 7.  
ver. 5, 6.

§ 7. The above explanation of this chapter is so easy and clear, that it is very wonderful how learned men could suppose, that in the latter part of the chapter, the Apostle describes the state of a regenerate person, and of one blessed with the grace of the Gospel. That opinion certainly, besides being contrary to all antiquity before Augustine, and which even Augustine himself at one time rejected, is clogged with insuperable difficulties and most evident absurdities.

§ 8. For in the first place it supposes that the Apostle here introduces observations unimportant and perfectly foreign to his design. For it is most clear that at the beginning of the chapter he speaks of the inefficacy of the law in freeing men from the dominion of sin, and moreover shews that so far from doing that, it even irritated and increased the force of sin. From this doctrine, and this only, arose the objections which the Apostle discusses in

**DISS.** the seventh and thirteenth verses. But it is altogether absurd and impossible, that the Apostle should answer objections arising from the inefficacy of the law, in those who have not the grace of the Gospel, by a representation of his own state under the Gospel. In the next place, since all allow that the Apostle from the seventh verse to the fourteenth, is speaking of the state of a man under the law, what sufficient reason can be imagined that we should suppose he changes his design in the fourteenth and fifteenth verses, especially as the words of the fourteenth verse contain evidently the reason of what had gone before, as appears by the causative article *for*, which connects it with the preceding verses. Now in the thirteenth verse this was the objection proposed: That it was wonderful that the very law, which by its own nature was holy and good, could be the cause of death to any one<sup>s</sup>. And I would ask, how the following verses answer this objection, if the Apostle in them speaks of his own regeneration, since in that state he is no longer under the law, neither has any concern with it? Can that reasoning, which represents the condition of a man under the Gospel, be ever intended to prove that the law is not the cause of death to those who live under the law? Let the thirteenth and following verses be paraphrased according to this idea, and instead of the wonderfully concise argument of the Apostle's, we shall have an unconnected string of observations.

§ 9. The usual objection of the change of time in the fourteenth verse is so trifling, that it is strange serious men should ever have used it. Because the Apostle changes from the past tense to the present, must it therefore be supposed that he also changes the original design of his argument for one totally foreign to it? Who is ignorant that this change of tenses is extremely common to all writers in the course of the same work, and while speaking of the same matter? But what if the reason for this change appears from the words themselves? For the Apostle, in the ninth verse, considers man as here represented in that state in which he was before he had received the law. Then in the following verses to the fourteenth he shews the event, that is, what had happened

<sup>s</sup> Vid. Amyrald. Consider. 2. Rom. 7. p. 23, 24.

to him in consequence of having received the law, namely, C H A P. IX.  
 that by the law he became guilty of a greater offence, and subject to a more severe punishment. So far then it was requisite that the Apostle should use the past tense; but at the fourteenth verse he shews the reason why the consequences of the law were different from what it had intended: the nature of the law, says he, is different from that of the men who are under the law. The law is spiritual, proceeding from the Spirit of God, and prescribing a spiritual mode of living; but man under the law is carnal, and enslaved by the lusts of the flesh. But it would have been improper that the Apostle, explaining a case even then existing, should speak in the past time, or say, ‘the law *was* spiritual,’ but ‘I *was* carnal;’ how much more fit was it to use the present:—“The law *is* spiritual, but I *am* carnal,” as will readily appear to every one who attentively considers the matter.

§ 10. But this opinion not only makes the Apostle’s reasoning unconnected, but even contradictory to itself. For undoubtedly what is said of the character described in this chapter, is so diametrically opposite to what the Apostle says of the regenerated man in the sixth chapter before and eighth chapter following it, that one might sooner reconcile light with darkness, life with death, and heaven with hell, than these with each other. Of the man here described it is said, “I am carnal.” But of the regenerated, “he ver. 14. walks not after the flesh, but after the spirit.” Of the first, Rom. 8. 1. that “he is sold unto sin,” like a slave who is delivered up to the power of a master, like Ahab, the worst of men as well as επρδθη ποιήσειν τὸ πονηρόν. kings, who is described in Scripture as ‘being sold to do wickedness.’ But of the regenerate it is affirmed, “that 1 Kings 21. 20. ch. 6. 18. being freed from sin he is made the servant of righteousness.” To the man described in this seventh chapter the Apostle allows the knowledge of what is good, and an ineffectual wish of performing it, but the power of performing that which is good he totally denies him; whilst of the regenerate ver. 18, 19. the Apostle affirms, that “God worketh in them to will and Phil. 2. 13. to do;” and of himself, says, that “by the grace of Christ he Phil. 4. 13. could do all things.” Lastly, it is said of the man here described, “that the law in his members hath brought him into captivity to the law of sin.” But of the regenerate it is ver. 23.

**DISS.** **II.** immediately afterwards affirmed, that “the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made him free from the law of sin and death.”

**ch. 8. 2.** § 11. That which some say<sup>h</sup>, that St. Paul might have with justice applied all this to himself, “in respect of those infirmities, to which even holy men, as long as they are in the flesh, remain exposed; though they are not the cause of death to them, because they are not imputed to such as deplore and strive against them, but are forgiven them for Christ’s sake:” this, I say, has not the least show of probability. For who will suppose that the expressions ‘to be carnal,’ ‘the slave of sin,’ ‘unable to do that which is good,’ ‘to be led captive to the law of sin,’ ‘to serve the law of sin,’ mean nothing more than those infirmities which during this life are to be found even in the most holy men? In what stronger terms could St. Paul have described the condition of a man enslaved to the grossest vices? how widely different is this interpretation of these expressions from their plain and general sense throughout the Holy Scriptures? and lastly what is it (if this is not) to ‘wrest’ St. Paul’s words and to do open violence to Holy Scripture?

*στρεβλῶσαι.*

§ 12. Let us now discuss those arguments by which the contrary interpretation is generally supported. Paræus in explaining this chapter, brings these forward and defends them with all his might<sup>i</sup>: 1. “It is evident,” he says, “that the Apostle is speaking of himself, and not of another, for he continues his complaint concerning himself in the first person through twelve whole verses, ‘I am carnal,’ &c., nor does he any where hint that he is speaking of another. It would therefore be too daring a forgery, and perversion of the plain text, thus to wrest his words, ‘Not I,’ but ‘some one else is carnal,’ ” &c. I answer: A poor argument indeed, though zealously put forward. Every one in any degree acquainted with St. Paul’s Epistles must be aware that this ‘change of person’ is a very favourite way of his expressing in his own person the state or circumstances of others. We have an example of the use of this figure in the fourth chapter of the first Epistle to the Corinthians the fifth verse, compared with verse the sixth, where the Apostle plainly declares that he

<sup>h</sup> Paræus in Rom. 7. 14. [p. 473.]

<sup>i</sup> In Rom. 7. dub. 4. p. 492—4.

*μετασχηματισμόν.*

had ‘transferred these things in a figure ;’ and it has been well observed by the ancients that the Apostle made most frequent use of this figure, when he wished thus to express disagreeable matter with forbearance : thus St. Chrysostom : “ He always lays bare unpleasant subjects by speaking of them in his own person.” And Jerome on Daniel : “ The sins of the people, in that he was one of the people, he enumerates in his own person ; which we find the Apostle also doing in his Epistle to the Romans :” where he very probably alludes to this passage.

CHAP.  
IX.

μετασχη  
μάτιον.

See also

Rom. 3.

1 Cor. 6.

12,15; and

10. 23, 29,

30.

Gal. 2. 18.

ἀεὶ τὰ  
φορτικά  
ἐπὶ τὸν  
οἰκεῖον  
προσώπουν  
γυμνάζει.

§ 13. Paræus objects “that it is true a change of persons is found in Scripture, but that wherever it occurs, its meaning is always plain from the context, but that here it is by no means so.” Now I should say that if it was plain in any passage, it is doubly plain here ; for not to mention the arguments already brought forward which absolutely require this figure, the Apostle, when wishing to answer the objection, that the law is the cause of sin, and so to shew that so far from being the cause, it alone accurately and fairly laid open the nature of sin, says, ‘that he should not have known sin’ but by the law, and that once when he was ‘without the law’ he did not know it ; surely this ‘being without the law’ denotes in the Apostle’s writings, the state and condition of Gentiles, or of those who are without a written law, as opposed to those who live under the dispensation of a law. For to live ‘without the law’ and ‘lawlessly’ or ‘lawless’ mean the same thing. Now the Apostle surely was never without the law, inasmuch as he was a Jew by birth, a disciple of Gamaliel from his childhood, and one who had imbibed the teaching of the law with his mother’s milk. It is necessary therefore for us to suppose that the Apostle wished to represent in his own person the state of the Jews : in the first place such as they were ‘without the law,’ i. e. before the law was given, and then as they were ‘when the commandment came,’ i. e. after the law was given. And if he began his argument with this change of person, what reason is there to induce us to believe that he did not continue it in the following verses ?

§ 14. Paræus here replies, that “St. Paul says he was without the law, not because he had it not, or was ignorant

See  
Rom. 2.12.  
1 Cor. 9.  
20, 21.

**DISS.** of it ; but because he was careless in the consideration of it,  
II. — not perceiving that it condemned all concupiscence as mortal sin." So also he explains the words "when the commandment came :" "he says, that it came to him not because he had it not before, but because he had not understood it : for that which we have, but understand not, is to us as though we had it not." But who is now to be charged with a manifest perversion of the passage let the candid reader judge. For in the first place, who would ever say that a man is without the law, who, while he has the law and knows that he has it, does not thoroughly understand it ? Certainly Holy Scripture never so speaks. I challenge him to produce a single instance. 2dly. It is easy to determine what the words "when the commandment came," mean from the Rom. 5.20. corresponding passage, "Moreover the law entered that the offence might abound." Who does not see that the passage in question is exactly the same as this? for what is there expressed by 'the law entered,' is here expressed by 'when the commandment came' : there it is 'that the offence might abound,' here, that 'sin revived.' Now it is quite clear that the entering in of the law, in the fifth chapter of the Epistle to the Romans, does not mean the spiritual perception of the law, but its first entrance into the world, when it was given to men: and therefore the coming of the commandment in the other passage means the same thing. 3rdly. In the last place I would ask at what time St. Paul says that he lived without the law, that is, without a true perception of it ? To this question Paræus professedly replies in his explanation of the third difficulty in this chapter, in the following words : " <sup>k</sup>He must be understood to speak of his early, middle, or present age : it is clear he is not speaking of the last, nor of his childhood : for the effects which he attributes to sin and to the law are not found in childhood : neither does he speak of a merely elementary knowledge of the law, but of such as adults, and even doctors of the law possess, as he mentions in the seventeenth verse of the eleventh chapter : it is plain therefore that he is speaking of his middle age which he passed as a Pharisee." And in what follows he contends that during the whole of that period St. Paul was 'without

\* Vid. etiam Calvin. in locum.

the law' in the sense above mentioned. Now from these words of Paræus I deduce the following argument : if St. Paul as long as he was a Pharisee was without the law, the commandment must have come to him when he was brought to the faith of Christ, and not till then : but this is perfectly at variance with his own words, that "when the commandment came sin revived, and I died, and the commandment which was ordained to life I found to be unto death ; for sin, taking occasion by the law, deceived me, and by it slew me," which no one in his senses would say befel St. Paul after his conversion to Christ ; but this is the way in which learned men, while they do violence to the plain meaning of Scripture, fasten a difficulty upon themselves and their hearers, to which they are both helplessly fixed. On the other hand, I suppose that this passage shews clearly that the Apostle gives more than some slight hint that he is not speaking of himself in this chapter, but is sustaining the character of some one else. But we have said more than enough on this first argument.

§ 15. The same learned man objects in the second place, that "To wish what is good, and to abhor sin, is the privilege of the regenerate only. The Apostle in this contest attributes to himself the former in the fifteenth, eighteenth, nineteenth, and twenty-first verses, the latter in the fifteenth, sixteenth, nineteenth, and twentieth ; therefore he is speaking as a regenerate person." I answer, It is indeed the privilege of the regenerate only to will what is good with a firm, sure, determined, and settled purpose of mind : but it is plain the Apostle is not speaking of such a volition, but only of a 'certain willingness'<sup>1</sup>, an unstable and weak desire for what is good, such, alas ! as may be found in too many persons who are not good. That this is true, is plain from the Apostle here drawing a difference between 'willing what is good,' and 'doing it ;' for these are so distinguished and opposed, that 'to will' signifies only a certain inclination or tendency, but not a definite, anxious, perfect, or determined will : for such a will of necessity produces action. St. Paul, therefore, says that he was inclined and predisposed towards what was good ; but that his will was not definite, anxious,

<sup>1</sup> *De velleitate quâdam.* Literally 'woulling,' the conditional form implying inefficiency, as opposed to *voluntas*.—ED.

CHAP.  
IX.

ver. 9, 10,  
11.

τὸ θέλειν  
τὸ κατεργῆσθαι κα-  
λον.

**DISS.** or firm enough to lead to action : and he affirms that he was  
 II. — not able to acquire such a will. Is this then this regenerate state of that almost divine man, to have but a slight inclination for holiness and virtue, but to be unable ever to prevail upon himself to discharge their duties ? Let the same view be taken of that hatred of sin of which the Apostle speaks ; for whatever emphasis be attributed<sup>m</sup> to this expression, still no one hates sin at the very moment he is committing it. Never was any drawn into sin by concupiscence, who sinned against his will ; for it were a manifest contradiction to be sinning against his will, and yet to be led to it by concupiscence : therefore all that hatred which the man here described felt towards sin must be referred to that time when either concupiscence had not yet been excited by objects presented to it, or it had not yet overcome the opposition of the reason. After concupiscence prevailed, it follows as a matter of course, that as long as it kept the reason in its power, there was no hatred of sin. But this is great praise indeed, to be so regenerate as to hate sin, when no passion or incitement of appetite induces us to commit it : but as soon as the opportunity of doing wrong offers itself, and some desire has urged us to commit sin, then heartily to love it ! No one can be ignorant that such a hatred of sin is often to be found even in the greatest sinners : and who would be surprised to find a struggle of this kind in a Jew, blessed with a knowledge of God's law, were he to find the same even in a heathen ? There is a remarkable passage Ep. 52. in Seneca : "What is this, O Lucilius, which, while we are going one way, drags us another, and impels us thither from whence we are longing to recede ? what is it that struggles with our soul, and never permits us to do any thing ? we vacillate between two opinions : we will nothing freely, nothing perfectly, nothing always." Well known also is that saying of the Poet's, where he introduces Medea with these words :

"I see the better part, and own it better ;  
 "This is the worse I choose."

So that Lactantius<sup>n</sup> has not unaptly put in the mouth of a heathen : "I wish indeed not to sin : but I am overcome :

<sup>m</sup> Vid. Amyrald. p. 37, 38.

<sup>n</sup> De Vera Sapient. iv. 24.

for I am clothed in weak and frail flesh : this is it which lusts, C H A P. which grows angry, which grieves, which fears to die ; and so — IX.  
I am led away against my will : and I sin, not because I wish to do so, but because I am compelled : I feel that I am sinning : but my frailty, which I cannot withstand, urges me on."

§ 16. I will add this one remark : let this description of the regenerate man as given by Paræus<sup>o</sup> be granted. "It is the part," he says, "of the regenerate to hate sin, but sometimes to commit it ; to will what is good, and generally to do it :" now if this description can be made to apply to the person represented in this chapter, with any show of truth, then as far as I am concerned let Paræus' interpretation be adopted : but how, I ask, can he so hate sin as only sometimes to commit it, who is actually the servant of sin ? how does he so will what is good, as generally to do it, who 'cannot find' how to do what is good ; that is (as is clear from the antithesis to the preceding verb, 'is present with'), who *παράκειται*. has not the power or faculty of doing right ? Whence Paræus himself on the nineteenth verse, "For the good that I would I do not," &c., grants, that the Apostle, though not continually, still for the most part was subject, and that the regenerate are subject to this inconsistency ; namely, that the good which they would, they do not, but the evil which they would not, that they do : and thus he plainly contradicts himself.

§ 17. It is objected in the third place, "'That to consent <sup>Ps. 1. 2;</sup> unto the law that it is good,' and to delight in its spiritual <sup>119. 77,</sup> <sup>103.</sup> obedience, is the peculiar privilege of the regenerate. The Apostle in this struggle consents unto the law that it is good, <sup>ver. 16,</sup> <sup>22.</sup> and delights in its spiritual obedience : therefore he is speaking as a regenerate person." I answer ; As to the consenting unto the divine law nothing can be plainer than that this is common to unregenerate as well as to regenerate persons. He who denies this, must in all fairness deny that an unregenerate man ever sins against the dictates of his conscience : for as often as a man sins against his conscience, he transgresses that law which he is convinced in his own mind is good, and ought not to be violated : common sense therefore and experience will sufficiently refute this part of the argu-

<sup>o</sup> Explic. dub. 4. in resp. ad arg. 2.

**DISS.** ment. Let us then discuss the other part of it: and here our

**II.** adversaries triumph as if at once victorious: for thus Paræus

**ver. 22.** comments on those words, "for I delight in the law of God:"

**ἀκράτεις.** "By this desire he plainly separates himself from the incon-

**Eth. 7.** tinent of the philosophers, and declares that he is spiritual

though he had before said that he was carnal; for no one except the spiritually-minded, delights in the law of God." But this of which the learned man makes so much, is really nothing.

**συνήδομαι**  
**τῷ νόμῳ.** For in the first place 'to delight in the law' clearly means the same as 'to consent unto the law' in the sixteenth verse, so that we have here a change of the consequent for the antecedent, 'delight' for 'approve:' since we generally

delight in what we approve. This one and the same approbation of the law the Apostle expresses in various ways: thus in the twenty-fifth verse, "with the mind I serve the law of God."

Where to serve does not mean in very act and deed to obey the law, (for this is not the part of the mind,) but a consenting unto it, as holy, just, and good, and an acknowledgement of the entire obedience due to it: and this kind of

approbation we have seen is possible in an unregenerate person. In the second place, granting that this word signifies 'delight' properly so called, this in no way helps Paræus; for supposing we were to affirm that as to will what is good may be applied to an unregenerate person, so to delight and rejoice in it might also, we should not be asserting any thing new or contrary to what has been already said: for in pro-

portion as a man wills any thing so far he also rejoices and delights in it; nor is it possible to separate these from each other. Do not the Holy Scriptures expressly declare that

this delight is sometimes to be found in the unregenerate? Thus Herod is said to have heard the Holy Baptist's preaching "gladly" and not without great pleasure of mind. The

**Mark 6.20.** John 5.35. Jews are said "to have rejoiced in his light," and they that

**Matt. 13. 20.** stood but for a while "to have received the word with joy."

They who say that these passages do not mean a true and real delight in the law of God, but a fluctuating and unstable one, how is it that they do not see that the same remark equally, nay in a much greater degree, applies to the passage before us? For St. Paul certainly does not attribute to the person here represented a firm and settled delight in the law of

God, but one of such sort as when the allurements of the flesh present themselves, is overcome and absorbed by them so that the wretched man is at last led captive to the law of sin in his members: but who can object to the unregenerate having such a delight as this, or who attribute it to the regenerate?

§ 18. Fourthly, it is objected that, "The regenerate alone possess the inward man, that is, the new man: the Apostle in this struggle possessed it, for he says, 'I delight in the law of God after the inward man,' therefore he is speaking as regenerate." I answer, This argument depends on the false supposition that the Apostle means the same thing by the inward and the new man; which is very far from the truth, for, as Grotius has well observed, neither the inward and the new man, nor the outward and the old man, are the same thing. The terms 'old and new man' signify his qualities under the name of their subject: and when the terms 'outward and inward man' are used, the name of the whole is given to its parts as a figure of speech: and so 'the new man' is the renewed man; 'the old,' the corrupt man in a state of sin: 'the inner man' is the rational soul; the 'outward,' the body with its affections. This is plain from the passage in the fourth chapter of the second Epistle to the Corinthians the sixteenth verse, where by the outward man the Apostle evidently means his body which was daily weakened by hunger, watchings, imprisonments, and stripes, and every kind of affliction, while by the inward man, opposed to the other, he means his rational soul, his better part, which no afflictions could weaken, but which on the contrary became improved by them, and daily attained unto new degrees of holiness. His persecutors indeed could bruise and torture, nay even kill his body, but they could do no more. Their malice could not reach his soul, inasmuch as that was beyond reach of their weapons, without the danger, safe in the custody of God. Thus the inward man is called by St. Peter 'the hidden man of the heart,' who opposes the outward adorning of the body to the inward adorning of the hidden man of the heart, that is, the mind. Moreover here the inward and outward man are opposed to each other in the same person, but where there is the new man, there the old has ceased to be.

DISS. Some relics indeed of the old man remain even in the re-generate, but these (as far as I know) never are called in Scripture by the name of the old man: since the old man means the whole body of sin (so to speak) complete and perfect in all its members. Lastly, it is evident, ‘that to delight in the law of God after the inward man’ is the same as ‘to serve the law of God with the mind,’ therefore, the ‘mind’ and ‘inward man’ are the same, and no one except an idiot would deny that every man has a mind. All this Paræus, in his usual confident way, despises as frivolous, notwithstanding his own answers are so very frivolous that one is sorry to mention them, they need only be read to be refuted. I will add two more remarks of the learned Grotius on this passage: the first is, that the Apostle is here speaking after the manner of other writers: the expression ‘inward man,’ is called by Philo, in a work entitled *Pejorem insidiari meliori*, ‘the man dwelling in each one’s soul,’ where also he says, ‘that it is this which invisibly reproves us from within,’ and in his Book on Agriculture he calls the same ‘the leading man,’ and adds, ‘what can the man that is within us be but the mind?’ And also in his book *Περὶ τῆς εἰς προπαιδεύματα συνόδου*, he says that God ought to be praised by us, ‘in the mind, which is *the man in man*, the superior in the inferior.’ Indeed St. Paul here uses quite the common mode of speech: for Plautus also speaks of “the safety of the inward man.” Grotius’<sup>p</sup> second remark is, that this passage is explained in the same way by the ancient Father Tertullian; for in his book on the Resurrection, he says: “Thus the word ‘man’ is in a certain sense the connecting link of two connected substances; which cannot be expressed by this word, unless they be joined together. Moreover the Apostle, by the ‘inward man,’ does not so much mean the soul as the mind, or intellect, that is, not the substance itself, but that which gives a savour unto it.”

§ 19. It is objected fifthly: “It is the privilege of the re-generate alone to bewail over their wretchedness, arising from the power of sin; to long for deliverance, and to acknowledge and praise the grace of God through Christ; the Apostle sighs,

<sup>p</sup> With whom Origen agrees: “Man, that is, a soul having a body at its command, is called the inward man,” &c. Cont. Cels. viii. p. 357. edit. Spenc. [c. 38. p. 721.] Vide et ii. p. 88. lin. 25. ejusd. editionis. [c. 48. p. 423.]

and gives thanks for his deliverance through Christ, therefore he is speaking as regenerate." I answer : If the words in the twenty-fourth and twenty-fifth verses, on which this argument depends, be more carefully examined, it will be seen that far from supporting this view, they greatly confirm the opinion I am advancing. For the Apostle adds, in the twenty-fourth verse, an exclamation or expression of misery suited to the man whom he had been describing in the preceding verses ; shewing his miserable, and if you regard the law, actually hopeless condition. Then, in verse twenty-five, he sets forth the grace of God through Christ, by which alone he himself had been delivered from this most wretched state, and a way of deliverance had been made and thrown open to others : which 'thanksgiving' is to be read in a parenthesis, as if he said—Most wretched indeed is the state of a man under the law, whom I have been describing in the former verses, for he is subject to the body of death, that is, to the dominion of sin, and therefore to death itself ; but everlasting thanksgivings are due and must be offered to Almighty God through Jesus Christ our Lord, by whose assistance and intervention I myself have obtained deliverance from this body of death, and others, if they will, like me, embrace the Gospel, may obtain it likewise ; for as he presently says, " What the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, condemned sin in the flesh, that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us." And from this we gain the following argument, which supports our view in the strongest manner.

The state of the person described in this chapter is a state of misery, a state of sin and death, a state, in short, from which whosoever are Christ's are delivered.

The state of the regenerate is not of such a kind :

Therefore the state of the regenerate is not the state of the person described in this chapter.

§ 20. The sixth and last argument springs out of the words, " So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God." On these Paræus thus remarks : " His saying ' I myself' takes away all doubt that the Apostle is speaking of himself and no other, and not of his past but of his present state, in which he actually was while writing these words : ' I myself,'

C H A P.  
IX.  
ver. 24, 25.

DISS. he says, and not some one else beside me ; also 'I serve,' not 'I have served.''" He then proceeds, "Julianus the Pelagian was somewhat too unreasonable in supposing that the Apostle is speaking of some one in his unregenerate state, and so let those who are so pleased with this gloss of his see how they may free themselves from the same charge." I answer, Paræus was too rash in rejecting merely on account of this trifle of grammar an opinion supported by so many strong arguments, and then to accuse its supporters of unreasonableness : besides, he is mistaken as to the grammatical part of it; for, not to mention the use of the present tense, (since we have shewn above that this is an absurd cavil,) *ille ego.* it is not necessary that *aὐτὸς ἐγώ* be rendered 'I myself,' since 'I that man' is better, that is, I that man whom I have described under the first person, as Grotius has well remarked. Therefore so far from this pronoun proving that the Apostle is speaking of himself, it goes rather to prove the contrary. For if the Apostle had been so speaking, he would have most probably said simply 'I,' nor would any other addition have been necessary : only because he had hitherto been describing some one else in his own person, (with the exception of that short thanksgiving spoken parenthetically in the beginning of this verse,) he therefore says, for the sake of greater clearness, 'I myself', or 'I that one,' in order that these latter words might be understood not of himself, as those just preceding, but of the same person described in the former verses.

§ 21. Moreover these last words of the Apostle are spoken emphatically to prove the point at which he had been aiming through nearly the whole chapter, and are, as it were, a brief summing up of the entire question. 'So then' &c., as if he had said, To close this digression then, (which was begun at the seventh verse,) since that one and the same man whom I have hitherto been describing in my own person, carried away by the flesh serves the law of sin, but with the mind

" 'I myself' seems however to be the true translation. If the former clause is strictly parenthetic, the meaning is 'I the same,' as it often is in English. See Kühner. 342. anm. 4. Matt. 17. 20.

These words may however be used by

the Apostle in his own person without identifying him with the man spoken of before, from whose state he thanks God that he is delivered. His flesh indeed still subject in itself to the law of sin, but his spirit enabled by grace to subdue the flesh.—ED.



consents to the law of God, and wishes to obey it, it is evident both that the law is of itself and in its own nature free from all blame, (the contrary to which was objected in verse seven), and is specially holy, good and pure : since the consciences even of those who transgress it bear witness to its holiness : and also (what has been before shewn in the fifth verse, and from which our opponents might take occasion of making these objections) that the law though of itself holy, yet had clearly no power to free men from the dominion of sin, on account of their carnal affections quenching its influence : inasmuch as it enlightened the intellect with the knowledge of sin, but furnished no strength or means adequate for subduing the flesh, and overcoming its dominion.

§ 22. I fear that what Paræus next observes concerning Julian the Pelagian is only said to prejudice the unlearned against our opinion, as if forsooth that opinion were the monstrous offspring of some great heresiarch : notwithstanding he knows very well, and has elsewhere on this very chapter in ver. 14. openly avowed, that it was the opinion of Origen and almost all the Greek Fathers, and of many of the Latins before Augustine, and even at one time of Augustine himself. However it is usual with the controversialists of this school at once to class all who differ from them, though but in expounding a single passage of Scripture, amongst branded heretics. Meanwhile, to use the words of the pious Grotius, “God be praised that in ver. 19. the best Christians, I mean those of the three first centuries, have rightly understood this passage, being directed by that Spirit by whom their lives were governed.”

§ 23. And with this thanksgiving our examination of this chapter might have closed, were there not one other argument deduced from a parallel passage, in addition to those already brought forward from this chapter, which seems to me the most plausible of all that can be alleged to support the opinion of our opponents : Paræus just touches upon it, in Rom. 7. 14. but Estius purposely presses it : the passage is from the Epistle to the Galatians : “For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh : and these are contrary the one to the other : so that ye cannot do the things that ye would :” “which words,” says Estius, “since they are exactly similar to those in the Epistle to the Romans,

**DISS.** ‘I see another law in my members warring against the law  
 II. of my mind,’ and ‘for what I would not that I do,’ and ‘for  
Rom. 7.15, 18, 23. to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not,’ and without doubt apply to the regenerate, clearly shew that even this passage (namely, in the seventh chapter of the Romans) must be referred to a regenerate and spiritual person, who is continually warring against the flesh.”

I answer, first, That must indeed be a strange system of interpretation which on account of some similarity of words in one passage of Scripture would give a meaning to another entirely at variance with the object and design of the author in that passage. Now we have abundantly proved that the Apostle’s object in the seventh chapter of his Epistle to the Romans is to shew the inefficiency of the law when separated from the grace of the Gospel, to crush the power of sin, and consequently the wretched condition of a man under the law alone. Whatever therefore be the meaning of this passage in the Galatians, it is certain that the Apostle in this seventh chapter of his Epistle to the Romans is by no means speaking of a man regenerated by the grace of the Gospel. But, in the second place we cannot perceive this similarity in these two passages which Estius imagined he did: on the contrary, if they are carefully examined they will be found to differ very considerably. They agree indeed in this, that in both a certain struggle in the man is described: but this struggle is very different, whether we look to those struggling, or to the event of the contest.

§ 24. With regard to the parties struggling, these in the Epistle to the Romans are the sensual appetite and the reason or intellect imbued with the knowledge of the law, called by the Apostle ‘the flesh and the inward man, the flesh and the mind, the law of the members and the law of the mind.’ But the contest described in the Epistle to the Gal. 5. 17. Galatians is between the ‘flesh and the Spirit’ (namely, the Spirit of Christ, as appears from the eighteenth verse compared with the fourteenth verse of the eighth chapter of Romans); that is, the soul of man endued with the light and grace of the Gospel. For it is particularly to be observed that the Apostle in the whole of the contest described in the Epistle to the Romans does not say a word about the Spirit.

of Christ: he merely opposes the mind, and the law of the CHAP.  
mind, and the inward man, to the flesh: while on the other IX.  
hand in the eighth chapter (in which he is evidently describ-  
ing the state of those regenerate through the grace of the  
Gospel) he continually speaks of the flesh and the Spirit, as  
also in this passage in the Galatians, no longer calling it the  
mind, or the law of the mind, or the inward man: which  
clearly proves that in this seventh chapter the Apostle is  
speaking of one who had no aid against the flesh besides his  
reason or intellect imbued with the knowledge of the law,  
and who consequently was entirely without the Spirit of  
Christ.

§ 25. With regard to the ‘event’ of the contest, the Apo-  
stle does not say here that a man renewed by the grace of  
the Gospel cannot perform the good that he would, much less  
that he is led captive to the flesh, or to the law of sin in the  
flesh, or that he is the slave of sin, all which expressions he  
does apply to a man under the law in his Epistle to the  
Romans: on the contrary, if we attend to what he says, he Rem. 7.  
determines the state of the regenerate to be just the reverse:  
which will be evident if we refer the words “so that ye can- Gal. 5. 17.  
not do the things that ye would”<sup>1</sup> to that which immediately  
precedes them, namely “the Spirit against the flesh” (the  
words “and these are contrary the one to the other” being  
taken in a parenthesis), and so interpret them not of the good  
works of the Spirit, but of the evil ones of the flesh, in the  
following way: The flesh lusteth against the Spirit: but on  
the other hand the Spirit lusteth also against the flesh, and  
possesses such a power over you, that ye do not commit those  
sins which ye would wish to do through the flesh. This is  
Grotius’ interpretation, and I think it is a very plain one;  
for in the first place it is much fitter to refer the last words  
in the verse to the clause immediately preceding them than  
to one more remote, as is plain on the slightest consideration:  
and secondly, this view corresponds most excellently with the  
object and design of the Apostle; for in the thirteenth verse  
he had been exhorting the Galatians not to use the liberty of  
the Gospel for an occasion to the flesh, and as a remedy

<sup>1</sup> Some refer these words to both the which I have no great objection.—Vid.  
preceding members of the sentence, to Crel. in loc. et Hammond,

**DISS.** against this hostile power of the flesh he bids them walk in  
II. the Spirit: "This I say then, walk in the Spirit and ye shall not fulfil the lusts of the flesh." For as Grotius has shewn the words 'and ye shall not fulfil' are not to be taken imperatively, the reason immediately follows: "For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh, and these are contrary the one to the other, so that ye cannot do the things that ye would :" as if he had said, Although ye incline towards the flesh, and would not unwillingly fulfil its desires, yet if ye are under the power and guidance of the Spirit of Christ, it is impossible for you to obey these lusts : the flesh indeed endeavours to bring you under its power, but it cannot ; for the Holy Spirit lusteth also against the flesh, and mighty is that Spirit, yea and it will prevail, and prevent you from fulfilling those desires, which otherwise ye would wish to do. Unless these words are thus explained it is hardly possible to conceive in what way they can contain the reason of the preceding exhortation; rather would the reasoning contradict the conclusion; for supposing that the Apostle had spoken thus ; Walk in the Spirit and ye shall not fulfil the lusts of the flesh ; for the Spirit and the flesh are opposed one to another, so that ye cannot do the good that ye would : how inconsistent and contradictory is such a sentence ! for surely, so far from this being a sufficient reason for walking in the Spirit, namely that the flesh so overcomes the Spirit that it prevents us from doing those things which the Spirit dictates, it plainly persuades to the contrary : for what use were it to walk in the Spirit, if that Spirit has no power against the tyranny and dominion of the flesh ? but if we follow Grotius' interpretation, the context is both clear and perspicuous, and most consistent.

§ 26. If however, against what is so manifest, it is objected that this clause, "so that ye cannot do the things that ye would" means such a victory of the flesh over the Spirit, by which a man cannot on account of the flesh perform the dictates of the Spirit ; then it must necessarily be supposed that the Apostle is speaking to the Galatians not as to those blessed with the birth unto salvation, but to those who though in some degree illumined by the knowledge of the Gospel, and affected by the Spirit of Christ, were still remaining under the

dominion of the flesh, and having more intercourse with the C H A P. law than with the Gospel. For the Apostle in this very ————— IX.  
chapter is plainly speaking of the regenerate, “If ye walk in See Rom. the Spirit” (which all regenerate persons do) “ye shall not 8. 1.  
fulfil the lusts of the flesh;” “If ye be led of the Spirit” ver. 16. (which also the Apostle affirms of all regenerate persons) “ye See Rom. are not under the law,” verse eighteen ; that is, now that ye 8. 14.  
are come to years of discretion, ye have no need of the law as your schoolmaster. But most plainly when he says “And ver. 24.  
they that are Christ’s, have crucified the flesh with the affec-  
tions and lusts.” These passages at least plainly shew that the Apostle in the seventh chapter of his Epistle to the Romans is not speaking of truly regenerate persons : for they who so walk in the Spirit as not to fulfil the lusts of the flesh, they who are led by the Spirit, who in short have crucified the flesh with all its lusts, how can such as these be said to be, “carnal, the servants of sin, captives to the law of sin in their members to serve the law of sin,” all which is expressly said of the man described in that chapter ? so that this passage in the Epistle to the Galatians plainly overturns our opponents’ opinion on the point at issue, do what they will.

§ 27. And thus much concerning the sense of this seventh chapter of the Romans, on which we have dwelt the longer, both because the Apostle is there purposely arguing from the weakness of the law, and because if the contrary interpretation be admitted, the cause we are upholding plainly falls to the ground ; for if this inefficient willingness of good which alone is attributed to the person described in this chapter, be all that the grace of Christ effects in us, then there is altogether an end to the glory, and that exceeding excellence of the Gospel, and to the necessity of good works and a holy life : to wish to live well, will be sufficient ; really to do so, will not be necessary.

## CHAP. X.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE APOSTLE'S, TAKEN FROM THE WEAKNESS OF THE LAW, MORE DISTINCTLY EXPLAINED.—THE LAW WANTED A DOUBLE ASSISTANCE, BOTH THE PROMISE OF ETERNAL LIFE AND THE GIFT OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.—OF WHAT CONSEQUENCE WAS THE FIRST DEFECT.—SOME PASSAGES ON THIS HEAD PRODUCED.—FOUR DIFFICULTIES ON THIS SUBJECT REMOVED.

D I S S.  
II.

§ 1. We have given a general explanation of the Apostle's argument taken from the weakness of the law. But because on this point almost the whole of the Apostle's reasoning against justification by the law depends, it will, perhaps, be worth while to consider it a little more fully.

§ 2. It must be observed, then, that the old law laboured under a double defect of aiding grace, external and internal. By external grace, I mean the promise of eternal life; by internal, the gift of the Holy Spirit: both of these were wanting to the Mosaic covenant.

§ 3. With respect to the first, it is no small mark of the weakness of the law, that its promises and threatenings, in which the force of every law is placed, were only temporal and earthly. For men would easily prefer their lusts to them, and rather indulge those than be induced to temperance by such hope or fear. For although virtue is to be loved for its own sake, yet to attain it is difficult, and not to be acquired without great labour and much perseverance. But labour grows weary, and perseverance flags, if not encouraged by the hope of greater reward: and no reward confined to the narrow bounds of this life is a sufficient reward for the study of virtue; for life is short, but this art of living well requires much time to acquire. A great part of life is gone before we have properly learned how to live. But if it were not so, yet that is but a dead hope which is terminated by the grave, cheerless that consolation which the cold

hand of death shall quickly snatch away, restless that quiet C H A P.  
X. which the bitter recollection of the daily approach of death ——  
disturbs. In a word, the mind of one who rightly considers  
is not likely to be much affected by those advantages, which,  
although unattainable without much labour, nor to be re-  
tained without care, or even enjoyed without anxiety, still  
suddenly disperse and leave their possessor to the power of  
death, which is usually more bitter in proportion as the life  
we have led has been pleasant. The law therefore of Moses,  
which promises nothing beyond this life, could not produce  
in men a sincere, ardent, and indefatigable love of virtue.

§ 4. But beside this, the Mosaic law, by containing only temporal promises and threatenings, was therefore inclined to produce in men a mean and sordid disposition, entirely foreign to true and genuine piety. For the principal parts of piety are these, self-denial, bearing the cross, constant prayer, meditation on a future life, a moderate use of the good things of this world. How was it possible that this law, which tied down the minds of men to earthly advantages and worldly delights only, could produce in them piety like this? How could he who placed his happiness on earth, elevate his soul to God, and pour out constant prayer to Him? Where our treasure is, there will our heart be also, doth the word of truth testify. But the mind cannot raise itself to God without at the same time abstracting itself from earth and directing itself to heaven. In short, how can he pursue temperance, and all purity in soul and body, who is accustomed to place the hope of his reward in the enjoyment of corporal delights? For why, beyond all necessity, was there promised an abundance of fleeting blessings, if men were not at liberty to indulge themselves in them? Besides, how could a man reasonably be expected to wean himself from avarice, who places the fruit of his labours in wealth and the abundance of his possessions? Lastly, how could it be expected that he should bear the cross with patience who was tempted to virtue by the hope of escaping misfortune?

§ 5. Hence it is certain, that if you consider the system of the Mosaic precepts as adapted to those times, you will perceive it to be particularly suited to such a reward of piety. The precepts and the promises admirably answered

DISS. to each other. For although God by various means taught His people under the law a more perfect piety, which He exacted by laws and punishments, still was religion in those days far from accurate, perfect, or advanced to its full bounds. How many things were permitted then, which to Christians are entirely unlawful, or improper. How many principal duties of piety, in the law are only slightly hinted at, or darkly taught, or altogether omitted ; which is so true, that prayer itself, the chief office of piety, which must be constantly performed by Christians, is not in the law universally commanded, that is, to all the people, and at all times. The High Priest was expressly commanded to pray for the whole people, and to bless them, according to a set form, as appears

Numb. 6. from the book of Numbers. And there was also a set form  
22—27. of prayer appointed for the people, at the end of the tithing

Deut. 26. time ; so that Episcopius <sup>s</sup> was mistaken when he says that no  
12—15. set form of prayer was ever read to the people under the law.

But this I hold to be most true, that in the law of Moses there is no general commandment for prayer upon all occasions, and therefore the Rabbins, in their collection of six hundred and thirteen precepts from the law <sup>t</sup>, finding no express command on this subject, as is also observed by Episcopius, deduce one from the common expression in the

Exod. 23. Scriptures, ‘to serve,’ as “Thou shalt serve the Lord thy God.”  
25. having recourse to their Cabala and oral law.

§ 6. Now this defect of the Mosaic law, namely that it made no promise of eternal life, the Apostle remarks in several places. And so some explain that passage where the Apostle says that it was impossible for the law to free men Rom. 8. 3. from the dominion of sin, “because it was weak through the flesh,” that is, say they, because it contained only earthly promises. But because in the latter clause of this sentence opposed to this, (where Christ is said to have performed what the law could not, namely, to have slain sin in the flesh,) the word ‘flesh’ is taken in its usual sense, the more common interpretation I should think must be taken. A more appropriate passage is that in the preceding chapter, where the law

<sup>s</sup> Institut. Theolog. lib. 3. § 3. chap. 1. Cosri by Arnold. Pœlenburg. Pref.

<sup>t</sup> See a remarkable proof of this quoted from the very ancient book of alteram.

of Moses is called the ‘flesh,’ for that these words, “when we were in the flesh,” must be interpreted, “when we were under the law,” appears from their being opposed to the sixth verse, as well as from the intent of the Apostle through the whole of that chapter, which is to describe the state of man under the law. Now the law of Moses seems to be called ‘flesh,’ not only because most of its precepts are carnal and external, but also because its promises by which that law was confirmed, do not reach beyond this life. In the same sense Grotius explains the words of the Apostle, in his second Epistle to the Corinthians : where professedly treating of the superiority of the new covenant above the old one, he calls the old law, “the ministry of death,” because all its promises were terminated by death without any hope of a resurrection. So the Mosaic law is said ‘to kill’ because it leaves man subject to death, and delivers him not from it, as also, according to Grotius, the Hebrew word ‘to make alive’ is said of him who has not killed any one. But truly, I think that these phrases, ‘the ministry of death,’ and ‘to kill,’ have a different meaning, even this, that the Mosaic law, considered separately from the Spirit of God, kills, that is, renders those to whom it is given subject to the divine wrath and eternal death ; not indeed by its own fault, but on account of the weakness of the flesh. Which sense is clearly proved by what the Apostle says elsewhere. The following words seem more to the purpose. “The law is not of faith, but the man that doeth them shall live in them;” that is, the law neither requires faith, nor promises those things which exercise it, strictly speaking (for it is “the evidence of things not seen;”) since all its promises are the immediate subject of the senses, and belong to this visible life : of futurity it says nothing ; it stimulates us to virtue by no promises of that life, but commands us to perform its precepts without any such encouragement ; it only says, “Thou shalt live,” i. e. shalt be prosperous and happy ; but the Apostle’s meaning is most clear in the following passage ; “For if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by that law :” a law is said to give or do that which it promises : the sense therefore is, If the law had had the promises of eternal life, then would

**DISS.** men have been able, by the law, to have obtained true and spiritual righteousness, or true and perfect justification, that is, such as was united with the gift of eternal life. But the matter is far otherwise, for the law contained promises respecting this life only, and therefore could neither induce men to true piety nor grant them true justification.

**Heb. 7. 19.** § 7. Agreeable to these is the following passage. “For the law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope did, by the which we draw nigh unto God.” Here almost every word deserves our notice. The word here *τελειοῦν*. translated ‘made perfect,’ more properly signifies to expiate, and that most perfectly even the most heinous sins, and all punishments, both temporal and eternal. ‘Nothing,’ evidently means no man; “but the introduction of a better hope did,” affords more difficulty. Some refer it to the law in this manner: For the law perfected nothing, but was the introduction of a better hope, that is, Christ. But in the first place, this interpretation takes away the antithesis between the law and the Gospel which is here evident: and in the next, the preposition *ἐπὶ* in the word *ἐπεισαγωγὴ* signifies something added or introduced after, as in the word *ἐπιδι-*

**Gal. 3. 15.** *τάσσεται* ‘addeth thereto’ *ἐπεισαγωγὴ* therefore is ill rendered by ‘introductio,’ the bringing in, since it signifies a ‘super-introduction’ or ‘post-introduction.’ Now the ‘post-introduction’ of a better hope is put for ‘a better hope afterwards brought in,’ so that the Gospel is here clearly signified, in which that better hope is revealed: the word *ἔτελείσεν* ‘hath perfected,’ must be repeated here, as above. Lastly, to draw nigh, as Grotius observes, is properly a word belong-

**Ezek. 4.13; 43. 19.** ing to the priest’s office. But here ‘to draw nigh to God,’ signifies to approach Him through faith, repentance, and newness of life, and to offer ourselves to Him as a lively

**James 4. 8.** sacrifice, holy, and acceptable. These last words also clearly shew the reason why the hope introduced by the Gospel is better, and leads to a perfect expiation, because undoubtedly it makes us approach to God, seek His favour in prayer, serve Him with the whole heart, and keep all His commandments. But when we in this manner approach to God, God on His part approaches to us, that is, closely embraces us with the arm of His love, most perfectly forgives all our sins for His

**Wisd. 3. 2.**

Son's sake, and blesses us with eternal life. But the law, as C H A P. it has not this better hope, cannot lead us in this manner to X. God, nor make us partakers of a perfect expiation. This subject is more largely explained in the Epistle to the Heb. 8. Hebrews, where the Gospel covenant by which that better hope was given, is called a more excellent covenant than that of the law, because this last was not confirmed by such excellent promises. It would be easy to produce many such passages, but these are sufficient. We shall now consider those difficulties on this subject which most deserve attention.

§ 8. The first question is, whether there be in the Old Testament no promise of eternal life. On this many doubt. But Augustine, in my opinion, answers it best, defining what is meant by the Old Testament, whether the covenant given from mount Sinai only, or all the Scriptures of Moses and the Prophets, and the other holy writers. If the word be understood in the latter sense, it must certainly be allowed that there are in it some indications of a future life, especially in the book of Psalms, in Daniel, and Ezekiel. But even in these you will with difficulty find any clear and express promise of eternity. But these, whatever they were, were only forerunners of the Gospel, and did not belong to the law. That it contained earthly promises, and those only, Gal. 10.  
may be proved from many passages. If any think otherwise, Exod. 23.  
let him shew (which however is impossible) one passage 24.  
containing a promise of eternal life. It is true indeed, that Lev. 26. 3.  
the earthly promises given to the law of works, were signs of Deut. 7.  
those blessings which should follow the law of the Spirit, and 12, 13;  
it was the intention of the Almighty that they should be 18. 2, &c.  
so understood. It is also true, that there are in the law general promises, or at least given in general terms, in which Lev. 26. 3.  
eternal life not only may be understood, but it is evidently Deut. 7.  
the divine intention that it should : such as "I will be thy 12, 13;  
God," and "I will bless thee." That in these promises, 18. 2, &c.  
thus generally expressed, it is possible those blessings are intended which take place only after death, who can doubt? That God should be the God of any one, what does it signify, but that God will embrace him with divine benevolence? But such benevolence as is divine, and worthy of God, can be only that, beyond which there is nothing greater or better;

**DISS.** it must also be like its author, eternal, most powerful in effect,  
II. and therefore liberating from death and the grave. That God  
intended that under these words eternal life should be under-  
Matt. 22.  
31, 32.  
Heb. 11.  
16. 2 Cor.  
6. 16, 18;  
7. 1. Rev.  
21. 3, 7.  
stood appears from the words of Christ and His Apostles. But  
these things do not sufficiently prove that eternal life was  
promised in the Mosaic covenant. For in the first place,  
promises, especially when annexed to a covenant, ought to be  
clear and express, and of such a nature as to be well under-  
stood by each party. But these promises were typical and  
general, without the addition of any interpretation, and hence  
almost impossible to be understood in the above sense.  
Of types this is certain. With respect to general promises,  
as all general promises are rather obscure, particularly when  
mixed with innumerable particular promises, by which they  
seem restrained to a certain kind of blessings, as is the case  
here, it is scarcely possible that any one should understand  
these general promises otherwise than as containing a multi-  
tude of particular ones, or should extend them beyond the  
bounds of this life. This eternal life also delineated by types  
and comprehended by general promises, was not given, as we  
have just hinted, to the external righteousness taught in the  
letter of the law, but to that spiritual purity, of which that  
external piety was only a shadow. For as under the veil of  
temporal blessings eternal ones were concealed, so also the  
outward religion prescribed in the law was the shadow and  
type of that spiritual righteousness which was to be more  
clearly revealed in the Gospel. In a word, the law, in a  
carnal and literal view, did not require spiritual righteousness,  
nor promise eternal life; but spiritually considered, was the  
very Gospel itself; and when taken in this sense the Apostle  
raises no objections concerning it.

§ 9. The second question is, Were there any under the  
law who expected life eternal? It is most probable that the  
wisest and most pious Jews, either by the extent of the  
general promises, a contempt of earthly blessings, a per-  
ception of the divine goodness, the desires of their own mind  
longing for something better than a fleeting blessing, the  
example of Enoch and of Elijah in after ages, the tradition of  
the patriarchs, (to whom God had given many reasons for ex-  
pecting future blessings, among which it was by no means

the least, that many truly excellent men had lived here without any share of earthly felicity, which argument is more fully pursued in the Epistle to the Hebrews,) or induced by other reasons, did believe that God, besides the blessings peculiar to this life, and contained in the Mosaic law, intended to bestow others also after death, unto His faithful servants. Besides, it is very certain that pious men among the people of God could not be supposed to die as the beasts, for ever. Neither is it important that there is scarce any mention of this faith in the books of the Old Testament: for it appears that Abraham hesitated not to sacrifice his promised son, being encouraged by the reflection that God was able to raise him up again and restore him. That this was so we learn from the Epistle to the Hebrews. But of Heb. 11.<sup>19.</sup> this truly admirable, and altogether Christian faith, no vestige, no hint whatever, is to be found in the history of Abraham.

§ 10. Besides, there were in every age among the Jewish people, men of God, and prophets taught of Him, whom, when so many hidden things were unfolded to them, no man can suspect to have been entirely ignorant of the mystical meaning of the law, and to have known nothing of a future life. But since it would be impious even to imagine that these blessed men grudged others the light they enjoyed, we must necessarily suppose that they, to proper persons, unfolded the mysteries of the law, and taught each so much as their understandings would permit, or their situation required. And in public, the prophets and wise men so spoke, as not to render contemptible the secrets of a holier discipline, and at the same time to excite the curiosity of the pious hearer. And hence, Grotius imagines, that distinction of the law into written and oral, arose among the Jews, which they also call 'cabala,' that is, 'tradition,' both which, they say, were given by Moses; not that they differed from each other, but the difficulties and secrets of the written law were in the other laid open to the diligent enquirer.

Annot. ad  
Matt. 5.  
20.

§ 11. And this manner of teaching seems to have been more general to the people, but particular and more discriminating to the attentive, (as the same learned man has observed), until the times of the Babylonish captivity, when

**DISS.** Daniel openly spoke of the resurrection, as did Ezekiel, who followed. After this, the ‘wise men’ who were not divinely inspired, succeeded to the prophets, but with inferior authority. These out of Daniel openly taught to the whole multitude of the Jews the doctrine of the resurrection, and a future state, so that in the times of the Maccabees, this tenet being entirely drawn out of its concealment, became an article of the Jewish religion and faith, as we learn from the history of those times.

See  
2 Mac. 7.  
9, 23, 26;

comp.  
with Heb. 11. 35.

: § 12. If you ask why this doctrine was published after the Babylonish captivity in particular, Grotius gives you a sound and ingenious reason. Because at that time there was great danger, lest the Jewish nation, accustomed to hear of external blessings only, having lost the splendour of their empire, groaning under foreign tyranny, harassed by the fear of punishment, torture, and death itself, should turn from the worship of the true God; so that it became absolutely necessary to fortify the people against temptation, which could not have been effectually performed without proposing the prospect of a happy futurity to those who died for the sake of God. And this doctrine was not without its fruit; for, animated by this hope of a glorious resurrection, very many in the time of the Maccabees suffered most cruel deaths for the sake of the law, as we find in the books of Maccabees, and Epistle to the Hebrews as above. To which may be added another important reason: the times of the Gospel were then approaching. For God observed this manner of granting the covenant of His mercy, that as the time for a full exhibition of it approached, it was illustrated by successively clearer revelations, and its light daily increased more and more, until at last all clouds being dispersed, Christ, the Sun of righteousness, shone with full splendour on the whole earth. This dispensation Grotius <sup>u</sup> himself elsewhere speaks of as follows. “When the time of a better covenant was approaching, God was pleased, by means of the prophets and wise men, to send a kind of morning twilight before the rising Sun;” and again <sup>x</sup> when he most aptly calls the whole period after the return from Babylon the “vestibule of the Gospel.”

<sup>u</sup> *Discuss.* p. 14.

<sup>x</sup> *In Annot. ad Eph. 11. 12.*

§ 13. From the last answer a new question arises. In C H A P. X.  
what sense then is Christ said to have “brought life and <sup>2 Tim.</sup> immortality to light through the Gospel;” since it appears from what has been said, that the doctrine of a future life was commonly received among the Jews many years before the coming of Christ? In the first place I answer, that this text may perhaps be referred to the Gentiles only, who were before described by the Apostle as “having no hope, and being without God in the world;” his words in the eleventh verse evidently incline to this meaning, “Whereunto I am appointed a preacher and an apostle and a teacher of the Gentiles.” You will say, But even among the Gentiles there were some who had hopes of a life after this. This is true; and indeed among all the civilized, and even barbarous nations, some idea of a resurrection had spread itself<sup>12</sup>. But first, not a few of the philosophers thought otherwise. Epicurus, for example, and his herd, openly laughed at the notion of a future life, and even Aristotle either says nothing, or that very obscurely, on the soul’s immortality. Secondly, those who most favoured this doctrine, hesitated greatly about it, and it was rather an opinion than a belief<sup>2</sup>. Thirdly, in explaining it, their opinions were various and discordant: the Stoicks<sup>a</sup> thought that the souls remained for a certain time, but not beyond the period of ‘conflagration.’ *ἐκπύρωσις*. The Pythagoreans defended the doctrine of metempsychosis of which a certain poet says,

The souls are free from death; their former seat  
Relinquished, they dwell in new abodes &c.

And

He compels them to endure the forms of mute beasts  
He makes the cruel, bears, the rapacious, wolves,  
The crafty, foxes. And when he has driven them  
Through many years and thousand shapes,  
At length he again recalls them, purged  
By Lethe’s stream, to the first elements  
Of the human form.

And lastly, the Platonics, the best of the philosophers, imagined a kind of rotation, and that the souls of men were

<sup>1</sup> Vide Grotium in Annot. ad lib. i. de Ver. Rel. Christ. p. 38, 39.

<sup>a</sup> In Annot. ad lib. ii. c. 9. de Ver. Rel. Christ. p. 54.

<sup>2</sup> Vid. Diog. Laert. vii. 134.

**DISS.** for ever by turns happy and miserable. So that Justin  
II. Martyr<sup>b</sup>, in his dialogue with Trypho, said truly of all the philosophers, "that they knew nothing on this subject, and could not tell what the soul was." Fourthly, and lastly, those among the Gentiles who have said any thing concerning futurity, have restricted it to the soul only, never dreaming of the resurrection of the body. Hence we read that when St. Paul, at Athens, spoke of the resurrection of the body, the philosophers mocked him as if he taught a direct absurdity.

**Acts 17.18.** § 14. Secondly, the words of the text above quoted may be most strictly applied to the Jews themselves<sup>c</sup>; for Christ enlightened their understandings upon this doctrine in three different points: first, by the light of a decisive determination; for as among the Gentile philosophers some denied, and others asserted the immortality of the soul, so among the Jews many doubted this doctrine, of such vast importance to piety. The Pharisees affirmed it: the Sadducees denied it, admitting nothing but what was laid down in Scripture in express words, while the Pharisees on the other hand had no other means of proving their opinion, than by the authority of the *cabala*, or tradition. The Pharisees could indeed produce that passage from Daniel, and the Sadducees durst not reject his authority. Scaliger, I think, has clearly proved that it is quite erroneous to suppose that the Sadducees rejected all the Prophetic Books, except the Pentateuch, and has also shewn that this error arose from a misapprehension of the words of Josephus the historian. But this is only a single passage, and such as might be easily eluded under pretence of the luxuriance of the prophetic style, and might be understood of a release from the Babylonish captivity; it was therefore an argument scarcely sufficient to stop the mouth of an obstinate sophist. To the multitude, thus fluctuating between the opinions of contending sects, Christ, the chief of prophets, in express terms, and in the name of God, proclaimed the doctrine of the resurrection and a future world, and publicly declared it to all men as a thing indubitable, and certain.

Vid. Grot.  
in loc.

§ 15. Christ, secondly, added to this doctrine the light of

<sup>b</sup> P. 222. edit. Morell. Paris. 1636.

<sup>c</sup> Vid. Grot. in Matt. 5. 20.

a clear and plain explanation. For as to the nature of a future life, the masters of the Jews themselves were shamefully ignorant; of which Maimonides is a sufficient witness, who in his tenth chapter on the Sanhedrim thus speaks: "You will find that the opinions of those who study the law concerning the happiness to be obtained by him who performs the commandments of God given us by Moses, and the misery of those who transgress them, are very discordant, according to the difference of understandings. For there is much in this subject to confuse the mind, so that you will scarcely find one to whom the matter is clearly known, neither can you find one who hath treated largely upon it, who is not so confused." And what the learned Pocock hath said of the Rabbins who lived after Maimonides, is no less true of those who preceded him<sup>d</sup>; "That they generally allow of a kind of resurrection, but not two agree as to the manner of it." Of the fate of the impious they were entirely in the dark, as they are at this day; some thought that they would rise again, others that they would not. As to the happiness of the good, many thought it would be of long duration, but not eternal. Then they supposed that happiness to be of a gross earthly nature, arising from an abundance of corporal delights. For as now the Talmudists pretend they are to have banquets, in which they will feast on the behemoth, leviathan, and bariuchne, an ox, a fish, and a bird<sup>e</sup>; so in the time of Christ the Jews supposed there would be a happy state hereafter, but exactly similar to our present life. Hence Josephus, mentioning the opinion of the Essenes (the most spiritual sect among the Jews) concerning future happiness, uses almost the same words as the Greeks did when speaking of the Fortunate Islands. For he says<sup>f</sup>, "To the good were granted, beyond the ocean, habitations free from storms, and heat and cold; but where gentle zephyrs from the sea perpetually refresh the air." Whence arose the captious question of the Sadducees, proposed to Christ, concerning the woman who had married seven brothers successively, whose wife should she be at the resurrection. For the Sadducees, the opponents of the

<sup>d</sup> Not. Miscel. cap. 6. p. 87, 88.

c. 36. p. 535.

<sup>e</sup> See Buxtorf, who severely satirizes the Jews for this fable. Syneg. Judaic.

<sup>f</sup> Aλως. II. 12. De Bel. Jud. ii. 8. vol. ii. p. 165. edit. 1726.

DISS. IL Pharisees, supposed that Christ taught the resurrection from the same principles as the Pharisees did; but these, among other corporal pleasures, supposed that conjugal love would remain to us in a future state. These gross and dark ideas Christ illuminated by heavenly light, teaching openly the punishment of the wicked, and declaring that the rewards of the pious were not only lasting, but eternal; and not of every kind, but such as were consistent with the company of angels and the beatific vision and fruition of God Himself.

§ 16. Our Saviour, thirdly and lastly, gave to His doctrine what was of the greatest consequence, the light of firm and sufficient testimony, by enforcing its belief on men by many and great miracles, of which the chief was, that He openly recalled the dead to life, and after His own death shewed Himself alive again to many. After which, nothing more to confirm this point could be reasonably expected. For it was

Acts 17.31. now certain, as the Apostle argues, that "God hath appointed a day in the which He will judge the world in righteousness, by that Man whom He hath ordained, whereof He hath given assurance unto all men, in that He hath raised Him from the dead."

§ 17. In the fourth and last place, it may perhaps be asked, why the Jews, who had conceived the hope of a future life from the law, could not arrive at true righteousness by the law? I answer, that on account of the extreme uncertainty, and confused idea they had of that hope, the Jews sought in the external righteousness of the law, to which however it was never promised, this eternal life. Hence it happened that they were never led by this hope to piety, true and worthy of God, thinking they could obtain that future happiness by the outward righteousness of the law. This dangerous error of the

John 5. 39. Jews, Christ Himself remarks; "Search the Scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life, and they are they which testify of Me." By 'the Scriptures,' though we may understand all the Books of the Old Testament, yet the law and writings of Moses seem to be peculiarly intended, as we may gather from the forty-fifth and forty-sixth versess<sup>g</sup>. The sense then is, You attribute to the Mosaic law more than is right: for you think eternal life to be promised to the observers of its

<sup>g</sup> Vid. Grot. in locum, and also Maldonatus.

precepts; and that this life is immediately contained in these books; but if you not only read over these Scriptures, but —————  
attentively consider them, (for that is the meaning of ‘search’) CHAP.  
you would soon perceive that they directed you to Me as the X.  
Fountain and Giver of this life, and to that spiritual righteousness  
which I teach as the only means of obtaining it.—But  
great indeed was the perverseness of the Jews, who, although  
they acknowledged in the promises of Moses, a mystery, still  
obstinately adhered to the letter of the precepts, when they  
might have easily seen that between the letter of the promise  
and the letter of the precept, and on the other hand between  
the spirit of the promise, and of the precept, a certain connec-  
tion was entirely necessary.—And thus far of the want in  
the Mosaic law, of that external aiding grace, namely, the  
promise of eternal life.

## CHAP. XI.

THE OTHER WEAKNESS OF THE MOSAIC LAW,—THAT IT HAD NOT THE GIFT  
OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.—SOME PASSAGES PROVING THIS EXPLAINED.—  
TWO QUESTIONS ARISING FROM THIS SUBJECT ANSWERED.—IT IS SHEWN  
THAT THE APOSTLE DEFENDS JUSTIFICATION BY THE GOSPEL, IN  
OPPOSITION TO THAT OF THE LAW, BY A “DEMONSTRATIVE” ARGUMENT  
TAKEN FROM THE EVIDENT GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, WHICH IN THE  
EARLY CHURCH EVERYWHERE FOLLOWED A BELIEF IN THE GOSPEL.  
HENCE LIGHT IS THROWN ON THAT COMMON OBSERVATION OF GROTIUS,  
THAT IN THE NEW TESTAMENT THE HOLY SPIRIT IS PUT AFTER FAITH.

§ 1. It now remains for us to point out that other want of aiding grace in the law, namely, internal assistance, that is, the gift of the Holy Spirit. It was surely impossible that men should be led to spiritual righteousness by that law which neither promised nor gave them any aid of the Spirit. For without the divine power and efficacy of the Holy Spirit, no man can be freed from his lusts, or delivered from the tyranny of sin, far less be excited with any constant cheerfulness to those truly heroic actions which are in some degrees suitable to so great a reward as eternal life.

§ 2. In very many passages the Apostle speaks of this great defect of the Mosaic covenant. In this sense, for example, he calls the ministry of the law the “ministry of 2 Cor. 3. 6.

**DISS.** the letter;" because its ministry was entirely external, not

**II.** — only made up of external and carnal precepts, but entirely without any internal energy and efficacy. In this sense he more fully explains himself, where he says again of the ver. 7. law, that it was "the ministration of death written and engraven in stones." The law is said to be a ministry engraved on stone, both because its precepts are, generally speaking, external, and particularly because its views are external only, unaccompanied with any force of the Spirit, which might convey them to the heart. On the other hand, he bestows on the Gospel the praise of being "the ministration of the Spirit," because its precepts are in themselves spiritual, and particularly because they are impressed upon the hearts of men by the efficacy and power of the Holy Spirit.

ver. 6. For that the Apostle, when he calls the Gospel the ministration of the Spirit, not only has in view the nature and disposition of the Gospel doctrines, as many think, but also this power of the Holy Spirit continually accompanying it, is very clear from the third verse of the chapter just quoted, where the Apostle says of the Gospel received through faith by the Corinthians under his ministry,

**2 Cor. 3. 3.** that it was "the epistle of Christ, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart:" which last words evidently allude to the difference between the ministration of the law and the Gospel, as depending upon this one particular, that the first was external only, and consigned to written tablets; but that the latter was given internally, and was written on the hearts of men by the Spirit of the living God. In this sense undoubtedly must the Apostle be understood in his

**chap. 8. 2.** Epistle to the Romans, where after having described the law much at large in the preceding chapter, he says of the Gospel as opposed to it, that it was "the law of the Spirit of life" (or life-giving) "in Christ Jesus." For here "the Spirit of life" does not regard the nature of the Gospel law as consisting of spiritual precepts, and penetrating to the heart of man, as some imagine, because that Spirit is not said to be in the law of the Gospel, but in Christ Jesus, the head, and flowing from Him into the Church His body. And the law of the Spirit is called the Gospel, both because it is promised

in the Gospel, and is also inseparably connected with it. Besides, it must be allowed that we are freed from the law of sin and of death, not by the mere doctrine of the Gospel, unless we adopt the Pelagian heresy, but by the Spirit of Christ Himself. Besides, if this interpretation be admitted, the law of Moses, so far as it contains moral precepts, may as well as the Gospel be styled the ministry and law of the Spirit, the Apostle witnessing in his Epistle to the Romans, Rom. 7.14. that it is in its own nature spiritual and teaches spiritual righteousness. Upon these things, the passage in his Epistle to the Galatians throws the strongest light; where to "the curse of the law," of which mention had been made in the preceding verse, the Apostle opposes "the blessing of Abraham," and that blessing he explains by the "promise of the Spirit," or the promised Spirit. Therefore the promise of the Holy Spirit is that great privilege of the Gospel covenant, in which its 'excellence' above the law, and chief value consists. As a finishing proof I will add the testimony of St. John: "The law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ." Where by the way, as Grotius observes, the Apostle overturns that opinion of Ebion, who preferred Moses to Christ, and which even in those days of the Church, was too well known. 'Truth' is opposed to the shadows of the law, and 'grace' is that full effusion of the Holy Spirit on Christians utterly unknown under the old law. Drusius, who explains grace (*χάρις*) not by *γένη* but by *γενεσίς* 'kindness' or 'gratuitous favour of God,' is refuted by the words of the fourteenth and fifteenth verses, which speak plainly of that grace with which Christ is full, and which out of His fulness flows in different channels to us.

§ 3. Here we find two questions which require an answer. The first is this: In the law of Moses is there no promise of the Holy Spirit? To which I answer, that it is manifest that the law, if by that word you mean only the covenant given on Mount Sinai through the mediation of Moses to the people of Israel, which as I have before observed, is the most proper and strict acceptation of it in the Epistles of St. Paul, does not contain any promise of the Holy Spirit. If, I say, by it you mean the covenant made at Sinai; for in the Holy Scriptures which go under the general name of the Old

C H A P.  
XI

- DISS.** Testament we may in various places read of the Holy Spirit being promised, and of its being obtained by the prayers of men. Even in the Mosaic writings, although not in the covenant itself, there may be found, I think, a promise sufficiently clear, of the Holy Spirit being given to the
- Deut. 30.6.** Israelites. Of this kind undoubtedly is the following: "The Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart." Now it is allowed by all except those who agree with Pelagius, that such a circumcision of the heart as will induce men to love God with all their hearts, can only be effected by the great power and might of the Holy Spirit. But this belongs to the righteousness of the Gospel, which Moses first, and the other Prophets afterwards, pointed out as concealed under the veil of outward rites and ceremonies. For the righteousness of faith which 'was made manifest' under the Gospel
- Rom. 3.21.** was 'witnessed by the law and the prophets,' as the Apostle expressly affirms. But I have said that this promise of the Holy Spirit is plainly not to be found in the Mosaic covenant: I will farther add, that it was part of the New Testament preached by Moses himself. For the covenant entered into with the Jews, in which the above words are
- Deut. 29. &c.** found, is evidently not the same with that made at Sinai, and therefore contained a renewal of the covenant entered into with Abraham, that is, of the Gospel covenant, then darkly revealed, as may be proved by many arguments. In the first place it is expressly said, that the following words
- Deut. 29.1.** are "the words of the covenant which the Lord commanded Moses to make with the children of Israel, beside the covenant which he made with them in Horeb." Those who think this to have been only a renewal of the covenant made at Horeb, contradict the text in the most direct terms. For the repetition and renewal of the covenant made in Sinai, can in no sense be called the words of a covenant besides that which God had made at Sinai. Secondly, it is expressly said, that this covenant was entirely the same with that which God confirmed by an oath to the fathers of the Israelites,
- See ver. 12, 13.** Abraham, Isaac and Jacob; which was the Gospel covenant itself, darkly revealed indeed, as the Apostle shews. In the
- Gal. 3. 16, 17.** third place, St. Paul cites some words of this covenant as of

the Gospel covenant, which evidently claim to themselves the CHAP.  
righteousness of faith : I know some think that these words XI.  
of Moses are accommodated by the Apostle to the righteousness Rom. 10.  
of faith by way of allusion only : but they deserve no 6.  
attention, for the Apostle produces these expressions as the Deut. 30.  
very words of the righteousness of faith, that is, of the 11, &c.  
Gospel covenant, in which that righteousness is revealed. And to speak the truth, I have always thought that these allusions, to which some betake themselves as the sure refuge of their ignorance, is in general nothing but a manifest abuse of the Holy Scripture. But it is not necessary, in this place at least, to use such an evasion. For, fourthly, every thing in that covenant wonderfully agrees with the Gospel ; first, as to the precepts themselves, those only are here commanded which tend to good morals, and are good in themselves, not a word being said of those rites, which if literally considered seem to be puerile, and with which the legal covenant is almost filled. Besides, all the obedience here required is Deut. 30.  
referred to a sincere and diligent endeavour to obey God in 10, 16, 20.  
all things. In the next place, with respect to the promise, chap. 30.  
God doth here again promise a full remission of all sins, 1—4.  
even the most heinous, after actual repentance, which grace is not to be found in the legal covenant, as we have already shewn at large. The grace of the Holy Spirit is the next promise by which men's hearts are circumcised that they may love the Lord with all their heart, and with all their mind. chap. 30. 6.  
How far different is this from the usual style of the Mosaic writings ! Fifthly, That the covenant mentioned by the prophet Jeremiah is the Gospel covenant, no Christian hath yet Jer. 31. 31.  
denied, since the divine author of the Epistle to the Hebrews Heb. 8. 8.  
hath expressly taught it. Now what the prophet hath said concerning that covenant exactly agrees with this made in Moab. The prophet Jeremiah calls his covenant a new covenant, altogether different from that which God made with the ancestors of the Israelites as they came out of Egypt, and Moses says the same of the Moabitish covenant. The prophet Jeremiah gives the reason why God granted a new covenant, intending to abolish that of Sinai ; namely, because the Israelites, destitute of grace sufficiently powerful, had rendered void that of Sinai by disobeying its precepts. ver. 32.

D I S S. Moses too alleges precisely the same cause. "The Lord,"  
 II.  
Deut. 29.4. says he, "had not given you a heart to perceive, and eyes  
 to see, and ears to hear unto this day." Which is, God  
 made a former covenant with you, in which He made known  
 His will to you by precepts which were enforced in a most  
 extraordinary manner by means of promises and threaten-  
 ings, and every sort of miracle: but He saw that covenant  
 profited you little: He saw that you stood in need of a  
 more efficacious grace, by which your hearts might be cir-  
 cumcised; and therefore He intends a new covenant, in  
 which that grace is promised to you. This same circum-  
 cision of the heart is undoubtedly intended by the prophet in  
Jer. 31. 33. the following passage; "I will put my law in their inward  
 parts, and write it in their hearts;" and in the next verse  
 he clearly mentions that remission of sins which is promised  
Jer. 31. 34. by Moses in the book of Deuteronomy. "I will forgive their  
 iniquities, and their sin I will remember no more." Lastly,  
 the prophet Jeremiah shews the plainness, and therefore the  
 easiness, of the precepts contained in the new covenant, so  
 that the people of God would not be under the necessity of a  
 laborious enquiry, or burdensome discipline, to know and  
 fulfil them. Moses manifestly means the same, if you care-  
 fully compare his words with what the Apostle says upon this  
 ver. 34.  
Deut. 30.  
11.  
Rom. 10.  
6.  
 passage. To me, at least, all this seems very evident.  
 Sixthly, and lastly, To place this point beyond the reach of  
 controversy, the Hebrew doctors themselves think all these  
 things, which are contained in the book of Deuteronomy the  
 twenty-ninth and the following chapters, must be referred to  
 the times of the Messiah. To prove this I shall produce  
 what P. Fagius, who deserves great attention, hath said on  
 the thirtieth chapter of the book of Deuteronomy, the second  
 verse. "It must be carefully observed, that in the opinion  
 of the Hebrews this chapter refers to the reign of Christ.  
 Hence also Bachai says, that in this passage is a promise  
 that under the Messiah the King, all who are under the cove-  
 nant should be circumcised in their hearts, citing the book  
Joel 2. 28. of the prophet Joel." And Grotius on the sixth verse of the  
 same chapter, agrees with this idea of Fagius.—On this sub-  
 ject we have dwelt the longer, that even hence it might  
 appear that all things in the Mosaic writings do not all be-



long to the Mosaic covenant, and therefore the distinction of C H A P. Augustine's, already frequently quoted, is not only true, but XI. very necessary. For he restricts the law, speaking accurately, to the covenant made on Mount Sinai only; and thence shews the most excellent and wise dispensations of God, which it seemed good to Him to use in granting the covenant of His grace. God had given the covenant of grace to Abraham many years before the law, to which He was pleased afterwards to add another covenant, filled with many ceremonies and rites difficult to perform, by which He might retain in their duty the ignorant and carnal posterity of Abraham, who had been just brought out from Egypt, and were too much addicted there to pagan rites and superstitions. In other words, that he might cure them of their propensity to idolatry; which Tertullian<sup>h</sup> well expresses in these words: "Let no man find fault with the burden of sacrifices, and the troublesome niceties of rites and ceremonies, as if God demanded these things on His own account, since He expressly says, 'To what purpose are the multitude of your sacrifices unto Me?' and 'who hath required this at your hands?' But in them let him recognise the design of God, who was pleased to bind a people prone to idolatry and transgression, to such duties of their own religion as the superstition of those days required, that He might wean them from idolatry; commanding those rites to be performed to Himself as if He delighted in them, that they might not offend by sacrificing to images." But the all-wise God, fore-  
Comp. Gal. 3. 19.  
seeing that this stiff-necked people would not comprehend His design, after the carnal law was given, commanded Moses to make a new covenant with the Israelites, or rather to renew the former one long ago entered into with Abraham which required spiritual righteousness, and was full of grace and mercy, that hence the Jews might learn, that the covenant of Abraham was still in force even after the ritual law was given, and therefore must be still regarded as that covenant upon which alone their salvation depended. Who does  
Comp. Gal. 3. 17.  
not here exclaim with the Apostle, "O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God!" Yet this  
Rom. 11. 33.  
by the way, although not in vain. To proceed.—

<sup>h</sup> Tertullian adv. Marcion 2. (11. 18. p. 391.)

**DISS.** **II.** § 4. Hence too the other question may be answered, Whether the Holy Spirit was given in the times of the Old Testament? Undoubtedly it was, for otherwise there could not have been so many pious and holy men under the Mosaic law. But, first, The Spirit was indeed first given under the law, but not by, or through the law, since this grace was mutually given and received as derived from the grace of the Gospel. Hence the promise of the Spirit is said by St. Paul in the passage already noticed, to be “the blessing of Abraham.” Because that great blessing arose from the promise made to Abraham, and not from the Mosaic covenant, that is, from the Gospel, and not from the law.

Gal. 3. 14. § 5. 2ndly, Although God indeed bestowed His Holy Spirit on those who asked for it under the Old Testament, as well as under the New, still there was a great difference made; for in the times of the Old Testament, God gave the grace of His Holy Spirit in small and moderate portions: under the Gospel, abundantly and bountifully. Hence in the times of the John 3. 34. New Testament, God is said to give the Spirit not by measure but to pour it out first upon Christ the Head, and then upon Tit. 3. 6. the Church His body: for now has “He shed on us abundantly” the Spirit. Consult also that remarkable passage, John 7. 38, Acts 2. 17. where those who live under the Gospel are said to receive John 1. 16. “of the fulness of Christ (*χάριν ἀντὶ χάριτος*) grace for grace,” that is, ‘abundant grace,’ or ‘grace heaped upon grace.’ For so I think the words should be interpreted, as here ‘grace for grace’ is clearly the same as what the son of Sirach says, Ecclus. 26. “A shamefaced and faithful woman is a double grace;” that 15. is, modesty in a wife is a great grace of God; but if fidelity be also added, such a wife is an accumulated grace, since to her ‘modesty, a treasure of itself sufficiently great, fidelity also, an uncommon virtue among women, is added.

Beza indeed says that he has never found this particle (*ἀντὶ*) used thus by any good author. Fortunately, however, Davenant<sup>1</sup> informs us that his learned friend Dunæus has remarked this use of the preposition in the following verses of Theognis—

<sup>1</sup> De Just. Actuali, c. 61. p. 616.

Τεθναίμην δὲ εἰ μή τι κακῶν ἀμπανμα μεριμνῶν  
'Ευροίμν, δοίς τ' ἀντ' ἀνιῶν ἀνίας.

CHAP.  
XI.

I shall die if I cannot find some rest from cares,  
And if you give me pain upon pain.

§ 6. Here perhaps some may object, that under the law there were certain men blessed with such gifts of the Spirit as are bestowed on very few or none in the Christian Church, such as Moses himself, David, and all the Prophets. In answer to this it may be observed, 1st. That the number of these is very small indeed; and our present question is not how God acted to a few, but what was His general dispensation to the whole people of the Jews. 2ndly, For these few under the law, how many have lived under the Gospel, not only equal to them, but even superior, in all the gifts of the Spirit, and in an excellent holiness of life? the Apostles for example, and most of the Christians of the primitive times. 3rdly, To none of these was the Holy Spirit so bountifully given, but that they still in some degree laboured under the darkness of the age, and its state of childhood. Hence the first among the prophets of the Old Testament are reckoned by Christ Himself as inferior to the least in the kingdom of heaven, undoubtedly Matt. 11. that is in the fulness and perspicuity of the revelation and knowledge of man's redemption: for this before St. John was a mystery. In his time light began to dawn upon it, and after the death and resurrection of Christ, after the day of Pentecost, it shone forth with mid-day brightness.

Comp.  
Matt. 13.  
17, with  
1 Pet. 1.  
10—12.

§ 7. Thirdly, (That the most complete satisfaction may be given to the proposed enquiry, so far as it regards the reasoning of the Apostle,) although the Holy Spirit was formerly given in and under the law, yet after the appearance of the Gospel it was no longer obtained by the followers of the law, but was their privilege, who having left the law believed in the Gospel. The most holy dove forsook the ark of Moses, and fixed its habitation in the Church of Christ. The spirit left the letter, as the soul the body, and the law became truly a dead letter. A sufficient proof of which were the conspicuous gifts of the Holy Spirit transferred from the Synagogue to the Church, when on the day of Pentecost, not a tempest of thunder and lightning and horror, as when formerly on this very day the old law was given from Mount

DISS. Sinai, but the mighty power of the Holy Spirit descended from heaven, and appearing in the form of fiery tongues, settled on the Apostles; and soon after the same miraculous gifts were generally and abundantly poured out upon the whole congregation of Christians; while with the professors Rom. 11. 8. of the law, "the spirit of slumber" alone remained, a spirit truly worthy of those who, when the substance itself was offered them, pined after the shadow.

§ 8. Thus on a sudden we come upon that very subject which was left to be noticed last, that the Apostle always endeavours to establish his doctrine of justification by faith, without the works of the Mosaic law, by those conspicuous and miraculous gifts of the Spirit, which ever followed faith in the Gospel. This argument St. Paul plainly uses in addressing the Gal. 3. 2. Galatians, with this question: "This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?" It appears from the fifth verse, that Gal. 3. 5. the Apostle here speaks of the spirit of miracles. "He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?" As if he had said, Only answer this one question, and it alone will be sufficient to convince you: Did you receive those excellent gifts of the Spirit, which you possess, from circumcision and the other works of the law, or from the hearing of faith? But if from faith in Christ, which you will not dare deny, you obtained all these blessings, to say nothing of your ingratitude, how great must be your madness to revolt from the Gospel proved by an argument so evident and striking to the senses? Hence, when at the council of Jerusalem, that great question was debated among the Apostles, whether circumcision and the other rites of the Mosaic law should be imposed on the Gentiles who had been converted to Christ, Peter, the chief of the Apostles, proved the negative part of this question by this single argument: That to Cornelius, and to those with him, who were the first fruits of the Gentiles and had been converted to the Gospel by him, the gifts of the Holy Spirit were given by God. By Acts 15. 8. this act, said St. Peter, "God which knoweth the heart, bare them witness," (because they pleased Him, without circumcision,) "giving them the Holy Ghost, even as He did unto

us," who have been circumcised, and observe the law of C H A P. Moses. That the Spirit of miraculous gifts was that testimony, appears from the event. Hence those, to whom among the Gentiles, after faith in the Gospel this Spirit was given, are said to be "sealed," and to have received, as it were, a pledge from God of that grace for the present, and glory in future. For that in these passages, as well as in many others, by the 'Holy Spirit' is meant these conspicuous gifts of the Spirit, is evident from this, that the Apostle plainly means that Spirit, and as it were points at it, producing it as a testimony sufficiently convincing to those unto whom he writes, and to all others who would be satisfied of the truth of the Gospel ; so that what the Apostle hath said concerning circumcision, may not improperly be applied to the Spirit given to the Gentiles : that "it was the seal of the righteousness of faith, which they had yet being uncircumcised."

§ 9. But these things, by the way, throw light upon the observation which so wonderfully pleased the learned Grotius, that he seized every opportunity of producing it, that in the New Testament the Holy Spirit is most frequently placed after faith. For this is true, if said of that copious effusion of gifts which was peculiar to the primitive Church, or even of that greater measure of the Spirit, which by and after faith, perfected by love, believers even now receive. In the mean time it is certain, that a special operation of the Divine Spirit always precedes real faith, neither do I think that great man intended otherwise, although in some passages his words seem very ill chosen.

## CHAP. XII.

TWO DEDUCTIONS FROM WHAT HAS BEEN SAID IN THE THREE FOREGOING CHAPTERS CONCERNING THE WEAKNESS OF THE LAW.—THE FIRST OF WHICH IS, THAT THE APOSTLE ENTIRELY EXCLUDES FROM JUSTIFICATION ONLY THOSE WORKS WHICH ARE PERFORMED BY THE AID OF THE MOSAIC, AND (CONSEQUENTLY) OF THE NATURAL LAW, WITHOUT THE GRACE OF THE GOSPEL.—THIS PROVED BY A THREEFOLD ARGUMENT FROM THE VERY EPISTLES OF ST. PAUL.—THREE ARGUMENTS OF PARÆUS TO THE CONTRARY, SO ANSWERED AS TO THROW STILL STRONGER LIGHT UPON THE ABOVE DEDUCTIONS.

DISS. II. § 1. If to any one we have seemed too prolix, in explaining the Apostle's argument taken from the weakness of the law, I beg he will consider how much what has been observed conduces to the better understanding of St. Paul, and to the more firmly establishing the doctrine of St. James concerning justification by works, both of whom I shall now endeavour to make him rightly comprehend.

§ 2. With respect to the first, whoever thoroughly understands what we have advanced, will easily perceive that the works which St. Paul wholly excludes from justification, are only those which are performed without the grace of the Gospel, by the aid of the natural, or Mosaic law: (for whatever St. Paul urges against the Mosaic law, as we have elsewhere observed, has a still greater force against the law of nature:) this then is a necessary conclusion from what has been said; for since St. Paul chiefly employs this argument against justification by the law either of Moses or of nature, because both these laws are entirely destitute of the means whereby men may be induced to true righteousness worthy of God, and agreeable to Him, it hence manifestly follows, that by Him, only that righteousness, and those works, are excluded from justification, which are produced by human weakness under the law, or in a state of nature.

§ 3. But this point may be clearly proved by other reasons deduced from St. Paul himself. And first, it seems to me to be no light or trifling argument in support of this opinion,

that the Apostle, disputing against the righteousness of works, simply calls them *works*, adding no epithet but that 'of the law,' but never (as far as I am aware) excludes 'good' works from justification. By which he sufficiently informs us, that he rejects those works only which are produced by human powers and strength, and are destitute of all goodness supernatural. I allow that he sometimes says, 'works of righteousness,' but then he instantly explains himself by adding, "which we have done ourselves;" that is, by our own strength. Of this passage, however, we shall soon treat more fully. Hence the works which the Apostle excludes from salvation are called simply 'works,' whilst those which he admits to be necessary to salvation, and for the performance of which he affirms we are prepared, and as it were, created by the grace of Christ, these he calls "good works." Eph. 2. 9.  
ver. 10.

§ 4. Secondly, this is manifest from the whole course of the Apostle's reasoning, that he rejects works of that nature only, which, being admitted, would seem to afford men cause for boasting before God. Who does not perceive that this can only be said of those works which we do by our own powers without the assistance of grace? For whatever works a man performs, induced thereto by the prevention of divine grace, and aided in the performance of them by its continued presence, are to be ascribed to Almighty God; and all their glory must evidently be attributed to Him, as their chief and principal author. Those good works which we perform, are not so much ours, as those of God within us. But no man can properly boast before God of that which is owing to God. But, says Paræus<sup>k</sup>, these works of grace are at the same time supposed to proceed from the virtue of free will, and so in some measure are owing to it: to which we reply; That our good works are performed by the grace of God leading us to them, and by free will accompanying us, is no fiction of ours, but the truth itself, which may be proved from innumerable passages of Holy Scripture, which right reason itself dictates; and lastly, which is acknowledged by the unanimous consent of all the writers of the three first and best ages of the Church. Neither does this free will prevent our righteousness, and its consequent salvation, from being

<sup>k</sup> In solut. dub. 6. c. 3. ad Rom. p. 221.

**DISS. II.** attributed to God, as the chief, and indeed only author; since before, and without divine grace, it has not in itself, or of itself, the least particle of goodness, so far as to be really good, and to tend to salvation. Whatever good the will is capable of is entirely owing to grace, of whatever evil<sup>1</sup> to itself. So far from our works being made good without this liberty of the will, they can no more become good, or be made the conditions of a reward, than the actions of brutes or the motions of inanimate bodies. But that this freedom of the will being allowed, does not diminish the glory of divine grace, since whatever good works we do must be referred to God as their author, may, I think, be proved by an invincible argument from the very confession of our opponents.

§ 5. For although they suppose that the first conversion of man to God is caused by the irresistible influence of grace, yet they unanimously allow, that in subsequent good actions, in some at least, there is a liberty of the will of such a nature, as to leave the regenerated to do well or not, at his own option, and that often he does not do well when he might. The following, in particular, are the express words of our theologians in their judgment set forth at the synod of Dort.

**Thes. 3.** For there on the third and fourth articles concerning conversion, by which is meant the act of a man turning himself to God, they speak thus: "God does not always so move a converted and faithful man to subsequent good works, as to take away the wish of resisting; but sometimes permits him, by his own fault, to fall from the guidance of grace, and in many particular acts to obey his own lusts." And in explanation of the same thesis, they add: "Through the whole course of our lives, the motions and guidance of the Holy Spirit are ever present with us: still we may be negligent of grace, often indeed actually are so, freely and basely obeying our own lusts<sup>1</sup>." Lastly, they condemn as heterodox, (and certainly the doctrine is a most damnable one,) "that a man cannot perform more good than he does, nor avoid more sin than he avoids."

**Thes. 4.** And in explanation, they contend that this opinion is equally false, whether it is understood of a regenerate or an unregenerate man. On these grounds, then, I

<sup>1</sup> Which they prove from Gal. 5. 17; Eph. 4. 30. Vid. Act. Syn. Dord. part II. p. 133.

would ask, whether those subsequent good works, which are CIIAP.  
so freely performed by a regenerate man, afford him cause XII.  
for boasting, or do they not rather redound to the honour  
and glory of God, the author of them? I have no doubt but  
that our adversaries would instantly consent to the latter sup-  
position, opposing the other with all their might. They  
must therefore necessarily allow, that the union of free will  
with divine grace in good works, does not prevent them from  
being wholly ascribed to the honour of God, neither do they  
give the man himself any cause for glorying in them. Neither  
do we hold any other union of free will in any good work,  
than our adversaries themselves allow in many good works.—  
This however by the way: To proceed.

§ 6. Thirdly, that this, in short, is the intention of St. Paul (to reject those works only, which are done without the grace of the Gospel) will readily appear to any man who gives the subject due attention, even from those passages which seem to exclude all works entirely. Let us turn to them, and first to that famous text, which is thought by many to afford an invincible argument against justification by works, and is therefore the principal support of their reasonings. The Apostle Phil. 3. 8. had said that he should count all other things for lost provided he might win Christ; he then adds, "And be found in him not ver. 9. having mine own righteousness which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith." What righteousness the Apostle here rejects will be clear to every one who without prejudice attends to his words; and on the other hand, what kind of righteousness he seeks will be equally apparent. As to the first, he calls it 'his own righteousness,' produced by his own powers, for he would not venture to call that righteousness which the grace of Christ had effected in him his own, but rather, with gratitude, would refer it to Christ, the author of it. Next, lest any should mistake, he calls it 'the righteousness of the law,' such as may be performed by the law with human means, and without the grace of the Gospel. Lastly, this righteousness of the law he had explained distinctly and separately in the foregoing verses, and the sum is this, that he had the advantage of no few carnal privileges attached to the law; that he had accurately observed all its rites; that he was entirely free

**DISS.** from those greater crimes to which the law had annexed punishment; and that he did not hesitate to say, that according to the judgment of the law he was entirely "blameless." Now, in the second place, the righteousness which the Apostle desires is no less evident, 'that righteousness which God works in us by the faith of Christ, and moreover approves as His own work.' Here Estius hath well remarked, "That he does not call the righteousness which is 'in us,' our righteousness, but that which is 'of us,' so also the righteousness of God, which is 'from God,' not that which is 'in God,' and by which God is righteous." For neither in the text is it the 'righteousness δικαιοσύνη Θεοῦ' (though if it were, the genitive case would signify the Θεοῦ). Rom. 10. 3. efficient cause, as Romans chapter the tenth, third verse) but ἡ ἐκ Θεοῦ 'the righteousness which is of' (or from) 'God.' However δικαιοσύνη. this may be, St. Paul in the following verse explains the righteousness ver. 10. which is from God by faith. "That I may know Him, (that is, Christ,) and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made conformable unto His death." Here that common rule among theologians will hold good, that in Scripture words denoting 'knowledge,' generally signify also the consequences of such knowledge. Therefore, to know Christ, His death and resurrection, is to experience in one's self the influence of Christ's death and resurrection in such manner, as that we ourselves die to sin, and rise again to newness of life. And this knowledge, beyond Phil. 3. 8. all doubt, is that "excellency of the knowledge of Christ," which he so greatly longs for. Certainly the Apostle could not, in my opinion, more openly express his ideas of each kind of righteousness, that of the law, and that of the Gospel.

See Rom. 6.  
Tit. 3. 5,6. § 7. I now come to the passage which I just noticed above: "Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost, which He shed on us abundantly," &c. If you ask what works doth the Apostle here exclude from justification and salvation, the Apostle clearly answers those which *we, ourselves* have done; *we* is here emphatic, and means, by our own powers. Then to works of this kind, proceeding from human powers, he opposes that grace of God, which entirely through His mercy for Christ's sake, is abundantly poured out upon us, by which we

are regenerated, and renewed, and by which alone we are CHAP.  
rendered capable of works truly good; and what he takes XII.  
from the former, he gives to these latter works, affirming that  
we are saved by the one and not by the other. For when St.  
Paul says we are saved "by the renewing of the Holy Ghost,"  
he means all those virtues and good works which flow from  
a heart renewed by the Holy Spirit. Since the mere power,  
ability, or infused habit (as some call it) of any grace, as of  
faith, hope, or charity, can save no man; but the acts of  
each virtue, or the virtues themselves. But these words of the  
Apostle fully and perfectly describe the whole work of the  
salvation and justification of mankind. For here is laid down,  
first, the 'preceding' cause of salvation, namely the mercy of προηγου-  
God, which he calls "the kindness and love of God." μένη.  
Secondly, the 'fundamental' cause, through Jesus Christ, that προκα-  
is, Christ and His merits. Thirdly, the means, or condition  
of obtaining salvation, which is expressed, first negatively,  
'not by works which we have done' by our own powers; and  
secondly, affirmatively, 'by regeneration, and renewing of the  
Holy Ghost,' which we receive at our baptism. Moreover,  
from this text it is very evident that the Apostle does not  
reject from the work of salvation and justification, all inherent  
righteousness (since he expressly states that we are saved by  
that righteousness which is effected in us by the renewing of  
the Holy Spirit), but only that righteousness, which is so in-  
herent in us as to be 'of us,' that is, produced by our own  
powers. Hence also, we may readily conceive what the Apo-  
stle means when he says "that we are justified by the grace of ver. 7.  
God." Namely, that by the grace of the Holy Spirit alone,  
freely obtained of God for us by Christ, we are enabled to  
perform those things which by the Gospel covenant lead to  
justification and eternal salvation.

§ 8. Similar to this is the following passage; "For by grace Eph. 2.  
are ye saved through faith and that not of yourselves, it is the  
gift of God, not of works, lest any man should boast. For we  
are His workmanship," &c. By faith here, I understand  
obedience to the Gospel, of which, faith, specially so called, is  
not only the beginning, but the root also and foundation.  
Of which interpretation we have already given sufficient proofs,  
so that no one might think that we here beg the question.

**D I S S.** But the Apostle is very careful that no one should attribute  
II. this obedience to himself, and therefore adds, "and that (that  
 is, that you have believed) not of yourselves, it is the gift of  
 God." In what sense this is true, he afterwards distinctly ex-  
 plains; in the mean time he goes on, "Not of works, lest any  
 man should boast." Not of works which you have performed  
 by your strength without the grace of God; for so, and not  
 otherwise, you might seem to have some cause for boasting; so  
 that 'of works,' has here the same force as 'of yourselves.'  
 Lastly, he confirms and explains his words here quoted,  
 by what follows: "For we are His workmanship, created  
 in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before  
 ordained that we should walk in them." The Apostle, in  
 these words, joins himself with the Ephesians, speaking  
 in the first person, yet what he says refers to them in  
 particular. The sense, therefore, is this; So far are you  
 from being saved by your own powers without the grace of  
 God, that on the contrary, not without the most wonderful  
 power and efficacies of divine grace are ye created, as it were,  
 a second time by God, and from that rude mass, in which you  
 formerly lay buried in the darkness of ignorance and sin,  
 formed for this purpose, that you might be enabled to pro-  
 duce works truly good, by which you may arrive at justifi-  
 cation and eternal happiness. Therefore no grounds for  
 boasting are left to you, to you, I say at least, to whom hath  
 been imparted no common grace, but the 'exceeding riches  
 See ver. 7. of grace.' For although this argument of the Apostle  
 applies to all justified persons, yet there is something in it, as  
 appears from the context, which particularly refers to the  
 Ephesians, who had formerly been Gentiles, and whose calling  
 from idolatry, and the infamous vices of paganism, was a  
 wonderful and extraordinary work of God.

**Rom. 9. 11.** § 9. To these passages may be added those in which St. Paul  
 opposes the gracious calling of God to works, where the election  
 of man to salvation is said to be "not of works, but of Him that  
 calleth." Here it is clear that the Apostle only rejects those  
 works which a man might do of his own accord, and not those  
 which he performs being led and excited by God graciously call-  
 ing him: for these would not be repugnant to the divine calling.

**See 2 Tim. 1. 9.** § 10. So also when the Apostle compares 'grace' and

'works' together, and affirms that the one destroys the other, C H A P. XII.  
it is most evident that those works only are intended by him, Rom. 11.  
which are done without grace; for surely the works of grace 6.  
do not destroy grace. Neither does it signify, if you say by  
grace, which is here opposed to works, is not meant the grace  
of God as to its consequences, but as to its cause, the free  
favour of God; for allowing this, it still remains true that the  
works of grace, or those which are performed by the grace of  
God working in us, cannot destroy that grace or favour of  
God, by which He embraces us, but most establish it. For that  
grace, by which works of this kind are performed, flows from  
the free favour of God, and for that very reason is called grace;  
neither can that be called grace which does not proceed from  
the free favour of God. So that we here strictly argue with  
St. Paul, If we are saved by the works of grace, then it is of  
grace, "otherwise grace would be no longer grace."

§ 11. From these passages I think it appears, that the Apostle, when he so often contends that we are justified and saved freely by grace, without works, and that all cause for boasting is excluded in this matter, rests his argument especially on this ground, namely, that whatever good is performed by us towards obtaining justification and eternal happiness, it all entirely flows from the grace of God, freely given us through Christ, and being received from Him, should be attributed to Him; and moreover, that it was his intention to exclude from the work of justification and salvation, those works only which proceed from the free will of man, unassisted by the grace of the Gospel; which was what we had to prove.

§ 12. These points, which are now, I think, clearly proved, Paræus earnestly opposes, insisting that this interpretation is a corrupt gloss of St. Paul's meaning, and that all works without exception, both those which are done by faith and the grace of the Gospel, as well as those performed without it, are equally excluded from the work of justification by the Apostle. His arguments<sup>m</sup>, excepting those in answer to Stapleton, and the Jesuits, with which we have nothing to do, are briefly these,

§ 13. Argument 1st. "The Apostle was under no necessity of denying justification to works bad, or not good, for that point was allowed by him. But all works performed without

<sup>m</sup> In Rom. 3. dub. 6. p. 220, 221.

**DISS. II.** grace, or faith, are bad, or not good : it is absurd therefore to suppose that the Apostle argues against works of that kind." This argument (with due deference to its author) is but an empty sophism ; for though all allow that no man can be justified by works bad, or not good, yet so far from its being allowed by those with whom St. Paul had to do, that works done without the grace of the Gospel were bad, or not good, it was the very matter in dispute between them. They stoutly denied it, he affirmed it, contending with much pains, that before, and without the grace of the Gospel, nothing can be performed by man which is truly good, or acceptable to God unto salvation.

**Rom. 4. 1.** § 14. Argument 2nd. "The works of Abraham and David were not performed without grace and faith, but these also are excluded from salvation. It is false, then, that works performed without grace or faith are the only ones excluded."—I answer ; There is no occasion to trouble ourselves about David, as the Apostle only quotes a passage from him to prove what he had before said concerning Abraham. With respect to Abraham, Paræus in his argument takes that for granted which is the matter in dispute between us, namely, that the Apostle speaks of him as he was after his divine call, and the revelation made to him. For if we suppose Abraham to be regarded by the Apostle as he was before the grace of his extraordinary call, then the whole of Paræus' argument clearly falls to the ground. That this latter state of the case is the true one, seems clearly to appear from the first verse of the above chapter, where the state of the whole controversy concerning Abraham in the following verses, as far at least as the ninth verse, is professedly laid down

**Rom. 4. 1.** in these words : " What shall we then say, that Abraham, our father as pertaining to the flesh, hath found ? " These words may be taken in two ways : first by placing the note of interrogation after *say*, so that, " What shall we then

See Rom. 6. 1; 7. 7,  
&c. say" is only the introduction to the question, what follows is the question itself introduced in this way : " What

shall we say then ? Shall we say that Abraham, our father as pertaining to the flesh hath found ? " That is 'hath Luke 1. 30 found grace,' or righteousness, which word had just gone before ; a tacit negation to the question being under-

stood, ‘by no means.’ Grotius adopts this method. Secondly, the words may be read in such a way that ‘what’ is joined to ‘found,’ and is referred to the question itself, as follows: “What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh hath found,” that is, ‘obtained.’ The answer to which must be understood ‘nothing, certainly!’ But this is not of such consequence as to cause much dispute, since in either way the sense is the same.

§ 15. It is of greater consequence to determine whether the words, ‘according to the flesh,’ belong to ‘hath found,’ or to ‘our father.’ Origen, Ambrose, and some ancient Latin MSS. which Erasmus hath followed, join them with ‘our father,’ but in my opinion very improperly. For first, this reading, as Erasmus himself allows, is contrary to most (I think he might say all) of the Greek copies. Then if you suppose a change of place in the words of the Greek, still the article is wanting. For it should be, as Erasmus observes, *τὸν πατέρα ἡμῶν τὸν κατὰ σάρκα*, “who is our father according to the flesh.” Lastly, what particularly makes against this opinion, if the text be so read, it will turn the words of the Apostle into a direct fallacy; for it makes him speak thus: ‘What then shall we say that our father according to the flesh, even Abraham, hath obtained from God?’ Nothing truly. Whereas he obtained many great blessings. It is necessary therefore to add this limitation, ‘according to the flesh,’ after ‘obtained,’ or ‘found.’ But whether will not party spirit drive men, otherwise learned? For Paræus, having mentioned the above interpretation, adds these words, “which I readily embrace in opposition to the sophists, lest they should pretend that justification is denied only to those works of Abraham which he did according to the flesh, that is, before his conversion and without faith.” But what is sophistry, if this be not? The words ‘according to the flesh,’ must be referred to ‘hath found,’ and not to ‘our father,’ and the question of the Apostle may be turned into this negative proposition; ‘our father Abraham obtained nothing of God, or found no favour with God, that is, was not justified, according to the flesh.’

§ 16. It only remains for us to enquire what the Apostle means by ‘according to the flesh.’ And here I think only

**DISS.** two interpretations can be given; either that 'according to the flesh' is the same as 'by circumcision and other carnal and external works,' which meaning many interpreters follow; or, secondly, that it signifies 'by the powers of nature without grace.' And then the sense of the negative proposition will be this: Abraham was not justified before God by any works produced by his own powers, and performed by his own free will, without divine grace. I readily adopt the latter interpretation for these reasons; first, because it is the most usual sense of the word 'flesh,' in the New Testament, which is frequently opposed to Spirit, grace, and divine revelation. Next,  
 See Matt. 16. 17.  
 Gal. 1. 16. because the question concerning circumcision seems to be expressly proposed by the Apostle, by a new enquiry in the ninth verse. Lastly, to this negative proposition, so understood, the arguments which the Apostle in the following verses uses to confirm it, are admirably adapted; and to convince the reader of this, we will briefly consider them.

**ver. 2.** § 17. His first argument is, "For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory, but not before God." These words contain the reason of the preceding denial, drawn from the effect which is denied; if Abraham be justified by works performed without grace, he would have some cause for glorying before God, as if he had performed that of himself, which in the judgment of God deserved a reward. But it is certain that Abraham, whatever praise he may deserve before men, hath no cause for glorying before God; therefore Abraham was not justified by works. For the words 'before God' must be understood with 'hath whereof to glory' in the major proposition; and, *vice versa*, 'hath whereof to glory' must be repeated with 'not before God' in the minor: since the argument is from the denial of the consequent to that of the antecedent. I know that some of the ancients form the Apostle's argument otherwise, as follows: If Abraham was justified by works, that is, by external works, he cannot glory before God, since external righteousness of this kind, however glorious it may be in the sight of men, is yet nothing in the sight of God; but Abraham had to glory before God, that is, was approved of by God Himself; therefore Abraham was not justified by works. I wonder those excellent interpreters, Estius and Grotius, have followed this exposition of the

Fathers; for although the conclusion be according to the CHAP.  
Apostle's meaning, yet the premises, as Paræus rightly notes, XII.  
by no means agree with the text; for in the text the first  
proposition is an affirmative. If he be justified by works he  
hath whereof to boast. But this the Fathers change into a  
negative; and their second proposition is affirmative, although  
in the text it be negative, 'but not before God.' Whoever  
should assert that the whole of the second verse belongs to  
the major proposition, would in truth make the Apostle's  
argument strangely elliptical, consisting of only one proposi-  
tion expressed neither in the minor nor the conclusion. Besides,  
St. Paul speaks evidently of the same glorying, which a little ch. 3. 27.  
before he had expressly asserted was excluded by the law of  
faith, and which therefore he could not attribute to Abraham,  
whom he always contends to be justified by the law of faith<sup>n</sup>.  
Toledo's distinction between the word *καύχημα*, which St.  
Paul here uses, and *καύχησις*, which he had used above,  
namely, that the latter means boasting or glorying, pro-  
perly so called, but that the former is the same as praise or  
approbation, is very trifling and altogether without foundation.  
It is true indeed, as Grotius observes, that there is a certain  
kind of boasting just and lawful, even before God; but it is See chap.  
equally certain that the Apostle was accustomed, whenever he 5. 2, 3, 11;  
spoke as here of justification, to reject all kind of glorying 1 Cor. 1.  
altogether. Besides, does not this interpretation make the 31; 2 Cor.  
Apostle exactly contradict himself? for it supposes him to 10. 17.  
argue thus: If Abraham was justified by works, that is, made  
or accounted just in the sight of God, (for it matters little  
which way the word *δικαιοῦσθαι* be interpreted,) then he de-  
served praise before men; but from God he obtained neither  
praise nor reward. Is not this just the same as if the Apo-  
stle had said, If Abraham was justified by works, he was not  
justified? To say, that 'to be justified,' here means 'to be  
accounted just by men,' is contrary to the whole context of  
the Apostle, in which the dispute is concerning the justifica-  
tion of man in the sight of God, as is evident beyond all  
proof; and besides, there will be in the words of the Apostle  
such an absurd tautology as the following: If Abraham by  
his works was approved before men, then he was only approved

<sup>n</sup> Vid. Toletus in Rom. ch. 4. annot. iii. Lugduni, 1603.

D I S S. before men, and not before God ; but what can be more absurd than such reasoning ?

§ 18. Here it must be observed, by the way, that ‘by works’ and ‘according to the flesh,’ have with the Apostle the same meaning as Beza and Piscator allow, and the rules of reasoning necessarily require. For the Apostle’s argument, as we have seen, is of this nature ; If Abraham be justified by works, he hath whereof to glory before God ; but Abraham hath nothing whereof he can glory before God : therefore he was not justified by works. The conclusion of this argument ought clearly to be the same as the proposition laid down in the first verse, to prove which it was drawn up, and this was, “that Abraham was not justified according to the flesh.” ‘According to the flesh,’ is therefore the same as ‘by works.’ Whence also it is proved, that works with St. Paul do not mean works produced by grace, since these can in no sense be said to be done, or be ‘according to the flesh.’

ver. 1. § 19. The Apostle proceeds with his argument, and this taken from the testimony of Scripture : “For what saith the Scripture ? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.” This passage is brought forward to prove either the proposition alleged in the first verse, that Abraham was not justified by works arising from his own powers, or the assumption of the preceding argument, that Abraham had nothing whereof he could glory, in the matter of justification, before God : and certainly it is excellently suited to either opinion.

ver. 2. § 20. It may be referred to prove the proposition advanced in the first verse thus : If Abraham had any good works of his own, and before the divine calling, by which he obtained justification, the Scripture would certainly have made mention of them, and would have attributed his justification to them. Yet this the Scripture hath not done, but, on the contrary, it shews that righteousness was imputed unto him only by, and after, his faith in the divine promises, first made to him entirely through grace. From which faith, moreover, proceeded whatever excellent works Abraham ever performed. Therefore he did not obtain righteousness ‘according to the flesh,’ that is, from any works performed before, and without faith : or thus ; The testimony of righteousness given to Abraham in the Scrip-

tures, is expressly attributed to his faith, and his obedience arising from it; therefore Abraham obtained no praise or reward for righteousness 'according to the flesh,' that is, for works done before, and without faith. For here it must be carefully observed, that the Apostle opposes the faith of Abraham, not to all his works, including those which arose from faith, (for these are reckoned in his faith, as the fruit in the seed:) but to those works only which he performed according to the flesh by his own strength, before grace was given him.

§ 21. But this passage of Scripture may be also referred to the proof of the assumption made in the second verse, namely, that Abraham had nothing of which he could glory in the matter of justification before God; and indeed to this it seems most properly to be referred, not only by the particle 'for,' which makes this verse contain the reason of the former, but also from what follows in the fourth and fifth verses, where the Apostle concludes from the above quotation, that the reward imputed to Abraham was not of debt, as is due to those who work, but of mere grace; and consequently that Abraham had nothing of which he could glory in the matter of justification before God.

§ 22. But how, you will say, does the Apostle gather this from these words of Scripture? I answer, Some think that the force of the argument lies in the word ἐλογίσθη, 'was imputed.' as if, with the Apostle, 'to impute,' was the same as λογίζεσθαι κατὰ χάριν. 'to impute according to grace,' and would signify a gracious acceptance, and never, or only improperly, a retribution of righteousness. Wherefore Erasmus interprets 'to impute,' by 'acknowledges accepted,' adding, "that *acceptum ferre* is to account for accepted that which you have not yet received; which, if I mistake not, is termed by lawyers *acceptilatio*." And many very learned interpreters follow this opinion of Erasmus, forming the Apostle's argument thus: If reward was bestowed on Abraham as a debt, the Scripture would not say that God 'imputed righteousness' to him, since 'imputation' denotes a free gift. But the Scripture says, God imputed righteousness to Abraham; therefore the reward was not of debt. But this interpretation does not please me, since it appears from Scripture, that both the Hebrew and Greek word here translated 'to impute,' is used also to signify the

**DISS.** imputing any thing as a sin, or as the punishment of sin, as in the second book of Samuel : which imputation no one will deny but to have been justly made : besides, this very word frequently denotes in Scripture a true and just esteem, or judgment of any thing. Besides, St. Paul, in this chapter,

See Deut 2. 11. 20.  
2 Sam. 19.  
ver. 4.

uses this word as a reward of debt. For there it is sufficiently manifest that to ‘impute’ must be repeated with the word, ‘of debt.’ I think, therefore, that the conclusion of the Apostle, by which he infers from the passage quoted, that the justification of Abraham was entirely gratuitous, does not depend upon the mere signification of the word ‘impute,’ but partly upon the nature of the thing said to be imputed unto Abraham for righteousness, partly upon the former state and quality of the person to whom it was imputed.

§ 23. The thing said to be imputed unto Abraham for righteousness, was faith, and obedience arising from thence. But the obedience of faith, as we have often said, by its very notion altogether excludes all merit. For it supposes the gracious revelation of God to be made prior to a belief in Him, and with such promises, as by their own excellency must strongly excite a believer to perform that obedience, on the condition of which obedience the promised blessings must be acquired, which not only equal, but very far surpass all the labour that can possibly be undertaken through faith in them. This evidently was the case in the example of Abraham : he indeed believed in God, but God had first revealed Himself to him in a gracious and most extraordinary manner. . He obeyed the divine command, calling him to a long, troublesome, and dangerous journey ; yet God Himself added wings to his journey, by promising blessings so great as by their hope to fill a feeble old man with youthful vigour, and animate him to bear cheerfully every trouble. Whatever therefore Abraham did deserving of praise, must be entirely attributed to the gracious revelation and most liberal promises made to him by God, out of His own mere mercy ; therefore to Abraham there was no cause for boasting, and no merit. The Apostle seems to have had this in view, in the fifth verse, where when that which in the fourth verse was denied of him that works, namely, that reward was reckoned to him of grace, might have been repeated in the following antithesis, and

affirmed of the believer in this manner : “But to him that believeth, the reward is reckoned of grace.” St. Paul does otherwise, and says, “To him that believeth, his faith is counted for righteousness ;” as if he had said, On this very account, because his faith is reckoned to him for righteousness, his justification is entirely gratuitous, since faith by itself means grace, and excludes merit.

§ 24. But here, by the way, we must attend somewhat to the words of the Apostle, “To him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.” To understand this passage properly, we must enquire into two things ; first, what the expression, ‘who worketh,’ signifies : secondly, what is ἐργάζομένος, meant by ‘is reckoned of debt.’ As to the first, ‘he that worketh,’ signifies him who works of himself and by his own strength, unassisted by divine grace. For this, I think, is the proper description of him that worketh : since whoever works by the grace of God, he does not so much work as the grace of God in him ; and this sense is confirmed by the context. For 1 Cor. 15. besides that the Apostle in the beginning of the chapter, as we Gal. 2. 20. have seen, designedly begins the argument concerning those works of Abraham which he performed according to the flesh; this also should be carefully observed, that ‘he that worketh’ is here directly opposed to ‘him that believeth,’ that is, who worketh from faith in the divine promises, and so his works are to be referred to divine grace, which by its great and most liberal promises excited him to action ; the mighty efficacy of the Spirit being taken into the account, which is only received after, and through faith. Now in the second place, as to the words, ‘of debt,’ we cannot in any reason take them in their strict and exact meaning; for the reward of eternal life cannot be considered as due to any man, however perfectly he may work, and that even from the mere strength of nature. In one word, it is impossible for any creature to act in so upright and excellent a manner, as to deserve of right the reward of eternal life, especially when we reflect that the blessing of eternal life is most perfect, immense, and infinite, and infinitely surpassing all the works of all creatures. And such is the force of the Apostle’s question, to which no man can return an answer : “Who hath first given to him, and it shall be re- Rom. 11. compensated unto him again?” Most certainly then these 35.

**DISS.** words of the Apostle, “to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt,” cannot be literally understood, but comparatively, as meaning that the reward is not bestowed so much out of the mere grace and favour of God to him who worketh in the above-mentioned manner, as it would if given to him who believes, that is, who works through faith. This, therefore, is the Apostle’s meaning: If to him who works, that is, obeys God by his natural strength without the grace of God, and lives righteously, the reward of eternal life be given, it would seem as if he had it as a debt, and he might have some pretence for glorying; but if it is reckoned to him who does not work, but believeth, that is, to him who does nothing of himself, but through faith, and after placing his trust in God, who hath graciously revealed Himself, then the divine grace appears in all its lustre, and ‘glorying is excluded;’ all human merit is totally rejected. Here also appears ‘the grace for grace,’ the doubled grace of God; first He causes this obedience of faith in a man by His own grace, prior to any human merits; then He regards this very obedience which Himself hath caused in man, as his righteousness, and most bountifully rewards it, as if the man had really performed it of himself.

**Rom.** 3.  
27.

**§ 25.** In this his argument, the Apostle considers the prior state and condition of the person, Abraham, to whom this faith was reckoned for righteousness. He was an unholy man, and guilty of great sins, and therefore St. Paul designedly says that Abraham “believed on Him who justifieth the wicked;” thereby teaching, that Abraham, so far from deserving well of God by any good works before his call, was, on the contrary, guilty of very great sins. The mercy of God was therefore wonderfully displayed, both in revealing Himself in so unusual a manner to so great a sinner, and in calling him to His worship, as also in blessing him upon his belief in the revelation, and obedience to the call, with not only a pardon of those sins, but with the greatest rewards besides. But it will be asked, what was this impiety of Abraham’s before his call? I answer, It was idolatry, the greatest of all impieties, as the Scripture testifies. They are not to be heard, who endeavour to force a different sense on this passage, and by some subtleties or other endeavour to vindicate

**Josh.** 24.  
2, 3.

Abraham from this wickedness. The words of Joshua are C H A P. sufficiently clear : God speaks of many, ‘the fathers of the Hebrews served other gods,’ but He names those He meant ; “Terah the father of Abraham, and the father of Nachor,” so that these three, the father with the two children, are reckoned together. And after he had said they served other gods, he adds, “And I took your father Abraham,” evidently ver. 3. shewing, that among His mercies to the Israclites this too must be remembered, that when their ancestors, namely, the grandfathers of Israel on both sides, with their father, worshipped other gods in Chaldæa, God, out of mere mercy, chose Abraham without any merit on his part, and gave him the inheritance, and an heir. So that this passage throws a clear light on the Apostle’s argument.

§ 26. St. Paul also seems in these words to have tacitly opposed a stronger argument against the arrogance of the Jews, who were very averse to the idolaters, and “sinners of Gal. 2. 15. the Gentiles,” although converted to the true God by faith in Christ, by repentance, and newness of life, and would not admit them to the grace of justification unless proved by a long trial of the yoke, or at least purified by circumcision and sacrifices. For in these words the Apostle shews that Abraham their father, and themselves in him, were called from idolatry and the worship of other gods exactly in the same manner; and immediately after placing his confidence in the divine promises, and being obedient to the divine call, (although he had not yet received circumcision, as is afterwards shewn,) he was acceptable unto God. Who does not here admire the divinely inspired genius of the Apostle? Meanwhile this applies to all the justified, since every man is guilty of great sins before he hath received grace, and every one stands in need of pardon ; which the Apostle excellently proves from the words of David, and then returns to the controversy concerning circumcision.

ver. 6—8.

ver. 9.

§ 27. We have dwelt upon this example of Abraham longer perhaps than the proposed objection required, but not without reason or unadvisedly. For since Abraham is here considered by St. Paul as the father of the faithful, and the great example for all the justified, a right understanding of ver. 11, 12. what the Apostle advanced, concerning his justification, could

**DISS. II.** not fail to throw great light upon this dispute concerning justification in general. And in addition to this, the agreement of St. Paul with St. James is clearly seen from this, namely, that from the same example of Abraham, the former concludes a man to be justified without works, the latter by works; for St. Paul speaks of Abraham ‘according to the flesh,’ such as he was before the call; St. James, when blessed by grace and the divine call. The former denies justification to his works done before faith, while the latter attributes it to works proceeding from faith. Here then is no contradiction between the Apostles, which Augustine<sup>o</sup> hath explained at large. I shall conclude this discourse concerning Abraham with the remarkable testimony of St. Clement<sup>p</sup> of Rome, the contemporary and fellow-labourer of St. Paul, and therefore well skilled in the meaning of the Apostle, who in his genuine Epistle to the Corinthians, applying to all the justified what the Apostle here says of Abraham, thus writes: “And we therefore being called by His will in Christ Jesus, are justified, not by ourselves, neither through our own wisdom, or knowledge, or piety, or our own works which we have done in the holiness of our hearts, but by faith, by which Almighty God hath justified all mankind from the beginning of the world.” When therefore St. Paul contends that Abraham and his sons are justified by faith alone without works, he only excludes those works, if we may trust to the interpretation of St. Clement, which proceed from man’s own wisdom, knowledge, piety, and holiness, that is, from man’s free will, destitute of the grace of Christ. And that the works proceeding from faith and grace are not excluded from justification by the Gospel of Christ, the same apostolic man teaches us in more places than one. For a little before, speaking of Abraham, he says<sup>q</sup>, “On what account was our father Abraham blessed? was it not because through faith he did that which was just and true?” And elsewhere also he expressly shews that remission of sins, that is, justification, can be obtained only by obeying through love the commandments of God<sup>r</sup>. “Blessed are we, beloved, if we perform the commands of God in unity

<sup>o</sup> Tom. 4. lib. 83. Quæstionum,  
quæst. 76. [Vol. vi. p. 67.]      <sup>q</sup> p. 40. [c. 31, p. 165.]  
<sup>p</sup> c. 33. p. 166.      <sup>r</sup> p. 65. [c. 50, p. 176.]

of love, that our sins may be pardoned us through love ; for it is written, “Blessed is he whose unrighteousness is forgiven, and whose sin is covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the Lord imputeth no sin, and in whose spirit there is no guile.” Where it must be carefully observed that St. Clement concludes that true love and its works are necessary to the remission of sins, that is, to justification, from the very same words of David which the blessed Paul quotes to prove justification by faith alone. And he does not reason here unadvisedly ; since the words of David clearly shew, that the blessing of the remission of sins can be granted only to those who are free from all guile, that is, actuated by unfeigned love to God and their neighbour.

§ 28. Argument 3rd : The last argument of Paræus now remains, by which he endeavours to prove that works truly good, and proceeding from faith, are excluded from justification. “If,” he says, “no good works are done but by the justified (for they follow the justified, and do not precede those who are to be justified, says Augustine), it is false therefore that they justify before God, for then they would justify the justified.” I answer, We already have spoken of that expression of Augustine’s as much as we thought necessary ; with respect to the supposition of this argument, that no work truly good can precede justification, it is most false and dangerous. For this being allowed, it will follow, first, that God justifies men who are yet impious, and remaining in their sins, haters of all holiness, which nearly approaches to blasphemy, and is directly contradictory to many passages of Scripture ; and secondly, it would follow, that man could not be justified even by faith, for faith is a good work. If therefore no work truly good precedes justification, faith does not precede it, and consequently we cannot be said to be justified by faith, for then it would justify the justified. Neither will that ingenious sophism avail Paræus, namely, that faith justifies not in that it is a good work, but as the instrument of apprehending Christ. For here the question is not whether faith, so far as it is a good work, justifies ; but whether faith be a good work, and whether it precede justification ? both which all in their senses allow. But if faith be a good work, and precedes justification, it will follow that it is false to say that no

BULL.

M

**DISS. II.** good work can precede justification. The third consequence of the above argument is, that works of repentance are not good works, since they precede justification, or the remission of sins, as the Scriptures clearly prove, and all the better Protestants readily acknowledge. The truth is, no work really good can precede the grace of God, since without that grace it cannot be performed. But good works may precede justification, and actually do precede it; for grace is given before justification, that we may perform those things by which we arrive at justification.

§ 29. There is in this argument of Paræus another supposition equally false with the former, namely, that the justified can be no more justified, since it is certain, as we have before shewn\*, that justification is a continued act, and never perfected or finished before death; although, therefore, by the fewer and less works of repentance, we arrive at the first grace of justification, yet if time for living well is still granted, the subsequent works of grace are altogether necessary to preserve the received justification, and to continue it to the end; for the grace of God in Christ, obtained by faith and repentance, if not preserved by a continual course of good works, is lost. Innumerable are the passages of Scripture which directly teach this truth: among others, see Matt. 18. 32—35; John 15. 3—10; Rom. 11. 19—22; Gal. 3. 3, 4; Heb. 3. 14; 10. 23, 24, 26, 35, 36; 2 John 8.

\* Diss. 2. 1. § 5.

## CHAP. XIII.

ANOTHER CONSEQUENCE DRAWN FROM THE APOSTLE'S ARGUMENT CONCERNING THE WEAKNESS OF THE LAW, NAMELY, THAT SO FAR FROM TAKING FROM JUSTIFICATION THE NECESSITY OF GOOD WORKS, ST. PAUL'S OBJECT IS TO PROVE THAT THE TRUE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF WORKS IS ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY TO JUSTIFICATION, AND THAT THE GOSPEL IS THE ONLY EFFICACIOUS MEANS BY WHICH ANY ONE CAN BE BROUGHT TO PRACTISE SUCH RIGHTEOUSNESS.—SOME PASSAGES TO THIS EFFECT SHEWN.—THE PRINCIPAL DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE LAW AND THE GOSPEL POINTED OUT.

§ 1. It now remains for us to explain that which before we only slightly hinted at, namely, what a considerable accession of strength is given by this argument of the Apostle's to St. James's doctrine of justification by works. The matter is so clear as not to require a long or troublesome proof.

§ 2. St. Paul, so far from taking away the necessity of good works unto obtaining justification, endeavours, on the contrary, to prove these two things; first, That the true righteousness of works is absolutely necessary unto justification. For since the Apostle uses this argument especially against justification by the law, that by itself it is unequal to bring men to the practice of true righteousness, he clearly takes it for granted, that without such righteousness no man can obtain justification; for without this supposition his argument is clearly invalid, as will appear upon the slightest attention. Secondly, That the Gospel is the only efficacious means by which a man can arrive at that righteousness; for what the Apostle refuses to the law, he ascribes to the Gospel. The law of Moses was weak, and could not justify a man, because it left him destitute of those aids by which he might obtain that piety without which no one can be acceptable unto salvation in the sight of an All-holy God. On the contrary, the law of Christ is most powerful, and abundantly sufficient to lead miserable sinners unto justification, inasmuch as it plentifully supplies whatever may be necessary to effect such piety in them, both by most clearly revealing the light of eternal life, and that by giving

**DISS.** the most evident proofs for faith in it; and particularly by bestowing the grace of the Holy Spirit, not only as much as is actually necessary, but in a plentiful and abundant manner.

§ 3. This then is the evident aim of that argument, as we have proved by many testimonies, to which the following may be added. When the Apostle had said that "there is no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus," that is, that those who believe in the Gospel are fully and perfectly justified, he adds this reason, "The law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death;" that is, the life-giving Spirit of Christ, which accompanies the Gospel, hath freed me, first from the habits of sin, and then from everlasting death, the necessary consequence of those habits; manifestly shewing that by the Gospel alone we are freed from the guilt of sin, that is, justified, because from it alone flows that most powerful grace, by which we are freed from the dominion of sin, and are led to a pious and holy life. What Paræus says on this point are merely clouds raised to darken the light of truth. He makes the law of sin to mean the law of Moses. But that the law of God should be called by the Apostle the law of sin, is rather a harsh expression. Besides, is not this interpretation directly contradictory to the words of the Apostle in the preceding chapter? For there the law of sin is plainly opposed to the law of God, and is explained as meaning that ruling power of sin which resides in the flesh and its members, and is repugnant to the law of God. This also appears still more strongly from the third and fourth verses of this chapter, where the Apostle shews that Christ had done that which it was 'impossible' for the law to do; namely, that He had destroyed sin in the flesh, "that the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit." Hear Paræus again, explaining these words thus: "Christ satisfied the curse of the law, by the cursed death of the cross, that satisfaction is imputed to us, no otherwise than if it had been fulfilled in us." What can be more rash than this interpretation? For, first, Paræus explains the 'righteousness' of the law by its curse, which ought to be understood of the righteousness prescribed in the

**Rom. 7.  
22, 23, 25.**



law, as the very subject requires, and as is evident from the twenty-sixth verse of the second chapter of this Epistle. Then he interprets this passage as of some righteousness which does not belong to us, but is only imputed to us, although the Apostle expressly says that the righteousness of the law is fulfilled "in us." Lastly, he refuses to hear the explanation which the Apostle gives of the manner in which this righteousness of the law is fulfilled in us, namely, That we are to "walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit."

§ 4. Agreeably to these passages have some of the ancients interpreted the last verse in the third chapter of this same Epistle, where the Apostle proposes and answers an objection against his doctrine of justification, in these words : "Do we Rom. 3.31. then make void the law through faith ? God forbid ! yea, we establish the law." For, as Chrysostom and Augustine observe, faith is said 'to establish the law,' because it obtains grace by which the law is fulfilled. Since the strength and fulfilment and consummation of the law especially consists in the observance of its precepts ; and truly the law, deprived of the grace of the Gospel, cannot retain either its station or its honour, but lies as it were trodden under foot and despised by men enslaved by the lusts of the flesh; yet this grace being added, it recovers again its seat and throne, and obtains its authority and principal design, that of bringing mankind to its obedience.

§ 5. It would not be difficult to produce many other passages to confirm these, but in a matter already so fully explained, it would be superfluous. I will conclude with this observation ; that hence appears the great difference between the law, separately and abstractedly considered, and the Gospel, which is this, that the Gospel bestows the grace necessary to perform the righteousness, which the law only points out. In this the excellence of the Gospel above the law is principally placed by the Apostle. Hence those great praises which he gives to the Gospel, namely, that it is "the ministry of the Spirit," "the law of the Spirit of life," "the power of God," "the power of God unto salvation<sup>t</sup>." Would that these things had been seriously considered by most of the Reformed divines, who have written so much concerning the difference

Vid. Heb. 8. 10, 11.

**DISS.  
II.** between the law and the Gospel, and “who,” as Grotius<sup>u</sup> sharply remarks, “triumph in this controversy concerning justification, as if they had brought a light from heaven unknown to all former ages !”

## CHAP. XIV.

**SOME PASSAGES POINTED OUT IN WHICH THE APOSTLE OPPOSES THE RITUAL LAW ESPECIALLY.—HE SO REJECTS THE EXTERNAL AND RITUAL OBSERVANCE OF THE LAW FROM JUSTIFICATION, THAT IN ITS PLACE HE SUBSTITUTES THE INTERNAL AND SPIRITUAL RIGHTEOUSNESS OF THE GOSPEL.—HENCE AN INVINCIBLE ARGUMENT AGAINST THE SOLIFIDIANS.**

§ 1. We have now fully considered the Apostle’s argument with reference to the whole of the Mosaic law, not excepting even that part which contains moral precepts. The next point to be observed, concerning the ceremonial laws and institutions of the Mosaic covenant, we shall accomplish in a few words.

§ 2. The famous controversy concerning circumcision and the Mosaic rites, which was too much agitated even in the Apostle’s days, is professedly proposed in the fourth chapter of the Epistle to the Romans, where, after St. Paul had proved from the words of David that the blessedness of man consisted in the remission of sins, he brings forward the subject in dispute in the following words : “Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision *only*, or upon the uncircumcision also ?” That is, Are circumcision and the other Mosaic rites entirely necessary unto justification, or may it be obtained without them ? Then in the following verses he clearly shews that those rites are by no means necessary. Nearly the whole Epistle to the Galatians aims at this same point, in which the conclusion, which the Apostle undertakes to prove, is accurately laid down in these words : Gal. 5. 6. “In Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision ; but faith which worketh by love.” And Gal. 6. 15. again, with a little change, “For in Christ Jesus neither cir-

<sup>u</sup> Vot. pro pac. ad Art. 4. p. 21.

cumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature."

CHAP.  
XIV.

§ 3. There is no occasion for us to explain the arguments by which the Apostle proves this doctrine, since concerning the ritual works of the law, whether and how far they are excluded from justification, there is now no dispute among Christians.

§ 4. I think it necessary to observe this one point only, as having particular reference to our present subject; namely, that the Apostle so excludes the ritual and external works of the law from justification, as to oppose to them the internal purity of the soul, and those works which flow from a heart purified by faith, and inspired by true charity; so that what he takes from the former, he grants to these; the former are by no means necessary to justification and salvation, the latter indispensably so; he makes the former of no avail, the latter of the greatest importance. This is evident from passages very frequently quoted, viz. Gal. 5. 6; 6. 15; and 1 Cor. 7. 19. To which you may add the following remarkable passages, deserving of serious attention: Col. 2. 11—13; Rom. 2. 28, 29; Phil. 3. 2, 3. Hence we deduce the following invincible argument against the Solifidians:

In whatever sense St. Paul rejects ritual and external works as not necessary, in that sense he admits spiritual and internal works as necessary:

But he rejects ritual works as not necessary to justification;

Therefore he admits spiritual works as necessary to justification.

§ 5. And undoubtedly, with no other design did God exact with such severe punishments this external righteousness prescribed in the law, but to shew that the spiritual righteousness more clearly revealed in the Gospel, and shadowed out under the legal righteousness, was equally and even still more necessary. Circumcision of the heart\* is no

\* Hence Justin teaches that circumcision of the heart, joined with faith in Christ, is the condition necessarily required for man's justification under the new law. For in his Dialogue with Trypho, after having proved from Gen. 15. 6, that righteousness was reckoned unto Abraham when yet uncircumcised,

he adds, "We therefore in the uncircumcision of our flesh, believing in God through Christ, and having the circumcision which profiteth us who have obtained it, namely, that of the heart, trust that we may appear righteous and well-pleasing before God." Edit. Paris, 1631. p. 320. [c. 92. p. 182.]

**DISS.** less necessary to us than circumcision of the flesh to the Jews. **II.** Without this, God cut them off from the external communion of His people; without the former, He will exclude us from the hope of salvation and the kingdom of heaven. To them there was no access unto the temple of God and His sacrifices, unless they were cleansed from all impurity of the body; and to us, unless purified from all defilement of the flesh and spirit, and perfecting holiness in the fear of God, there will be no admittance unto the heavenly temple, ‘not made with hands.’ If from them God required the blood and fat of cattle, much more does He require of us that we should offer up ourselves unto Him a living, holy, and acceptable sacrifice, which is our reasonable service; yea, and if it were necessary, that we should voluntarily lay down our lives in bearing witness to His truth. Those therefore who have not yet learned from the precepts of the Gospel the necessity of good works unto justification, must go to Moses, and even by his comparatively obscure teaching be convinced of their miserable error.

## CHAP. XV.

CERTAIN JEWISH OPINIONS CONCERNING THE MANNER OF OBTAINING JUSTIFICATION AND SALVATION ATTACKED BY ST. PAUL, ARE NOTED.—THEIR FIRST ERROR CONSISTED IN ATTRIBUTING EITHER TOO MUCH STRENGTH AND LIBERTY TO THE HUMAN WILL, OR AT LEAST IN AN IGNORANCE OF THE NECESSITY OF THE DIVINE GRACE.—THIS SHEWN FROM THE RABBINS AND JOSEPHUS HIMSELF.—A REMARKABLE PASSAGE OF ST. JAMES, CHAP. 1. VER. 13 AND 14 ILLUSTRATED.

§ 1. WHAT works the Apostle St. Paul opposes, and what arguments he uses in his discussion of the Mosaic law, considered distinct from the Gospel, are now I hope sufficiently manifest to every one. Yet to what has been already said, still stronger light will be given, (towards the development of our own faith,) by considering, in the last place, the corrupt opinions of the Jews. Undoubtedly it is of much importance to the right understanding of any dispute, that the concealed opinions of our adversaries upon the point in question, and

their collateral suppositions, if I may so express myself, CHAP. XV. should be well known. For these it is extremely probable, that a wary disputant, during his argument, will sometimes refer to, and at the same time tacitly attack. This, however, is not here a matter of conjecture, neither will we attribute any opinion to the Jews which we do not think can be proved that they held from their own approved writers.

§ 2. The first and capital error of the Jewish synagogue, the source of all the rest, was this; that they attributed an excessive kind of freedom and liberty to the human will, or, at least, were ignorant of the necessity of divine grace. They, in fact, thought that the mere gifts of nature, with the assistance of the law as a kind of monitor, would enable them to obtain righteousness, and therefore eternal life.

§ 3. The following is a famous and very ancient opinion of the wise men, mentioned in the Talmud itself, and now almost passed into a proverb among the Jews. "All things are in the hand of God except the fear of God."<sup>y</sup> The meaning of which sentence, Rabbi Saadia Gaon (so called by way of eminence) says to be this; that a liberty of that nature is situated in the human mind and will, as to be in a certain manner independent of God Himself, and he does not hesitate to assert that this was the common opinion of the Rabbins.

§ 4. Maimonides quotes the same saying and gives it his approval, in the eight chapters prefixed to his commentary on Pirke Aboth<sup>z</sup>, where he says, "With regard to that saying held by the wise men, 'All things are in the hand of God' &c., it is surely true;" and shortly after he explains it as follows: "The precepts and prohibitions of the law are con- p. 237, 238. cerning actions, which man hath choice either to do, or to let them alone; and in this act of the soul is the fear of God, nor is it in His hand, but left to the free will of man."

§ 5. Moreover, there are many things which Maimonides in this chapter boldly asserts concerning free will, as if in disparagement of divine grace. "Know," he says, "that it is a p. 234. thing on which both our law and the philosophy of the Grecians agree, and which is confirmed by substantial proofs, that a man's actions are put in his own power, without the

<sup>y</sup> In lib. Sepher Emunah. יש ב' ל' בידי השם חוץ מיראת השם

<sup>z</sup> Ch. viii. de indole humana. Po- cock's Version, p. 236.

**DISS. II.** slightest compulsion towards them, neither is there any external influence to incline him to virtue or vice, save only, the disposition of temperament, by which a thing may be easier or more difficult to him." See how well, on Maimonides' own confession, the tenets of the Hebrew doctors, on this question of free will, agree with Grecian philosophy. These profoundly wise men had no greater knowledge of the necessity of grace, than the very Gentiles and heathens; rather, surely, had they less. For Maimonides asserts that there was no external influence to incline a man to virtue, saving the disposition of temperament by which virtue might be easier to him; he says not a word concerning grace or divine assistance, the necessity of which, however, Plato, Pythagoras, and several ancient philosophers, constantly acknowledged. Plato in the *Meno*: "If then we have during the whole of this enquiry conducted our investigations and arguments rightly, virtue is obtained neither by nature or teaching, but by divine dispensation." Jamblichus: "It is ridiculous for men to seek for what is right (*τὸ εὖ*) from any other source than from the gods," &c. Seneca: "The power of heaven influences a soul that is moderate, excellent," &c. "So great a thing could not exist without the aid of the Deity." And again: "No mind is good without God."

C. 28. de  
Pythagora.

§ 6. But I return to Maimonides, whose opinion concerning the disposition of temperament is still more evident from his own words in the beginning of the same chapter: "It is impossible," he says, "for man to be from his birth endued with virtue; just as it is impossible for him to be born skilled in the nature of any practical art: but this is possible, that he should be born fitted for some one particular virtue or vice, so that the actions which are concerned with these are easier to him than those which have to do with others," &c. So that, according to this great doctor, man is fitted by nature in the same way for saving virtue as for practical art; he has neither actually from his birth, both however are to be acquired by discipline and use, which will be easier when there is a good natural disposition and temperament. And here he says, indeed, that the fitness (*εὐκρασία*) of disposition contributes towards a more easy acquisition of virtue; not denying the possibility of one who labours under the very worst disposition, becoming by

long use and custom, wise and virtuous. But elsewhere for- CHAP.  
getting himself, (as frequently is the case with these multi- XV.  
farious writers,) he asserts, that a good, or an indifferent dis-  
position, is absolutely necessary for the acquisition of virtue ;  
and that it happens to some to have such a disposition from  
their birth, as does not admit of being corrected by any  
exercising. For thus in More Nevochim : "There are some Part. I.  
who from the commencement of their birth have such a dis- cap. 34.  
position, as not to admit of perfection in any way ; as, for in- Vers. Bux-  
stance, a man of an extremely warm and brave temper cannot torf. p. 48.  
moderate his anger, though he use the greatest discipline &c.  
So you will find some who are unsteady and restless, whose  
inordinate and disturbed desires plainly prove a corruption of  
their nature and badness of temperament, which cannot be  
corrected. In such men you will never see a perfect under-  
standing, and therefore it is mere folly to wish to attempt  
any thing with them in this matter." But this by the way.

§ 7. Maimonides proceeds in the same chapter to establish that principle of his of self-power (*αὐτεξούσιον*). "The sum of p. 241,242.  
the matter," he says, "is to believe that God, as He has willed  
that man should be of an upright stature, with a broad chest,  
and fingers, so hath He also willed that he should move or be  
at rest as he himself pleases, and should perform the actions  
which come under his choice, nothing compelling him to do  
them, or keeping him from them ; as it is explained in the book  
of truth, where in explanation of this opinion He says : 'Be- Gen. 3. 22.  
hold the man is become as one of Us, to know good and evil,'  
&c. Now the Chaldee paraphrase interprets this in such a  
way that the words, 'become one of Us, to know good and  
evil,' have this force ; that he is now become one in the world,  
i. e. one species, like to no other, and sharing with no other  
that which is his own portion : and what was that, but the  
knowledge of good and evil according to his own will, and  
the power of doing either of these as he pleased," &c. And soon after he affirms : "This is a necessary consequence of  
man's existence, namely, that he should do good or evil actions  
according to his own will whenever he pleases," &c. And soon after : "It behoves him (i. e. man) to accustom himself to  
good actions, by which he may acquire the virtues themselves,  
but to avoid evil ones, that the vices, if they be in him, may

D I S S. be removed from him ; and he must not say, There is a passion  
II. within me which cannot be changed ; since every passion  
can be changed, both from good into bad and the reverse, and  
this is committed to the power of his own will."

§ 8. Again he lays this down as a fundamental position :  
p. 253. "A man's actions are in his own free will, so that he can do  
whatever he wishes to do, and leave undone whatever he dislikes ; (unless for some fault God should punish him by de-  
priving him of his will;) and also the acquisition of virtue or  
vice is in his power. Wherefore he ought to provoke and  
excite himself towards the attainment of virtues, since there  
is nothing external to himself to impel him to them, and that  
is what they (i. e. the wise men) mean in the precepts of this  
book, by 'If I am not for myself, who is for me?' " He at  
length closes this worthless discourse on the human dis-  
position with these words ; "It is plain from all that we  
have said, that man's actions are committed to his own will,  
and it is in his own power either to excel in virtue or  
to be wicked," &c.

§ 9. I allow that Maimonides in all this is especially  
opposing their opinions, who have imposed compulsion and  
a kind of fatal necessity on human actions ; for so he  
himself acknowledges not far from the beginning of the  
same chapter : "Now I have declared this unto thee for  
this purpose, that thou shouldest not consider those fables  
which astrologers falsely devise to be true, when they assert  
that men from their birth are endued with virtue or vice, and  
that they are compelled to these actions of necessity and by  
force." But

The Pilot, frightened at Charybdis' roar,  
Steers but too close on Scylla's fatal shore;

for while he rejects the fables of astrologers, he puts forth  
blasphemous impieties of his own ; and though he takes  
away compulsion, substitutes for it a kind of absolute self-  
power, and the freedom of a will altogether independent of  
grace or divine operation.

§ 10. It may be said, These were the dogmas of Rabbins  
of a later period, from whom it is unfair, or at least rash, to  
judge of the ancient teaching of the Jews. I allow this, nor  
will I deny that Maimonides and modern Jews differed, in

some respects, in their opinions of free will from some CHAP.  
of the ancients; but so, that both the one and the other XV.  
equally do injury to divine grace. Let us go therefore to the  
times of Christ Himself and His Apostles.

§ 11. The Jewish religion at that time was divided chiefly into two sects, the Sadducees and Pharisees. For the Essenes can hardly be accounted Jews; inasmuch as (Baronius rightly observes) they were schismatics, and by their schism were separated from the rest, that is, the Pharisees and Sadducees, and the Jews in general. For they neither sacrificed in the temple, but used more holy ceremonies (as they thought) in their own conventicles, and lived for the most part without the city, in villages very far removed from frequented places. And so<sup>a</sup> there is no mention of them in Scripture, nor even, as some think, any hint; though it is quite clear from Josephus and Philo that they did exist in the age of Christ.

§ 12. With regard to the Sadducees, it is very clear from Josephus, that they held an independent freedom of will, such as we have seen is defended by Maimonides and the later Rabbins. For they said, as Josephus relates in the thirteenth book of his *Origines*, "Every thing is put into our own power, so that we ourselves are the authors of what is good, and chose what is evil from our own folly." And elsewhere: "They denied that God was the author of any person sinning or abstaining from sin;" (for we must read δρᾶν not ἐφορᾶν as Grotius rightly observes.) And again of the same Sadducees: "They say that good and evil are in man's own choice, and that every one takes either of these as he wills." Nearly all those high-priests were followers of this sect, who, during the ministry of Christ our Lord and <sup>Ant. Jud. lib. 13. 5, 9. vol. 1. p. 649.</sup> Acts 5. the times of His Apostles, presided at the altar.

§ 13. If we enquire about the Pharisees, they seem to have fallen into the opposite error, doing away nearly with all free will, and making every thing subject to a kind of fatal necessity. For thus Josephus says expressly: "They believe every thing is done by fate." There are, however, some other passages <sup>Ant. Jud. lib. 18. 1, 3. p. 871.</sup>

<sup>a</sup> Grotius gives another reason, Vot. pro pac. p. 95. "I have given the reasons why Christ makes no mention of those Essenes, because their institu-

tions were holy, and because from them especially Christ chose for Himself His new people."

**DISS.** in Josephus where he seems to hold that the Pharisees thought otherwise, about the meaning of which there is still much dispute and controversy amongst the learned. Drusius confidently affirms that Josephus contradicts himself; our own Montague did not hesitate to say that what he wrote was false. Baronius determines that the Pharisees attributed every thing to fate; whereas Casaubon contends that Baronius was mistaken, attempting to shew from Josephus himself that the Pharisees believed in a kind of mixture of fate and free will; with whom also Grotius appears to have agreed.

In Mat.  
22. 23.

De Bell.  
Jud. 11.  
8, 14.  
p. 166.

Ant. Jud.  
13. 5, 9.  
p. 649.

§ 14. But let us again examine those passages of Josephus which have given occasion to this controversy. "They attribute all things to fate and to God: and to do what is right or not, they say, is for the most part in men's own power; but that fate also assists in each particular act." With this must be compared another passage, where he says that the opinion of the Pharisees was "that some things, and not all, are the work of fate, but that some were in their own power to happen or not." It seems as if they divided all events between these three causes,—God, fate, and man's free will; we must enquire what they attributed to each. With regard to God, Josephus does not sufficiently explain what were the opinions of the Pharisees concerning His share in events, for he only says that they attributed every thing to God and fate. In my opinion, they seem to have thought that nothing took place immediately and straight from God, but only through the medium of that fate which was ordained by Him of old at the creation of things; just in the same way as Maimonides interprets that saying of the wise men, 'All things come about by the will of God.' "With regard to a well-known saying<sup>b</sup>," he says, "the like to which are both found amongst the sayings of the wise men, and in their writings also, namely, That a man rises or sits, and that all his movements take place, according to his will and pleasure; this is true, but in a certain sense, and that, as if, when a man throws a stone into the air and it descends, we were to say it descended by the will of God,—this is true; since God hath willed that the whole earth should be in a centre, and therefore when any part of it was projected

<sup>b</sup> In octo capitul. cap. 8. de indole humana, p. 239, 240.

upwards it would be moved towards the centre; not because God hath now at length willed that when this part of the earth was moved it should be moved downwards. And on this point the schoolmen differ, whom I have heard say, that His will is in every thing, from time to time, continually. We, however, do not think so; but that there was will in the six days of the creation, and that afterwards all things flow on continually according to their nature, as He says, ‘The thing that hath been, Eccles. 1.9. it is that which shall be; and that which is done, is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun.’ Nay he even denies, (which must be considered a miracle,) that those very events which are called miracles take place by any immediate will or providence of God, and is not ashamed to assert, together with his insane wise men, that they spring forth as it were at their own time from hidden causes which were established at the creation. For we presently find the following words: “And this it is, which has compelled our wise men to say of all miracles which swerve from the usual course of things, whether they be now past or those which are foretold, that they were designed in the six days of the creation, and then were so interwoven in the nature of things, that what has happened in them, should happen; so that when at the time appointed they took place, they appeared indeed to be something new, but in reality were not so.” He adds: “They have said much on this opinion in Midrash Koheleth and elsewhere. Moreover, amongst their sayings of this kind there is, ‘The world proceeds according to its order.’ You will find also that in their discourses they always carefully avoid asserting the ‘divine’ will in the several events of things and times,” &c. And it is plain from Josephus that this was actually the opinion of the Pharisees when he says that they believe “that fate assists in each event.” That is, they held that nothing was done by God beyond, above, or contrary to that fate of His own decreeing. And in another passage in Josephus, the Pharisees in assigning events to their causes, determine that some things must be attributed altogether to fate, and some to man’s free will; but they affirm that nothing comes immediately from God:

עלם במעשהנו הילך

**DISS.** much less, therefore, does it appear from Josephus that the  
 II. **Pharisees** acknowledged that special providence of God,  
 In Luc. which furnishes grace and assistance necessary for every  
 18. 2. good act ; which, however, Grotius asserts to be most plain  
 Matt. 22. from Josephus, and that he has elsewhere shewn it to be so,  
 23. alluding, if I am not mistaken, to his Annotations on St.  
 Matthew, where he quotes these passages from Josephus.

§ 15. Let us now consider fate : By that, the Pharisees without doubt understood the order and constitution of the heavens, stars, and secondary causes depending on them, established and ordained by the First Cause of all things ; which Josephus calls the ‘second order,’ thus explaining the contrary opinion of the Sadducees concerning fate. “But the Sadducees deny altogether the second order, that is, fate<sup>a</sup>.” But what did the Pharisees attribute to this fate ? ‘That some things are the work of fate ;’ namely, not only mere natural events, in which man’s free will has no concern, as, for instance, to be tall or short, of which alone Maimonides interprets that saying of the wise men, “ All things are in the hand of Heaven” &c. ; but some of those things also which fall under a man’s choice, as, to take such an one for his wife, to hold such possessions<sup>b</sup>, &c. By extending this saying to which, the same Maimonides says that men have made a great mistake, since the dispute between the Pharisees and Sadducees was only concerning those things which come under choice. And hence, as I may observe by the way, has arisen a custom amongst the modern Jews that those invited to a wedding wish good fortune to the parties to be joined in matrimony in the following form : “ May the planet be good or propitious,” (for so Maimonides says the word *mazal* is to be explained,) which words also they would inscribe on the

In Gen. 32. ring for damsels that were betrothed, as Munster observes.

§ 16. Meanwhile the Pharisees acknowledged “that there were some things in their own power to happen or not,” and that to do right or wrong is generally in a man’s own power; so that they thought that fate had less share in those actions which are virtuous or vicious, and that man’s own will was

<sup>a</sup> De Bell. Jud. 2. 8. § 14. vol. 2. p. 166. The ‘second order’ means the Sadducees themselves, as he speaks of a

separate ‘order’ of Essenes, § 13.—ED.  
<sup>b</sup> He refers to an enumeration only part of which is to the purpose.—ED.

מִזְרָח

chiefly concerned in them : though all of these, according to CHAP.  
the Pharisees, were not in a man's own power, for they said XV.  
'generally' not 'always.' And even from those actions which  
are done by free will they would not altogether exclude fate :  
for they said that "fate assists in each particular act."

§ 17. They had also rather say, Fate 'assists' than 'compels ;' which Rabbi Abraham Zachuth shews, when writing of the Pharisees he says, "They believe that the planet assists ; nevertheless free will is left in the hand of man." And I consider that from this interpretation of the ancient Pharisees rather than from the opinions of Maimonides or any other modern Rabbi, is to be interpreted that saying of the wise men which we have frequently mentioned : " All things are in the hand of heaven except the fear of God ;" that is, All things are subject to the fatal influence of the stars, except only the will of man in those things which pertain unto religion.

§ 18. And this description of the opinions of the Pharisees is the more plausible, inasmuch as it is given by Josephus, who himself also favoured that sect. Still I think it is not difficult to gather from it that the Pharisees, whatever they put forward to the contrary, still by consequence did away with all free will. For as we have seen from Josephus, they held that man's free will was subject to the fatal power and influence of the stars, even in some things pertaining to religion. If in some, why not in all? For surely in particular acts the influence of the will and of heaven is the same ; and if the human will be bound even to one link of the fatal chain, there is an end altogether to its freedom. Besides, they said that fate assisted in particular acts ; from which it follows that man never does any thing good or evil contrary to his fate : for instance, Supposing a man be under the influence of an evil star from his birth, and so labours under an evil disposition ; I ask, will this man necessarily turn out ill? If so, then man's free will is destroyed by fate. But if it can happen that he may become good, it will follow that it is possible for him to act against his fate, and therefore that fate does not assist in each particular act. " Nor is it wonderful," as our most learned Montague has well observed, Appar. 7. "that these hypocrites, these interpolators of the divine law,  
BULL. P. 262.

**DISS.** impure and covered with crimes, justly abandoned by God, —  
**II.** should have adopted profane, contrary, and opposite opinions:” particularly when at this present day, even among Christians there are to be found not a few (in other respects learned and pious men) who think that the absolute and irresistible decree of God (far be it from me to attribute to them the fate of the Pharisees) can be reconciled with man’s free will. In short it is very difficult to stop one’s course in this slippery study of the stars. He who has once entered these hidden regions knows not whither he is advancing: he who attributes any thing to the stars, ends in attributing all things to them. And we see this in modern astrologers, who, in dependance on this their science, commonly go thus far, that whatever is singular, nay even miraculous, and done entirely by the extraordinary power of God, they attribute to the situation and influence of the stars. No saying is so often in their mouths, as “The stars rule men, but God rules the stars,” and “The wise man will rule the stars.”

In Mat. 23.  
23.

From all this I consider Josephus to have written the plain truth, when in the passage first quoted he simply says that the Pharisees ‘thought every thing was done by fate,’ and therefore that it is much more certain, that Grotius and he, however learned, whom he professes to follow, were mistaken, than that Epiphanius in explaining the opinions of the Pharisees should have been mistaken, when he affirms that they made every thing subject to a fatal necessity through their love of astrology; especially as before Epiphanius, Justin, who lived near the age of the Apostles, in his dialogue with Trypho, attributes the same error to the Jews.

§ 19. But to return. From what has been said, it is too manifest that the Pharisees both imputed their bad actions to a bad fate, and in their good actions, whatever they denied to the free will of man, they did not attribute to grace but to the force and influence of the stars, and believed their planet to contribute more to saving virtue than the Spirit; a good disposition, than a new nature; a happy temperature, than the renewing and regeneration of the Holy Spirit. And this is what I think the Pharisee meant in the parable, when he returns thanks to God that he was not as the publican, &c. For they are mistaken, who rashly conclude from this passage



that the Pharisees acknowledged the necessity of grace; for the Pharisee seems to attribute his being good to that Divine Providence which gave to him at his nativity a more benignant aspect of the stars than to the publican, and hence a more kindly and good disposition; which Maimonides<sup>f</sup> himself conceived to be a singular gift of God, proving it with wonderful acuteness from Prov. 31. 10. "This saying of Solomon, 'Who hath found an excellent woman?' is a perspicuous and evident parable, namely, that when a man is possessed of a good and convenient habit, which is not too powerful for him, and does not spoil or destroy his disposition, it must be acknowledged as a singular gift of God." He afterwards gives this reason, "For a good and convenient habit may be easily governed."

§ 20. This pestilent heresy of the Pharisees, St. James, <sup>Jas. 1.</sup>  
<sup>13—19.</sup> writing to the Jews, seems evidently to attack. He is advising the Jews, that being tempted, that is, being overcome by temptation, (for the word *πειράζεσθαι* must be understood here in its full force as in Gal. 6. 1, in which sense the active *πειράζειν* is used, 1 Cor. 7. 5; 1 Thess. 3. 5,) they must not attribute their evil deeds to any fatal necessity, and so to God who had established that necessity; but they were to ascribe them, as they ought, to their own free will, enticed by lust. His words are: "Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God; for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth He any man: but every man is tempted when he is drawn away of his own lust and enticed; then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin, and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death." How strongly these words are opposed to the fate of the Pharisees! for their doctrine of fate, if not directly, yet by consequence, makes God the author of sin. For if nothing can be done without the assistance of fate, as they teach, it follows that no evil therefore can be committed by man, unto which fate, and therefore God the author of fate, do not lend their help, and also no man can do right if opposed by his fate. Besides, the opinion of the Sadducees was in direct opposition to the Pharisaic doctrine. But they taught that "God could not be the cause of sin," and asserted "that we sin from our own

<sup>f</sup> More Nevochim, par. 3. c. 8.

**DISS.** carelessness." Therefore the Pharisees held opinions the reverse of these. In the following verses the Apostle cautions the Jews from attributing their good actions to the fatal influence of the stars. His words are: "Do not err, my beloved brethren, every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning." Do not err, is, as Grotius observes, a manner of speaking usual when we wish to destroy any false ideas which either have or

See 1 Cor. 6.9; 15.33. Gal. 6.7. 1 Joh. 3.7. may creep into the minds of any. And what was that opinion from which there was so much danger to the Jews? that man obtained acceptable goodness from a fatal influence of the stars, and not from the grace of God abounding in us according to His free pleasure. This error he overturns with wonderful elegance in what follows. "Every good gift," &c. True and perfect virtue, that which salvation accompanies, (for he does not deny but that men may have some imperfect dispositions to virtue from their birth), doth not proceed from heaven and the stars, but from above, from a source above the stars, from the Father, that is, the Creator of lights, or of the stars. "From above" have the same meaning as that in

נֶבֶחַ שָׁמַיִם Job 22. 12. "Is not God in the height of heaven? and behold the height of the stars how high they are!" Where 'in the height of heaven,' means 'in the highest heaven,' which is called by David 'the heaven of heavens,' and by the Apostle 'the third heaven.' For in the Scriptures three heavens are mentioned, the lowest, middle, and highest. The lowest contains all the three regions of the air: the middle, that in which are the sun, moon, constellations, and stars. In the highest is the throne of the Majesty of God. The meaning therefore of Job's words is: Behold, how high is that heaven in which the stars shine forth: and then consider how much higher is that God, that sitting on a far higher throne treads on the planets and stars. 'The Father of lights' occurs only once in scripture. I think, however, there is a passage in the Old Testament where the stars are called "the sons of God." "When the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy." Where, by "the sons of God," in the latter part of the verse, the Hebrews generally understand stars. Neither is there

בְּנֵי  
אֱלֹהִים  
Job 38.7.



here any tautology, since the morning stars signify not all, <sup>C H A P.</sup>  
 but only the brightest stars<sup>e</sup>. And the morning stars are, <sup>XV.</sup>  
 according to them, the seven ministering, that is, the planets,  
 which are also called the ‘stars of light.’ But these niceties  
 are not necessary to our argument: for the words, *τὰ φῶτα*, are  
 to the letter the same as *lumina*, and by force of the article  
 ‘certain special lights,’ and by synecdoche ‘heavenly lights.’  
 ‘Father’ (*πατὴρ*) is with the Hebrews, Creator or Author, as  
 “the Father of Spirits.” By a like appellation Philo Judæus<sup>h</sup> <sup>Heb. 12.9.</sup>  
 calls the Word of God “the supercelestial star, the fountain  
 of sensible stars,” and “a universal splendour, from which both  
 the sun and moon and the rest, both planets and fixed, derive  
 according to each one’s power its appropriate brightness.”  
 This sense of the words ‘Father of lights’ is the most simple  
 and literal, compared to which all others will seem forced and  
 violent to a fair mind, so that I cannot but be amazed that  
 among the number of learned and critical interpreters, no  
 one, as far as I am aware, has yet hit upon this interpretation  
 of ours; especially as the following words, as they themselves  
 allow, are all astronomical<sup>i</sup>; “With whom is no variableness,  
 neither shadow of turning;” that is, the sun himself, the chief  
 of the heavenly luminaries, hath his parallax or changes, and *παραλλά-*  
*γῆς.* <sup>gās.</sup> *παραλλά-*  
 gently alters in passing from the east through the south to *ξεις*.  
 the west: he also has his revolutions, his annual retirings from  
 us, which we call solstices, and the Greeks *τροπᾶς*: hence our  
 shadows change according to these retirings, which is the  
 meaning of *ἀποσκίαζεν*. But that God, from whom every  
 real virtue flows, as He is superior to the sun and to the  
 stars, unto which some attribute so much, so is His light  
 infinitely more perfect; for He neither rises nor sets, nor  
 retires, but is light only, unmixed with shade. The divine  
 writer concludes his elegant discourse with these words:—  
 “Of His own will begat He us with the word of truth;” that <sup>Jas. 1. 18.</sup>

<sup>e</sup> בָּרַךְ אֱלֹהִים frequently means the same as Paris, 1640. (vol. 1. p. 7.)

<sup>i</sup> Vid. Grot. in loc.

<sup>b</sup> Περὶ τῆς κοσμοποίης, p. 6. edit.

**DISS.** and regeneration, that new and heavenly nativity, which the Holy Spirit causes in us through the Gospel. These things seem very evident to me, let however the learned judge.

§ 21. But to come to an end : hence every one may perceive under what a gross and profound ignorance of divine grace all the teachers of the Jews laboured, the Sadducees contending for an absolute ‘self-power’ of the will, the Pharisees giving the honour of divine grace to fate and the stars. Thus then we behold how very necessary were the endeavours of St. Paul, who so often, and in such powerful words, hath taught the force and efficacy of divine grace, as opposed to the strength of free will and human nature.

## CHAP. XVI.

**THE SECOND ERROR OF THE JEWS IN PLACING THE HOPE OF THEIR SALVATION IN THAT CIVIL RIGHTEOUSNESS, WHICH WAS CONFIRMED IN THE LAW BY DEFINITE PUNISHMENTS.—HENCE IT HAPPENED THAT THEY LIVED IN AN OBEDIENCE, EITHER NEGATIVE, OR EXTERNAL, OR AT THE MOST, PARTIAL AND DEFECTIVE.—EACH OF THESE SHEWN AND PROVED FROM HOLY SCRIPTURE, AND THE WRITINGS OF THE HEBREWS.**

§ 1. ANOTHER very gross error of the Jews, into which most of them fell, was this, that being content with a kind of civil righteousness, by which they avoided the punishments threatened in the law, they never thought of performing that more perfect piety also implied in the law, nor aspired to that excellent holiness, at which all sincere worshippers of the Deity ought to aim.

§ 2. This error of theirs seems in some way to have arisen from the first, and to have been added to it as a kind of support ; for having conceived that vain confidence of their own strength, it was their interest, nay, it was actually necessary, that they should invent for themselves a righteousness suited to that strength, poor, defective, and partial, exercising on the law of God a violence something similar to that which Plutarch relates Procuſtes to have used towards his guests ; that is, lest the law should exceed their strength, they cut it down to their own standard, and, taking away its



perfection, they contrived to make their own, patched up as it was, sufficient. It may however be the case, that the Jewish error above-mentioned, of the sufficiency of their own strength without the aid of special grace, might have arisen hence, that they did not understand the true extent of the divine law; but supposing the obedience commanded in it to be prescribed, poor, and easy in performance, they attributed too much to their own strength, and did not acknowledge the necessity of a more powerful grace: like him who having set up an adversary of straw, assumes great courage, and promises himself an easy victory.

§ 3. But from whatever source this error arose, that the Jews did so err, may be learnt from St. Paul himself, who was both taught by Gamaliel, a man of great knowledge of the law, and had ranked himself among the Pharisees. He therefore said he lived blameless while he was a Pharisee, as to the righteousness which is in the law; where the word Phil. 3. 6. 'law,' as Grotius rightly observes, is used in the same sense In Mat. as Seneca uses it in the following words: "It is but a trifling 5. 20. matter to be good as far as the law demands;" for the Apostle means that law which the Hebrew judges observed in determining trials, and they could neither see into the heart, nor had they received authority to punish every actual crime, but only those which principally injured civil society. Therefore he says, he was as to the righteousness of the law 'blameless,' that he had committed no crime for which he became subject to the external judgment of the law, or to any of the punishments established in the law and imposed by the judges. For certainly he would scarcely in any other sense be able or dare to say, that he had attained unto the righteousness of the law, or lived blameless as a Pharisee; yet this righteousness, whatever it might be, he clearly con- ver. 7. fesses that he once before his faith highly valued, and ver. 4. shews that it was greatly esteemed by his countrymen, who were still Jews, as something excellent of which they might boast.

§ 4. From this most impure source arose many of the worst Jewish errors concerning the obedience due unto God. Out of many we will notice a few. 1. Hence it happened, that for the most part they were satisfied with a negative religion,

D I S S. thinking it sufficient if they abstained from sins, especially  
III. the more enormous ones, being in the mean time little careful  
 for the works of piety and charity, which are due to God  
 and our neighbour; that is, they were chiefly attentive in  
 avoiding sins of commission as they are called, but perfectly  
 careless as to sins of omission, because to negative precepts  
 punishment is generally annexed, very rarely to affirmative  
 Lu. 18. 11. ones. Hence we read of the Pharisee giving God thanks  
 ver. 12. that he was not as other men are, extortioners, unjust,  
 adulterers, or even as the publican, who was praying at a  
 distance, making it a great boast that he was not among the  
 worst of men. But what good had this Thraso done? he  
 had nothing to produce before God but some frivolous and  
 merely external acts. "I fast," he says, "twice in the week,  
 I give tithes of all that I possess." On which account,  
 St. Clement of Alexandria<sup>k</sup> explains the righteousness of the  
 Pharisee and Christian thus: "Except your righteousness  
 exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, which  
 is only an abstinence from evil, by that which adds perfection  
 to these things, love and charity to your neighbour, ye are  
 not of the kingdom of heaven." For the righteousness of  
 the Pharisee only amounted to an abstinence from crime: a  
 great achievement truly. But what says even a heathen  
 poet? "If my slave should say, I have stole nothing, nor run  
 away, I would answer, You have your reward, you shall not  
 be flogged; or, I have not committed murder, Then you shall  
 not feed crows upon a cross." But by thus avoiding the  
 greater crimes, these mad Pharisees not only promised them-  
 selves impunity, but even dreamed of merit. Hence the  
 authoritative saying of the Rabbins, "He who abstains from  
 breaking a commandment, shall be rewarded as if he had  
 kept a commandment!"

§ 5. 2. From this source sprung that dreadful opinion of  
 the Pharisees, through which they paid no attention to the  
 errors of the heart, as envy, pride, avarice, anger, unclean  
 desires, and the like, being content with that righteousness  
 only which is visible in external acts: for, as Grotius ex-  
 cellently observes, although they knew that the law was given

In Mat.  
5. 20.

<sup>k</sup> Lib. 6. Strom. p. 825.

<sup>1</sup> Mishnah lib. Kiddushin ניתנים לו שכר בעיטה מלזה

by God, unto whom all hearts are open, who wills Himself to CHAP.  
XVI. be loved from the heart, and forbids evil desires ; yet because no express punishment was annexed to these commands, they regarded them as advice rather than precepts, or at least imagined that such blots were cleared away, partly by the daily sacrifices, partly by the annual expiation, so that God had no more remembrance of them. However this may be, it is very manifest, that not only the common people but the Scribes and Pharisees, had imbibed this error. Hence Christ Himself opposes His most pure commands to the opinions of Mat. 5.  
21, 22. the Pharisees, teaching, that although the Pharisees considered those only as sins unto which a legal punishment was annexed, as in murder ; yet He Himself ordered His disciples to beware of anger, being well assured, that in the next world it would receive a punishment no less severe than murder doth in this ; and that if any one should add to his anger cursing, he would receive a punishment more severe than that enacted by the council, even stoning ; but that if the cursing be highly blasphemous, he would suffer greater torture than those burnt by slow fires in the valley of Hinnom. In a similar manner, Christ overturns the defective Pharisaic interpretation of the seventh commandment, shewing, that not ver. 27, 28. only was he guilty of adultery who had actually committed it, as the Pharisees taught, but he also who looked upon the wife of another with impure desires. Hence it is that our Lord so often and so sharply rebukes these Pharisees for See Luke  
16. 13, 14;  
18. 9, 10.  
Mat. 23.  
25—28. their avarice, pride, and other inward impurities.

§ 6. In short, that this was the opinion of the Jews may be clearly shewn from their own approved writers. I shall, however, only produce two proofs quoted by Grotius and by others before him<sup>m</sup>. The first is from Josephus, who describes himself as accurately instructed in Pharisaism. He blames Polybius the historian, for ascribing the death of Antiochus to an intended, though not perpetrated sacrilege, adding, "For since he did not actually commit the crime he intended, he did not deserve punishment." But David Kimchi, that great master of the Hebrews, speaks more plainly, and interprets these words, "If I regard iniquity in my heart, the In Psal.  
66. 18. Lord will not hear me," directly contrary to the meaning

<sup>m</sup> Vid. Cornel. a Lap. in Mat. 5.

DISS. II. of the Psalmist : “Even though I should regard iniquity in my heart, which I should be even ready to perform, so that it is already before God as if I had spoken concerning it, still God will not hear it, that is, not regard it as a crime; for God does not regard an evil thought as an act, except it be conceived against His worship and religion.” What expressions for a master of Israel! for he supposes that all the determinations of the mind, which do not come out into act merely from want of opportunity, excepting only apostacy from Judaism, are not imputed, or regarded by God, as sins.

§ 7. 3. The first error hath produced another, by which these blind leaders of the blind imagine, that a mutilated and partial obedience is more than sufficient for those precepts which are established by no express punishments, thinking the law satisfied if they kept those precepts which are exacted upon pain of death: whatever they performed of the rest, they regarded as a kind of supererogation. This wonderful doctrine is given by the masters of the Jews<sup>n</sup>, where they teach that so great a number of precepts—for they enumerate 613—are given to the Jews in the law, that out of them they might choose which they would, by the performance of which they would deserve eternal life. For thus Obadias de Bartenora explains this passage<sup>o</sup>: “Whoever shall sincerely observe even one precept of the 613, by that observance he will deserve eternal life.” where by ‘even one,’ he must be understood to speak of those precepts only which are not established under pain of death; for it is scarcely possible that the Jews did not believe that all those were absolutely necessary unto salvation: yet I allow some sayings of the Rabbins apparently to demand a contrary sense; and it is no wonder that these teachers, blinded by the just judgment of God, should fall into the grossest errors.

§ 8. There is a well known maxim among the Jews mentioned by Maimonides<sup>p</sup>: “That he who pays attention to the precept is free from the precept.” And similar to this

<sup>n</sup> In Mishnah. lib. Maccoth. sect. ult.

<sup>o</sup> הנה וכנה בה לחי עולם הבא

העוסק במצוות פטור מן המצוות

is the following <sup>a</sup>:—“It is not lawful to pass beyond the precepts.” which Maimonides thus explains, “Whoever endeavours to keep any one precept, must not pass from it to observe any other.” The words of the Hebrew doctors in the Mishnah<sup>r</sup>, are very express: “Whoever shall have kept any one precept, his days shall be prolonged; he shall possess the earth, and it shall be well with him.” I know that Maimonides endeavours to refine these crude ideas of the Rabbins, but it is lost labour; for they conceive it to be necessary that a man’s good work should be so great and valuable, that by its addition his merits should outweigh his evil deeds. On which condition they bid him be secure of his salvation. Upon which subject, whoever wishes to read more quotations from the Rabbins, may refer to a Dissertation on Legal Righteousness, and especially to the second chapter in a volume of select sermons, written in English by Smith, who was most learned in Rabbinical knowledge.

§ 9. Our Lord seems to rebuke this senseless and impious comment of the Pharisaic school in these words: “Whosoever, therefore, shall break one of the least of these commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven.” How excellently these words are suited to the Pharisees, who both themselves neglected many of the commandments of God, a very few only excepted, and taught others so to do. Hence there immediately follows, “Except ver. 20. your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees,” &c. Equally clear is St. James, writing to Christians who had been Jews, “Whosoever shall Jas. 2. 10, keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty <sup>11.</sup> of all;” i. e. Beware of that mutilated obedience to the commandments, which when Jews you learnt of your masters; for that Lord, whose disciples you now are, demands a far different obedience of you, that you should diligently and carefully endeavour to keep all and each of His commands. I find that Paul Bergensis, a Jew, and also the learned Estius, agree with me in this interpretation, which naturally occurred to me; the latter also explains St. Paul’s words in the same

<sup>a</sup> און מעבירין על המצוות  
כל העושה מצווה אחת וכו' Lib. Kidd. c. 1. sect. 10.

D I S S. way: "Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things  
 II. Gal. 3. 10. which are written in the book of the law to do them."

§ 10. And the greatest danger of this doctrine, otherwise sufficiently dangerous, seems to lie in this point, that most considered themselves at liberty to choose what commandments they would observe, which of course were the least and easiest, and the least disagreeable to their lusts, while they neglected those of far greater consequence; which Christ Mat. 23. 23. Himself accuses the Pharisees of doing; where He remarks their exactness in observing the commandment of tithes, and that they scrupulously paid for the smallest herbs, which it was doubtful if the law intended, and at the same time they neglected the weightier matters of the law,—judgment, mercy, and faith.

## CHAP. XVII.

A THIRD ERROR OF THE JEWS, PRINCIPALLY OF THE PHARISEES, THAT THEY ATTACHED MUCH RIGHTEOUSNESS TO CERTAIN TRADITIONAL RITES AND CUSTOMS, AND PREFERRED THEM TO THE CHIEF COMMANDS OF GOD.—THE FOURTH AND LAST ERROR WAS, THAT, CONTENT WITH THIS FALSE RIGHTEOUSNESS, THEY DID NOT THINK OF THE MESSIAH, WHO WOULD GIVE THEM A BETTER RIGHTEOUSNESS.—LASTLY, FROM THIS DESCRIPTION OF JEWISH OPINIONS, FOUR OBSERVATIONS ARE DRAWN OF GREAT USE TO THE RIGHT UNDERSTANDING OF ST. PAUL.

§ 1. It was not besides the least folly of the Jews, particularly of the Pharisees, that they placed great righteousness in some frivolous and ridiculous works, rites, and ceremonies, inventions of their own, unto which they ascribed so much as to prefer them to some of the most principal commandments of God. Of this sort was that careful and anxious washing of the hands before meat, and after returning from market, or any crowded place, where they might have been polluted by the touch of any unclean person or thing, in which they observed such care as to wash up to the elbow, as Theophylact in my opinion rightly explains the word πνυμή. For their custom was, when washing to lift up

Mark 7. 3.



their hands, and with the fingers contracted to receive the water poured down upon them, which necessarily flowed down as far as the elbow. They also observed, with religious care, the washing of cups, flagons, and vessels of brass (for earthen ones if polluted they broke), and of beds, as St. ver. 4. Mark expressly declares, adding, that there were many other trifling ceremonies of that kind, which they had received from their elders, to be observed, many of which may be read in the books of the Jews, and of those who have written concerning their manners, which I would here repeat were it not a fruitless labour.

§ 2. That the Pharisees placed righteousness in these unmeaning rites appears from the chapter quoted above, where they are said to accuse the disciples of Christ as guilty of a heinous crime for neglecting them; and that they preferred these ceremonies to the commands of God, even to very important ones, Christ Himself shews, where He says that they neglected the command of God (even charity, called especially the command of God) to observe their traditions; for being wholly intent on these ridiculous, but troublesome rites, they neglected that important precept, which negligence was itself a sufficient crime. But Christ proceeds to shew, that there were some of their traditions which not only were averse from the practice of internal piety, but were actually repugnant to the commandments given by God, as superstition is wont to decline into greater sin; and these traditions were undoubtedly in the number of those which, having received from his fathers, St. Paul asserts, that he kept before his conversion with the most ardent zeal.

§ 3. Their fourth error was, that the Jews, securely acquiescing in this debased righteousness, supposing it to have no less weight with God than with man, were not anxious seriously to seek for the remission of their sins: neither did they endeavour to purify their minds, and to extirpate those vices which are usually concealed by men: neither, and hence arose the calamities of the Jews, did they perceive any need for a Messiah, who should apply medicine to that part which they did not believe to be sick. They did indeed expect a Messiah, but such an one as they had feigned for themselves; a glorious king, excelling in force, arms, and

See Mat. 9.  
10—12.  
John 5. 39,  
40; 9.  
39—41.

**DISS.**  
**II.** power, who should free the Jewish nation from the yoke of Roman slavery, and exalt the throne of David above all the powers of the earth. But so far from believing that the Messiah would expiate their sins by His own death, His death seemed to them disgraceful: therefore the cross of 1Cor. 1.23. Christ is said to be to the Jews "a stumblingblock." That the law of Moses would have in Him its completion and end, that He would lead men by the light of His doctrine, and the power of His Holy Spirit, to a righteousness far more excellent than that which in their folly they had invented for themselves, or even than that which the letter of the law itself prescribed; of this they never even dreamed, being wholly ignorant of that great mystery, that Christ was to be "the end of the law for righteousness," the end, completion, and perfection of the law, that through Him alone, whoever Rom. 10.4. believed in Him should be made partakers of true righteousness.

§ 4. Such were the opinions of the Jews on this subject of justification and works, which being now sufficiently explained as far as relates to our design, we will now deduce some observations not wholly irrelevant to the subject we have in hand. And first, it is hence evident, that they entirely mistake the intention of the Apostle, who suppose him to contend against a sinless obedience, perfect and free from every error, as an opinion received and defended among the Jews. From what has been said, it is manifest that they were so far from such a persuasion, as on the contrary to remain content with an obedience extremely imperfect indeed.

§ 5. Secondly, it appears also that the doctrine which the Solifidians fix upon the Apostle is most hostile to his argument: for they suppose the Apostle to teach that good works are not necessary to justification; but I would ask, unto what good end or purpose would such doctrine tend among the Jews? Surely there was little occasion to depress the necessity of good works among those, who were already, of their own accord, too careless about them, and of regulating their lives in the sight of God aright. It was much more likely for the most holy Apostle to add spirit to these triflers, by strongly urging the necessity of true righteousness and sincere piety, and by forcibly exhorting them to be purified

from those internal vices, plunged in which they had hitherto remained in a state of torpidity. And this he actually does. C II A.P.  
XVII. Besides, did not these very Jews eagerly support this identical Solifidianism, (making only the necessary changes in the two religions,) which some suppose the Apostle to defend in his arguments against them? for it is certain, that they supposed that every Israelite, excepting those only who had rejected the profession of Judaism, and the faith of the covenant entered into with Abraham, would inherit a portion in another world, that is, in eternal life; which, changing the name of Judaism into Christianity, is the very doctrine of the Solifidians.

§ 6. Maimonides boldly and roundly announces this opinion<sup>s</sup>. "All wicked men, whose sins exceed their good works, will be judged according to the measure of that excess, and afterwards will have a share in the world to come; therefore every Israelite will partake of life eternal<sup>t</sup>." But this maxim, "that every Israelite would partake of life eternal," is taken from the Mishnah<sup>u</sup>, where it is laid down as an undoubted fact among the Jews, a few only being excepted out of this so general a description<sup>x</sup>, those namely, "who deny the resurrection; that the law is from heaven; he who reads the books of heathens; who attempts to charm away a disease by repeating Exodus 15. 26; and lastly, whoever attempts to pronounce the 'four lettered' name." Munster also quotes this curious opinion from the Talmud: "Abraham sits at the gates of hell, and does not permit any wicked Israelite to descend into the pit<sup>y</sup>."

§ 7. That this opinion anciently prevailed among the Jews, we learn from Justin Martyr, who followed closely upon the Apostles, and who, if any, was intimately acquainted with the Jewish system as taught in his time; in his dialogue with Trypho, near the end, after having said that the Jews could not be blessed with true wisdom, because they drank not of the living fountain of God, but from broken cisterns, which could not hold water, he immediately adds: "Now those

<sup>s</sup> Tract. de Poenitent. cap. 3.

<sup>u</sup> שְׁכָל יִשְׂרָאֵל וְשַׁלְּחָם חֲלֵק לְעִוָּסָה בָּא

<sup>x</sup> Tract. Sanhedrim. ch. 11. [vol. 4. p. 259. Ed. Surenhusii.]

<sup>x</sup> See Maimon. in explanation of this chapter.

<sup>y</sup> שאברם יושב על פתחי של ניינם

שלא להניח לירד פושע יישראל  
בניהם

**D I S S.** are the broken cisterns, holding no water, which your Rabbins  
II. have dug for you, as the Scripture openly says, ‘teaching for doctrines the commandments of men ;’ and besides, they deceive both themselves and you, supposing that the kingdom of heaven will be given unto all who are descended from Abraham after the flesh, although they be sinners, and unbelievers, and disobedient towards God : which the Scriptures teach is not so.” And soon after, in the following words, he explains the true means of obtaining remission, or justification, in opposition to the dreams of the Jews, and others who supported them in this matter. “But this it is, that whoever repents of his sins will receive forgiveness from God : but not as you, and others who in this respect are like you, deceive yourselves, saying, that though they be sinners, yet, if they acknowledge God, the Lord will not impute sin to them.” Where by ‘others who are like you’ he doubtless alludes to the favourers of the Gnostic heresy, who, Irenæus<sup>z</sup> tells us, entertained that shameful error. I am for my own part perfectly persuaded, that St. James the Apostle, writing to the Jews, intended the whole argument concerning faith and works, contained in the second chapter of his Epistle, against that deadly opinion as well of the Jews as of the Judaizing Gnostics.

§ 8. That this strange opinion was prevalent among the Jews, is by no means obscurely hinted at in other parts of See Mat. 3. the New Testament ; St. Paul professedly opposes this 8—10.

John 8. 39. opinion nearly through the whole of the second chapter to Rom. 9. 6. the Romans, where it is his design to shew, that the Jews in vain trusted in circumcision and the divine covenant, while they indulged in the most disgraceful vices, and were not

careful to regulate their lives according to the law of God. See ver. 9. to 13, and ver. 17. to the end. Whoever then, lest forsooth they should approach to Judaism,

so ardently contend that faith alone, without good works, is sufficient unto justification, have, with the Gnostics of old, fallen into the very depths of Jewish vanity and folly.

§ 9. Thirdly, from what has been said concerning Jewish opinions, we may guess the reason why the Apostle, not content with simply rejecting the righteousness of the law, against which he writes, treats it with such contemptuous

<sup>z</sup> See B. 1. ch. 1. 20. and Feuardentius’ notes on both passages.

language : for after having mentioned those privileges which, while a Pharisee, he so greatly valued, (and principally among these, that as to the righteousness of the law he was blameless,) he adds, that having known Christ, he accounts Phil. 3. 8. all these things not only to be loss, but 'dung,' which seems to be the same as *κυνίθαλον*, the excrement of dogs. Now *σκύβαλα*. who can suppose that the Apostle would speak thus reproachfully of the true righteousness of the law ? But, undoubtedly, he speaks of that human, negative, external and hypocritical, partial and frivolous righteousness, which he had learnt in the schools of the Pharisees ; and no one, who weighs what we have just said of Jewish righteousness, will wonder that this appeared to him, when enlightened by grace, as vile, sordid, and stinking.

§ 10. Fourthly and lastly, from this description of Jewish doctrines, the aim of the Apostle in the whole of his argument against the Jews clearly appears. It is this : that wretched men being actually in sin but remaining unappalled through confidence in some fancied righteousness, should at last awaken ; and acknowledging their misery, being also assured of the truth of what our Lord hath told them, "that Mat. 5.20. unless their righteousness exceeded that which the Scribes and Pharisees taught, they could not enter into the kingdom of heaven," should fly as suppliants to Christ, the Mediator, both to obtain pardon from Him of the greatest sins of which they had been guilty, and to beg for the grace of the Holy Spirit and of His Gospel : by which, being delivered from the dominion of sin, they might arrive at that true and spiritual righteousness, without which no man can be accepted by God unto salvation. In one word, the Apostle does not drive the Jews from the true righteousness of works, but calls them from a false and pretended one, that he might lead them to that true righteousness.

## CHAP. XVIII.

THE CONCLUSION ; CONTAINING AN EPITOME OF THE WHOLE WORK, WITH  
A SERIOUS ADMONITION TO THE READER DILIGENTLY TO GUARD AGAINST  
FOUR ERRORS IN THIS CONTROVERSY CONCERNING JUSTIFICATION.

DISS.      § 1. By the blessing of God we have now reached the  
II. conclusion of our work. It is time to bring it to an end.  
My observations concerning the mutual agreement of St. Paul  
and St. James have been made, if not with the care so  
important a subject demanded, yet at least as far as my time  
and abilities would allow.

§ 2. The sum of all is this : St. Paul rejects from justification  
the following descriptions of works :—1st. Ritual  
works prescribed by the ceremonial law. 2nd. Moral works  
performed by the natural powers of man, in a state either of  
the law, or mere nature, before and without the grace of the  
Gospel. 3rd. Jewish works, or that trifling righteousness  
inculcated by the Jewish masters. 4th and lastly. All  
works separate from Christ the Mediator, which would obtain  
eternal salvation by their own power, or without reference to  
the covenant of grace established by the blood of Christ.  
St. James also, on his part, recommends none of these works,  
as appears from the whole tenor of his Epistle. On the other  
hand, that moral works arising from the grace of the Gospel  
do, by the power of the Gospel covenant, efficaciously conduce  
to the justification of man and his eternal salvation, and so  
are absolutely necessary, St. Paul not only does not deny  
but is employed almost entirely in establishing. And this is  
the very point for which St. James contends.

§ 3. It was my intention to have given the reader, at the  
end of this work, a plan of the whole doctrine of justification,  
drawn up according to the meaning of both the Apostles ;  
but, for the present at least, I have thought proper to omit  
it, lest the work should run out to too great a length, and  
especially because the attentive reader will find sufficient  
upon that point, in the course of these dissertations. I would  
therefore only seriously guard the reader against a fourfold  
error in this controversy concerning justification.

§ 4. Let him first carefully avoid that dreadful error of some Roman Catholics (of some I say, for it must be acknowledged that all do not think so) who have not hesitated to assert, that a heavenly reward is due to the good works of the just from condignity; that is, on account of their own intrinsic goodness and worth. Surely those do not deserve the name of Christians who teach such a kind of merit. And I will confidently pronounce, that those who have thoroughly imbibed such a shocking principle have never known or felt the grace of Christ. Modesty of mind is the very soul of Christianity, without which, a man is but the corpse of a Christian, not a true and living Christian. But to such modesty what can be more opposite than the above proud presumption of merit? Indeed if there were any such merit, it would belong to them who say or think nothing of their own merits; for as Cyprian observes<sup>a</sup>, "In the Church there have been always those who have nobly and wonderfully acted, and yet never regarded the Lord as therefore indebted to them." The aim and intention of St. Paul in what he says concerning justification, is completely in opposition to this opinion, it being his whole endeavour to cut off all human merit, and all opportunity for boasting, from these proud setters-up of their own works. The exception which these patrons of merit make, that the Apostle denies merit only to works done without grace, is extremely impertinent; for it is clearer than the sun that the Apostle denies justification and salvation to works done without grace, because, if they were admitted, some merit would seem to arise, and men would have some cause for boasting; on the contrary, he therefore allows justification unto salvation to works proceeding from grace, because by these means all human merit vanishes, and all cause for boasting in man is thus taken away, and the whole glory and honour of our salvation redounds to God, the bestower of it. Thus by the very argument which our sophists use to establish their condignity of works, doth St. Paul overturn their merit, namely, because they derive their origin from grace.

<sup>a</sup> Epist. ad Lapsos. [Ep. 27. p. 38.] (Opus suum nunquam Domino imputaverunt.) *Imputari* when it refers to good deeds means not to reckon as received but as paid.—Vide Grot. in Annot. ad Luc. 17. 7.

**DISS.** **II.** § 5. Whoever then regards his salvation must guard against that calculating pride, and call not Almighty God to account as if in any degree indebted to him. He will remember that the right which the good works of the just have to eternal life, is founded only in the Gospel covenant and promise, the source of which covenant and promise is the mere and wonderful mercy of God the Father, through Jesus the Son. Which Bernard thus elegantly expresses upon the Apostle's words : " Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness." " The crown," says he, " which St. Paul expected, is the crown of righteousness, not his own, but of God's righteousness ; because it was right that God should pay what He owed, but He owed because He promised." You may add, but He promised because He pleased, on account of His own good pleasure through Jesus Christ. That observation of Augustine's on the hundred-and-ninth Psalm deserves notice<sup>b</sup> : " God is faithful who hath made Himself a debtor to us, not by receiving any thing from us, but by promising so great things to us." And that of Fulgentius<sup>c</sup> : " From His bounty He thought proper to make Himself a debtor." Although even these expressions are somewhat improper ; and therefore Thomas, and the other schoolmen, preferred saying, that God made Himself a debtor by His promises, not to us but to Himself; i. e. to His own determination, it being agreeable to His truth that He should perform His promises.

§ 6. From this error in particular concerning the merit of good works in the matter of justification, our Holy Mother, the English Church, would guard her sons by the eleventh article, whose words are these : " We are accounted righteous before God only for the merit of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, by faith, and not for our own works' deservings : wherefore that we are justified by faith only is a most wholesome doctrine, and very full of comfort, as is more largely expressed in the Homily of Justification." The express words are, " only for the merit of our Lord, &c. and not for our own works or deservings." It is indeed added, ' by faith,' chiefly because to the justification of man is principally necessary confidence in the merits of Jesus Christ, united with a perfect renuncia-

<sup>b</sup> [§ 1. vol. iv. p. 1228.]

<sup>c</sup> In Prolog. lib. ad Monimum.

tion of our own merits, for without such due modesty of mind it cannot be that our works, of whatever other value, would please God unto salvation. This is the same as is meant in the Confession of Augsburg, which, as it is the most noble and ancient of all the Reformed Churches, so both here and in other places, the heads of our Church have followed it, that whoever is ignorant of it can scarcely conceive the true meaning of our Articles; where in the twentieth article they acknowledge repentance (which includes all works preceding a man's justification) to be entirely necessary unto justification, yet assert nevertheless, that we are justified by faith, evidently in this sense, that in our contrition or repentance there is no worthiness to deserve the grace of justification, and that for Christ's sake alone remission of sins is given us, and in short, that all Christians who intend to be justified, must be perfectly persuaded of this truth. The words are, "Although some contrition or repentance be necessary, yet it must be observed, that remission of sins is granted us, and we are made just instead of unjust, that is, the reconciled accepted sons of God, freely for Christ's sake, not on account of the worthiness of our contrition, or of any works preceding or following it. But by faith this blessing must be received, by which we are to believe that for Christ's sake remission of sins and justification are given us. This doctrine affords sure consolation to frightened minds." Who does not remark the coincidence between these last words and the conclusion of our eleventh article? In the fourth article of this Confession are the following words: "Since the Gospel brings our sins to light, the alarmed soul ought to be convinced, that freely to us for Christ's sake, are granted remission of sins and justification by faith, by which we ought to believe and confess, that these things are granted to us for Christ, who was made a sacrifice for us, and appeased the Father. Although, therefore, the Gospel requires repentance, yet that the remission of sins might be certain to us, it shews that it is given freely, i. e. does not depend upon any condition of our worthiness, neither is it given on account of any preceding works, nor the value of any following ones; for remission would be uncertain if it should be supposed that it became ours only, after we deserved it by preceding works, or when

DISS. II. our repentance was sufficiently worthy ;" where, by the way, it must be carefully observed, that the Augsburg theologians, when they so frequently put forward faith, by which we believe that our sins are remitted freely, do not mean that every one ought to believe that his sins in particular are forgiven, and that this is the only justifying faith, (as many who profess to follow the Augsburg Confession improperly explain it,) but they mean this only, whenever we are justified, remission of sins is given freely and not from the merit of our works; and this is necessary to be believed by all justified persons. Their express words are: " We ought to believe and profess that these things are given us for Christ's sake," &c. But if any one doubts that this is the very meaning and intention of our Church in the eleventh article, I will produce an undeniable evidence against him, namely, the Church herself professedly, and in express words, thus explaining herself in the second Vol. 1. p. 6. part of the Homily on Salvation. " But this saying, that we be justified by faith only, freely and without works, is spoken for to take away clearly all merit of our works, as being unable to deserve our justification at God's hand, and thereby most plainly to express the weakness of man and the goodness of God, the great infirmity of ourselves and the might and power of God, the imperfection of our own works and the most abundant grace of our Saviour Christ; and therefore wholly to ascribe the merit and deserving of our justification unto Christ only, and His most precious blood-shedding." Our Church expresses her meaning still more clearly shortly afterwards in the same Homily: " The true understanding of this doctrine, ' We be justified freely by faith without works, or, that we be justified by faith in Christ only,' is not that this our own act to believe in Christ, or this faith in Christ which is in us, doth justify us, and deserve our justification unto us, (for that were to account ourselves justified by some act or virtue that is within ourselves,) but the true understanding and meaning thereof is, that although we hear God's word and believe it, although we have faith, hope, charity, repentance, dread, and fear of God within us, and do never so many works thereunto; yet we must renounce the merit of all our said virtues of faith,

hope, charity, and all other virtues, and good deeds, which we either have done, shall do, or can do, as things that be far too weak and insufficient and imperfect to deserve remission of our sins and our justification, and therefore we must trust only in God's mercy and that sacrifice which our High Priest and Saviour, Christ Jesus, the Son of God, once offered for us on the cross, to obtain thereby God's grace and remission, as well of our Original sin in Baptism, as of all actual sins committed by us after our Baptism, if we truly repent, and turn unfeignedly to Him again." What can be said more clearly? for our Church here openly professeth, that she, by this her doctrine, 'we are justified by faith alone,' did not mean that faith alone, without works, was sufficient unto justification, or that in the work of justification any efficacy or worth is to be attributed to faith above the other virtues; but that what she means is this, that as to the meritorious cause of our justification, we must equally disregard faith, and all other virtues and works, and trust only to the divine mercy, and the merits of our Saviour. Moreover, she so denies the merit of good works, that at the same time she sufficiently and plainly allows their necessity to obtain justification, acknowledging that true and unfeigned repentance is the indispensable condition of the remission to be obtained. With this coincides the Augsburg Confession, (art. 20,) on faith: "When therefore we say that 'we are justified by faith,' we do not mean that we are made just on account of any value of that virtue, but this, that we obtain remission of sin, and the imputation of righteousness, through mercy for Christ's sake." And soon after in the same article, "But St. Paul, when he says 'faith was reckoned for righteousness,' speaks of confidence in the mercy promised through Christ. And the meaning is, that men are pronounced just, i. e. reconciled in mercy, and not for their own goodness, but that this mercy promised for Christ's sake must be received by faith. In this sense, the uncommonness of the Apostle's expression, 'we are justified by faith,' offendeth no good men, if they understand it to be strictly said of mercy, and that it is ornamented by true and necessary praise," &c. You here see the aim of the Augsburg Confession, in saying, 'we are justified freely by faith alone;'

**DISS.** namely, to depress the supposed value of our own works,  
II. and that the mercy of God, and the merits of Christ, might receive their due praises. Besides, they confess that the Apostle's expression, 'we are justified by faith,' is not strictly to be taken, but is figurative. So our Church in the Homily on Salvation, Part 3.

"Truth it is that our own works do not justify us, to speak properly of our justification, that is to say, our works do not merit or deserve remission of our sins, and make us of unjust, just before God; but God of His own mercy, through the only merits and deservings of His Son Jesus Christ, doth justify us. Nevertheless, because faith doth directly send us to Christ for remission of our sins, and that by faith given us of God, we embrace the promise of God's mercy, and of the remission of our sins (which thing none other of our virtues or works properly doth), therefore the Scripture useth to say, 'that faith without works doth justify.'"

From which words appears the whole of what must be separately attributed to faith in the work of justification in the opinion of our Church, which is this: that although other virtues are no less necessary to justification than faith, and faith in reality has no more effect in it than any other virtue, but yet of all the virtues faith is that one by which we embrace the Gospel promise, by which promise we are justified; therefore by a convenient phrase, our justification may and is usually attributed to faith only, and this by a metonymy, in which the act is put for the object with which it has to do.

Cassander saw this and so approved of the teaching of the Augsburg Confession, making the following remark in his advice concerning the above-mentioned article<sup>d</sup>; "But that which Protestants say, that we are justified by faith only, is more tolerable since they explain themselves by saying that by the word 'faith,' they mean 'grace,' which answers to it; so that to be justified by faith only, is the same as to be justified by grace only, not by works," i. e. not by the merit of works. And in truth this is the meaning of all sounder Protestants. Thus the Wirtemberg Confession in the article on Justification<sup>e</sup>; "We believe and

<sup>d</sup> P. 18, 19. ex edit. Grotii.

<sup>e</sup> Syntag. Confess. p. 144.



confess that for doing and exercising righteousness acceptable to God, these virtues are necessary; faith, hope, and charity; and that man cannot conceive these virtues of himself, but receives them from the favour and grace of God, and that faith works by love. But we consider that they are most opposed to the true Apostolic and Catholic doctrine, who teach that a man becomes acceptable to God, 'and is accounted righteous before God on account of these virtues,' and that he must trust to the merits of these virtues at the judgment of God. For a man is made acceptable to God, and accounted righteous before Him, solely for the sake of the Son of God, our Lord Jesus Christ, by faith; and at the judgment of God no confidence is to be placed in any merit of those virtues which we have, but solely in the merit of our Lord Jesus Christ which becomes ours by faith. And since at God's tribunal, where true and eternal righteousness and salvation is treated of, there is plainly no place for men's merits, but only for the mercy of God and the sole merits of our Lord Jesus Christ, who is received by us through faith: wherefore we consider that the ancients and our fathers said correctly, We are justified before God by faith only." So also the speakers on behalf of the Augsburg Confession, at the second conference at Ratisbon: "It remains, that we use the word 'alone,' and say that men are justified by faith only: for some misrepresent this, as if we meant that a mere lifeless opinion concerning the Christian religion were sufficient for a man's salvation, without any regeneration of the man to the will of God, without repentance, and without the exercise of good works, as if by this word 'alone' we exclude from faith, hope, and charity. But we in preaching justifying faith, at the same time explain what it is, and plainly testify, that that is not true faith in Christ which is without repentance for sins, hope, and charity, and the exercise of good works. And when we say with the holy Fathers, that we are justified by faith only, we declare that it means the same as in the Apostle's words, that we are justified freely and without works; so that this word 'alone' excludes good works and other virtues not from the justified man, but from the power of meriting remission of sins and eternal life; so that to say 'we are

**DISS.** <sup>II.</sup> justified by faith only,' is nothing else but that we are justified by no merits of our own, but by Christ's alone, which are given to us, and we on our part apprehend by faith. And since this is the genuine use of this word, and the ancient Church used the same for the edifying of the faith, it is not for us to concede the use of it to those who endeavour to detract from the grace of God, by the praise of human works. As neither would the holy Fathers of old concede to the Arians the word *συμώνιον*, 'of one substance,' when they saw that by so doing they would be giving a kind of approbation to their impiety, and obscuring the truth. For the Church of Christ is mistress, as of things, so also of words as far as this, that she make use of all both things and words, for the edifying of the faith in Christ. The same speakers in their answer to the twenty-first reply of the speakers of the opposite party, put forth the same views. The Romanists had said, "Ye yourselves, and the superiors of your order, have judged that the word 'alone' is offensive, and therefore should be omitted: why then do ye not give it up both now and for ever, for public peace and edification? Surely it is a Christian's duty to avoid all offences as far as in him lies. Now this word 'alone' is a great stumbling-block to many, nor is it given us in Scripture: wherefore it may be omitted without any injury to saving doctrine. It is therefore your duty to give it up." To which, after a few remarks in explanation and defence of this word, the speakers on our side reply: "Notwithstanding, if some pious men are offended at this word who yet admit the thing itself, namely, that we are justified by the sole mercy of God and merits of Christ, and by no virtue or merit of our own, we wish not to grieve or offend such by this word, which as we use it very rarely elsewhere, so neither is it inserted in our own Confession. And yet on that account to reject it and condemn its use, as that cannot be right, so no one ought to require it of us. Least of all is it lawful to concede this word to those, who by that concession would endeavour to confirm man in that error than which none is more dangerous, That our justification is not of the grace of God alone, and the sole merits of Christ, but in some measure of our works and virtues: justification, that is, of life, and the confidence of ever-

pp. 252,  
253.

lasting salvation. Neither is that word ὁμοούσιον expressed in Scripture in so many letters, yet since that," &c. In the same way is the doctrine explained in the Repetition of the Augsburg Confession, written in the year of our Lord 1552, that it might be shewn to the Council of Trent; and published first under the name of the Confession of Doctrine of the Saxon Churches, and afterwards confirmed by the general consent of the Churches and Universities which followed the Augsburg Confession: which in the part on remission of sins and justification, thus teaches<sup>f</sup>: "Therefore this phrase 'we are justified by faith,' must be understood correlatively, that is, we are justified by confidence in the Son of God, not on account of our own quality, but because He is the propitiator in whom the heart relies," &c. And again: "And here we must speak of the exclusive particle: St. Paul so often repeats the word 'freely' (gratis), by which word it is most certain that the condition of our merits are excluded. Therefore is it said in our Churches, 'we are justified by faith only.' Which we thus understand and declare: 'freely,' on account of the only Mediator, not on account of our contrition or any other merits of our own, are remission of sins and reconciliation granted unto us. For although contrition precedes consolation; and the love of God, and many other virtues are excited together with this faith or confidence; yet these virtues are not the cause or merit of remission of sins, nor on account of these is a person acceptable," &c. And so lastly Melanthon on the word 'faith<sup>g</sup>.' "Wherefore, when it is said 'we are justified by faith,' nothing else is meant than that we receive remission of sins and are accounted righteous for the sake of the Son of God; and since this blessing must be apprehended, it is said to be so by faith; that is, confidence in the mercy promised for Christ's sake. The proposition, then, 'we are righteous by faith,' must be understood correlatively; that is, through mercy for the sake of the Son of God are we righteous or accepted. The nature of nouns relative<sup>h</sup> in use is well known; and as love, fear, and

<sup>f</sup> Corpus Theolog. p. 244. et Syntag. Confess. p. 81.

<sup>g</sup> In loc. praeципius Theolog. Corpus Theolog. p. 424. [Vol. i. p. 199. Op. Ed. 1562.]

<sup>h</sup> 'Secundum dici,' which is opposed to 'secundum esse,' where a thing is what it is only with respect to another, as father to son. These, on the contrary, are only names of things to which

**DISS.** other names of affections are spoken relatively, so also is confidence. Nor do I very much fear the foolish reproofs of the unlearned; neither do I object to what some bring forward, namely, that love is joined to this confidence. But when we say, ‘we are justified by faith,’ we point to the Son of God sitting at the right hand of the Father, interceding for us: for His sake we say that reconciliation is given to us, we withdraw the merit of reconciliation from our virtues, whatever they may be.” And yet afterwards in its place, it is said that love and the other virtues ought to exist in the regenerate. “And in short, when we are accused of this dogma, that we say ‘a man is justified by faith,’ we are only accused because we affirm that we receive reconciliation for the sake of the Son of God, not for our own worthiness; and that this blessing is to be believed, or apprehended by this faith or confidence, and Christ’s merits to be opposed to our sin and condemnation, and that God is to be called upon in this faith or confidence which looks up to the Son of God.” It is most certain that these opinions are the very voice of the Gospel, and the continual belief of the true Church. In the same book in treating of faith, inasmuch as it is a part of repentance, he says<sup>i</sup>: “Contribution<sup>k</sup> without faith is the horrible dread and grief of the soul flying from God, as in Saul and Judas, wherefore it is no good work. But contrition with faith is the dread and fear of the soul not flying from God, but acknowledging the righteous anger of God, and truly grieving for having neglected or despised Him, and yet coming to Him and imploring pardon. Such grief becomes

**Ps. 51.17.** a good work and sacrifice, as the Psalmist saith: ‘The sacrifice of God is a troubled spirit, a broken and a contrite heart, O God, shalt Thou not despise.’ And yet it is necessary to censure and reject the opinion, which supposes that men merit remission of sins by contrition, or that remission

certain relations belong, as a head is in itself a head, but has a relation also to something of which it is the head. See S. Thom. Sum. 1. P. Q. xiii. Art. vii. ad 1. Vallius. Log. de ad aliquid Q. viii. c. 2. p. 535, says of these, that they may be viewed in three ways: absolutely in themselves, only in their relation, or both in themselves and in

relation. Melancthon seems here to take the second of these.—ED.

<sup>i</sup> Corp. Theolog. p. 536, vol. i. p. 247.

<sup>k</sup> This is what is called by the school Divines *attrition*, and distinguished from *contrition* by the absence of love. —See in lib. Sent. iv. Dist. xvii. Art. 1. 9. 3.—ED.



of sins is granted them for the worthiness of their contrition. The voice of the Gospel must be kept to, which proclaims, Sins are remitted freely for the sake of the Son of God. This must be exclusively held, that due honour be paid to Christ, and likewise that terrified souls may obtain certain consolations, for they would be driven to despair were they obliged to feel that they had not remission, unless their grief were sufficiently worth and enough. This simple view does away with many labyrinths of disputes.” From these proofs, it must be quite clear how entirely amiss most later Protestants have understood the doctrine of the early ones concerning justification by faith only, in supposing that they attributed to faith, above all the other virtues, an instrumentality, strictly speaking, in the work of justification. This is a mere dream, for it is plain from their own teaching, which we have explained at length, that they ascribe no especial efficacy, and so no instrumentality to faith above other virtues in the matter of justification, but that they only meant that faith alone, of all other virtues, signifies a respect to the free mercy of God promised through Christ, which is the primary cause of our justification, and so, by a figurative, but not an improper method of speaking, we may say, ‘we are justified by faith only;’ and that this expression is by all means to be kept, because it is best suited to express that grace and mercy of God by which, for Christ’s sake, we are justified, and so entirely to remove all human merits from the work of justification, which the Fathers of the English Church have well expressed in the Homily on Salvation, (Part 3.) “And this form of speaking use we, in the humbling of ourselves to God, and to give all the glory to our Saviour Christ, who is best worthy to have it.” Certainly our Church, however Rogers and others somewhat bold, and so in many places most unfortunate interpreters of our Articles, may have otherwise understood her meaning, hath most plainly denied this instrumentality of faith in the Homily on Salvation (Part 2.); for she thus speaks: “Justification is not the office of man, but of God,” &c. And again, “Justification is the office of God only, and is not a thing we render unto Him, but which we receive of Him;” &c. And thence she expressly concludes, that as to the act and office itself of justifying, nothing more

**DISS.** must be ascribed to faith than to other virtues, as is plain from the words immediately following and those already quoted. And sure the conclusion is clearer than the light; for if justification is the act and office of God alone, it is most certain that neither faith nor any thing else of ours, can possibly take the place of an instrument in the work of justification, since every instrument is of such a nature as to concur of necessity with the principal efficient cause, as we have elsewhere remarked in our Dissertations.

I will sum up the matter in a few words. When the first Protestants taught that we were justified by faith alone, they did not therefore mean, that by this faith other virtues, and other good works were excluded, as by no means necessary unto the obtaining of justification, or that faith had in the work of justification a greater effect than other virtues. But they would have this proposition regarded as true in this sense only, that the word faith denotes such an obedience as is united with confidence in the merits of Jesus Christ, and a perfect rejection of all merits of our own, and which therefore excludes all those works which are performed with any confidence in, or opinion of, our own merits. It is this which Melanthon means in his Apology for the Augsburg Confession, in answer to the question, What is justifying faith? "The difference between faith and the righteousness of the law, may be easily perceived. Faith is a service, *λαρπεῖα*, which receives from God the blessings offered us; the righteousness of the law, that which presents to Him our own merits. By faith God would be so worshipped that we should receive from Him what He promises and offers!" Which is clearly explained by Ludovic Crocius<sup>m</sup>. "Faith alone justifies so far as it denotes a certain obedience waiting for the promise as a free gift, wherefore, formally, it consists in the application of the promise. Yet certain dispositions precede this very act of faith, and certain fruits follow, whence the word includes many virtues and acts both preceding and following it, and it is opposed to that obedience which does not expect the promise as a free gift, but as a reward proposed

<sup>l</sup> Page 92. [Vol. i. p. 64.]      div. Can. Dissert. vii. p. 973 et 982—

<sup>m</sup> In Syntagm. iv. 7, p. 1223. Vid. 985.  
etiam Conrad. Bergii praxin. Catholic.

on the condition of some work, without that acknowledgment and gratitude, which is naturally required in every gift however free. And obedience of this kind is by the Apostle peculiarly called, ‘a work,’ and by the Latins properly, ‘merit;’ and those who obey on this condition are called ‘workers.’ And if the expression be so understood, those works which are inconsistent with faith, i. e. which are performed in confidence of their own merit, are entirely excluded, not only being denied as able to justify, but even to be present in the justified, or in those who are to be justified.” To this I think it unnecessary to add a word. But it must be carefully observed, that all the testimonies of our Church which I have as yet produced, are taken from the Homily on the Justification or Salvation of man. To which Homily, as a fuller explanation of the eleventh article, our Church expressly refers us. What room for doubt then remains? Do we enquire after the sense of the eleventh article? We are referred in that very article to the Homily on the Salvation of man. What doth the Church teach there? She declares again and again, and that in the most express words, that in this article she opposes the merit only of good works<sup>n</sup>. Neither is it undeserving of notice, that of the thirty-nine articles of the Church of England, thirty-eight are laid down without any explanation; but this one, on the Justification of man, is not given without this express caution, that a fuller and more complete explanation of it must be sought in the Homily on Justification. For the reverend Fathers of our Church were very anxious lest any man, too superstitiously adhering to the words of the article, should twist them into some dangerous sense, which alas! we see at this day to be too much done by many; therefore it is wonderful with what anxiety and care those excellent and wise men provided that their doctrine of justification by faith alone should not otherwise be understood than as we have explained it, namely, that by it all presumption of our merits being entirely taken away, the grace of God, and the merits of our Saviour Christ, might receive their due, even the highest degree of honour and esteem. And thus far of the merit of good works.

Having passed therefore this Charybdis of the Romanists,

<sup>n</sup> See especially Homily on Salvation, Part III. in the beginning.

**DISS.** let the Christian reader avoid in every possible way the  
II. Scylla of the opposite side. I mean the error of the Solifidians and Antinomians, who entirely deny the necessity of good works to eternal justification and salvation. Of this most dreadful heresy, this must be first observed, that the supporters of it, while they reject the necessity of good works, lest there should be any appearance of merit, by that very step actually establish the merit of good works. For why do they deny that good works are necessary to justification and salvation?

Because, to be sure, if this be allowed, our justification and salvation would then be 'of debt,' not 'of grace,'  
κατ' ὄφεις· λημα. κατὰ χρήσιν. that is, the pure grace of God. Does it not clearly follow, from this mode of reasoning, that there is always some merit in the good works of men? Now this is the very thing for which the Roman Catholics contend. Yet this by the way. But the necessity of good works depends upon the same circumstance as their value and efficacy; that is, they avail unto justification and salvation only so far as they are a condition to which God, of His mere favour, hath promised in the Gospel covenant justification and salvation. And for that very cause we rightly conclude them to be necessary, because no man, according to the Gospel covenant, can be justified, or obtain salvation, who does not fulfil the condition of that covenant. The case is this: God being moved of His infinite goodness signally to bless us, but being prevented by sins which deserved punishment, appointed that Christ, willingly from His love towards us, by suffering most dreadful torture, a cruel and shameful death, should pay the punishment due to our sins, that the proof of divine justice being thus evidenced, He might impart His blessings to men in such manner as should seem best to His wisdom. By which the gate of heaven was opened to miserable sinners, pardon of their sins and eternal life were offered to them, and not only offered but even assigned over by a covenant, drawn up and ratified upon the best and most equitable conditions, which is called the Gospel covenant. From the whole of this plan are excluded not only our works, but faith itself, and every thing we can call our own. But these things are not the same with justification, they altogether belong to satisfaction, and the obtaining of salvation. Now this

covenant being established, that any one should actually and really be a partaker of the benefits it comprehends, it is absolutely required that he should perform the condition prescribed in it, which being performed, and not otherwise, he is by that covenant justified. But we have shewn, by many reasons and arguments, that this condition includes not only faith, but repentance, and the study of good works. Here the merit of Christ does not perform that office which many so dangerously and absurdly dream. For Christ hath not merited, nor is His righteousness imputed to us for this purpose, that we should be freed from the conditions of the Gospel laid upon us by Himself, (that is, faith, repentance, and the study of good works,) but by His merit He hath obtained, that upon a most just condition we might become partakers of salvation, and He also purchased grace, by which we are enabled to perform that very condition. It is therefore greatly to be wished, that this distinction between ‘procuring’ salvation, and the ‘application’ of it by the Gospel covenant, however it may seem sufficiently obvious, was more rightly understood by most theologians ; for if it were, an end would easily be put to many great disputes in this controversy.

§ 8. What we have said concerning the absolute necessity of good works is most certain : nevertheless, even here there is need of some caution, that the Christian reader may accurately distinguish between the first and second justification, and so between the good works which are necessary to each. And here it must be understood, that only the internal works of faith, repentance, hope, charity, &c. are absolutely necessary to the first justification ; but the other external works, which appear in outward actions, or in the exercise of the above-named virtues, are only the signs and fruit of internal piety, being subsequent to justification, and to be performed provided opportunity be given. Without doubt this is the meaning of our Church in the twelfth article, where it is said, that works are the fruit of faith, and, as it were, signs by which faith is known, and which follow the justification of man. For here by ‘works’ must necessarily be understood external works, or that actual obedience which

DISS.    II. produces a continued course of actions. This may be proved by the strongest arguments.

For 1st. The Church in express words, teaches that repentance, charity, and the fear of God, are necessarily, inseparably, and always united with that faith which precedes justification. For thus the Homily on Salvation, (part 2,) explains the opinion of the Fathers who say, that men are justified by faith alone : “ Nevertheless this sentence, that we be justified by faith only, is not so meant of them, that the said justifying faith is alone in man, without true repentance, hope, charity, dread and the fear of God, at any time and season.” 2nd. Our Church every where inculcates repentance in particular, as a preceding disposition necessarily required to obtain pardon of sins. Of this, as many as six hundred proofs might be given ; but he who dares to doubt whether this be the doctrine of our Church, has too unworthy an opinion of her. 3rd. The works which the twelfth article of the Church affirms to be posterior to justification, are undoubtedly of the same kind with those which, in the immediately preceding words of the same article, are called the fruits of faith, and by which, in the end of the article, faith is said to be externally manifested. Now it is most certain, that our Church by ‘works,’ which she affirms to be the fruits and signs of faith, means external works only, which are conspicuous to men, and which externally prove the sincerity (otherwise known to God alone) of our faith, *i. e.* internal piety, that it may, in some measure, be perceived by men : for who in his senses would say that faith is shewn by the internal virtues of hope, contrition, charity, &c. as by signs ? surely these virtues are just as internal and unseen as faith itself. If you say that the Church here speaks of the notification of our faith, not to others, but to ourselves, we are just where we were, for our internal virtues, as well as our faith, are unknown even to ourselves. Therefore the sense of the Church is manifestly this, that true and lively faith, such namely as hath a sincere purpose of obedience, united with confidence in Christ, (for so our Church often professedly explains herself in the Homily on Faith, part 1.) is not shewn either to ourselves, or others, but by works corresponding to such faith. Does any

one still doubt? the Church affords him still farther information in the second part of the Homily on Faith, which is entirely on this subject. There, after having shewn in the first Homily, that lively faith comprehends hope, charity, and the fear of God, she proceeds to shew how each of these internal virtues must be proved and shewn by external acts corresponding to their nature. Among other things it is said, "Christ Himself hath taught that faith, hope, and charity cannot consist or stand without good and godly works." And in the conclusion, not only charity, but the fear of the Lord must be proved by good works, according to the saying of the Wise Man: "The dread of God putteth away sin;" Eccles. 1. 21; 15. 1. and again, "He that feareth the Lord will do good works." Who now doubts but that by these works the Church means only external works? for certainly the virtues of hope, charity, and the fear of God, are internal works.

§ 9. Fourthly and lastly. In this sense our Church clearly explains herself in the Homily on Good Works, where are quoted the words of Chrysostom<sup>o</sup>; "I can shew a man that by faith without works lived, and came to heaven; but without faith, never man had life. The thief that was hanged when Christ suffered, did believe only, and the most merciful God justified him. And because no man shall say again that he lacked time to do good works, for else he would have done them, truth it is, and I will not contend therein, but this I will surely affirm that faith only saved him. If he had lived, and not regarded faith and the works thereof, he should have lost his salvation again." Every one must see that here Chrysostom, and our Church after him, speaks only of external works, or pious actions; for first, these words are spoken of those works only, without which a faithful man may arrive at the kingdom of heaven; but without the internal virtues of faith, hope, and charity, no man can be saved, as all in their senses allow. Lastly, the thief suffering, together with our Saviour, on the cross, is here produced as an example<sup>p</sup>. But it is certain, that the thief was possessed not only of faith, but of repentance for his own sins, and sincere love towards Christ and his companion. Then those

<sup>o</sup> In Sermone de Fid. et Leg. et Sp. S. <sup>p</sup> Vide Davenant. Disput. de Just. Act. c. 30. in arg. ultimo. p. 390.

DISS.

II.

works only are here alluded to which a faithful person, through want of time and opportunity, sometimes cannot perform. Thus doth the Church explain the meaning of Chrysostom in the words immediately following: "Here ye have heard the mind of St. Chrysostom, whereby you may perceive that neither faith is without works—having opportunity thereto—nor works can avail to everlasting life without faith." Now external works only can want time and opportunity, to internal works there is no such obstacle. Thus elsewhere doth Chrysostom explain himself<sup>q</sup>: "Virtue of mind must be sought for, which God knows before works." Similar to which is the observation of Jerome<sup>r</sup>. "In the law works are required, which whoever does shall live in them. In the Gospel the will is required, which, although it cannot be put into execution, does not lose its reward." Grotius<sup>s</sup>, therefore, rightly observes, that in the words of the Fathers, when they say men are justified by faith even before works, that such faith must be understood as includes a design of obeying God and the Gospel, glowing with a love of God and our neighbour, if not the most perfect, at least sincere; which is called "believing with the whole heart." But such faith, Grotius continues, if death should immediately follow it, is said to be without works; not because unaccompanied by pious thoughts, and sometimes pious words and deeds, but because time does not allow of a conspicuous and continued course of well-doing. For 'works' (*τὰ ἔργα*) signify that which the Greek Fathers, particularly Chrysostom, often call (*πολιτεία*) 'conversation<sup>t</sup>.' But the sum of this doctrine that incomparable man hath elsewhere briefly and excellently explained in these words<sup>u</sup>: "Where faith arrives at that pitch as to beget a sincere purpose of obedience, which cannot be without love of God and our neighbour, although that love may arrive at a much higher degree of perfection, his sins, who is such, that is, has a perfected faith, *fides formata* as Catholics call it, a faith consisting not in the intellect only, but in the will, (as Melancthon

<sup>q</sup> In Rom. 9. 10. [Hom. 16. vol. 9. p. 612.] Hom. 6. Oxford Translation 1841. and note.—ED.)

<sup>r</sup> In Mat. 11. 30. [vol. 7. p. 74, 75.]

<sup>s</sup> In prior Annot. ad Jac. 2. 14.

<sup>t</sup> (Vid. Chrysost. in Rom. 2. 29.

<sup>u</sup> In Annot. ad Consult. Cassand. ad art. 4.

says,) his sins are forgiven ; and if he should die such, he would have a right to eternal life, because so it seemeth good to God, according to His great goodness. But if after this, life be granted to him, to retain that right, the continual practice of holiness, and particularly an abstinence from all those crimes<sup>x</sup> which injure the conscience, and exclude from the kingdom of heaven, must be observed ; for a complete pardon and right to eternal life is given on this law and condition. This is the doctrine of the Apostles, and all the Fathers.” I add, of our Church also, which constantly teaches, that the grace of justification, first obtained by a lively faith, cannot be preserved but by a continued course of good living. This is evident from the words of Chrysostom concerning the faithful thief above quoted, which our Church not only cites, but approves : “if he had lived, and not regarded faith, and the works thereof, he should have lost his salvation again.” So in the second part of the Homily on Salvation, this expression of the Fathers, ‘that we are justified freely,’ is thus explained : —“When they say that we should be justified freely, they do not mean that we should or might afterwards be idle, and that nothing should be required on our parts afterwards.” Lastly, our Church in the sixteenth article, expressly teaches, that after we have received the Holy Ghost, we may, by falling into sin, fall from grace. The divines of Augsburg deliver the same opinion in their eleventh article, where they condemn the Anabaptists, “who deny that those who are once justified can ever again lose the Holy Spirit.” And in the twentieth article, concerning the obedience of works, they teach, “that those who commit mortal sins are not righteous, because God requires this obedience, that we should resist wicked lusts ; but they who, instead of striving against them, obey them, contrary to the commands of God, and commit actions contrary to their conscience, they are unrighteous, and neither retain the Holy Spirit, nor faith, that is, the confidence of mercy.”

§ 10. I will finish this discussion with the words of a most learned and excellent Prelate of our Church, who both well knew and firmly retained the orthodox doctrine on this point,

<sup>x</sup> What these are, the following passages shew. 1 Cor. 6. 9, 10. Gal. 5. 19—21.

**D I S S.** and hath successfully defended it against the sophistry of <sup>II.</sup> Bellarmine, and other Roman Catholics. I mean Davenant, Bishop of Salisbury, who, in his very learned Disputations <sup>Chap. 31.</sup> concerning habitual and actual righteousness, thus explains and confirms, in two brief but clear theses, whatever we have advanced here and elsewhere in these Dissertations concerning the necessity of good works <sup>y</sup>.

“Conclusion 5th. Some good works are necessary unto justification as concurrent or foregoing conditions, although they are not necessary as efficient or meritorious causes. Among these good works I reckon those internal ones which are of great weight with God, although not perceptible by man, as grief for sin, hatred of it, a humble subjection to God, a flying to the mercy of God, hope in the mediation of Christ, an intention to lead a new life, and the like to these: for the divine mercy doth not justify stocks, that is, men who do nothing, nor horses and mules, *i. e.* men who resist the grace offered, and obstinately adhere to their own lusts, but men, and these when struck with compunction and sorrow, and following the guidance of the Word and the Holy Spirit.—And here let it be noticed, that when we say any thing to be necessary unto the obtaining this or that end, these words mean not a necessity of cause, but of order. Although, therefore, I should allow this proposition, ‘that good works are necessary unto justification,’ it cannot thence be inferred, that they are necessary as causes, much less as meritorious ones. For example: If I should say that to obtain the honour of knighthood it is necessary to go to the king’s palace, and kneel before him, it would be absurd for any one thence to conclude, that the mere going there and kneeling down, are the meritorious causes of obtaining that rank. In like manner must it be understood of all these works which on our part are said to be necessary to obtain justification.”

“Conclusion 6th. Good works are necessary to retain and preserve the state of justification, not as causes which by themselves effect and deserve this preservation, but as means and conditions, without which God will not preserve the grace of justification in men. And here these same works must be

<sup>y</sup> *Vide et cap. 30. Thes. 1. Arg. 2.*

regarded in the same point of view as those in the preceding conclusion; for as no one receives that general justification which frees from the guilt of all preceding sins, unless it be accompanied by repentance, faith, the purpose of a new life, and other actions of a like nature; so no person retains a state free from guilt, with respect to subsequent sins, unless the same actions intervene of believing in God, praying to Him, mortifying the flesh, daily repentance and sorrow for sins daily committed. The reason why, on our part, all these qualities are necessary, is this; that if these be always wanting, the vices opposite to them will begin to appear, which vices are repugnant to the nature of a justified person; for if you take away faith in God and prayer, contempt of the Deity and infidelity instantly succeed; if you take away mortification and the exercise of repentance, overpowering lusts, and sins polluting the conscience, rush in. Therefore, because God is unwilling that the unbelieving, the obstinate, and the carnal, should enjoy the benefit of justification; He requires daily works of faith, repentance and mortification, whose presence turn out, as it were, and keep away unbelief, obstinacy, presumption, and other things opposite to justifying grace, and particular pardon for particular sins is obtained.' Hence St. Paul says, 'If ye live after the flesh ye shall die;' Rom. 8. 13. and 'Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief in departing from the living God,'' &c. Heb. 3. 12. Thus have I shewn that the necessity of good works is taught fully in our Articles and Homilies, that henceforth no man, of the refuse of the Antinomians, may seek patronage for his dreadful heresy in the most holy doctrine of our Church.

§ 11. Moreover, in this question we must diligently guard against the Pelagian heresy; and the necessity of good works must be so understood, as at the same time to acknowledge, and that from the heart, that the assistance of a pre-disposing and all-powerful grace is indispensably necessary that any should perform works truly good, *i. e.* acceptable unto salvation. From grace, the beginning, increase, and completion of our righteousness flow. To sinners it gives faith and repentance, to the faithful a good life, to those who live aright perseverance, to the persevering the crown of righteousness. So that there is none unto whom this grace is not necessary

**D I S S.** for righteousness ; the sinner wants it that he may acquire righteousness ; the righteous that he may not lose it. So that the grace of God takes the lead in all men, and through all things. Therefore Cælestinus rightly observes to the Gallican Bishops<sup>z</sup>; “We confess God to be the cause of all good inclinations, works, designs, and virtues unto which a man is inclined from the very beginning of his faith, and we doubt not but that all human merits are produced from His grace.” The praise of divine grace fills every page of St. Paul’s Epistles ; and you would suppose them to have actually been written by a kind of prophetic anticipation against Pelagius. And St. James also, however strenuous an asserter he may be of good works, still openly acknowledges the thorough necessity of grace, the free gift of the Father from above, pointing it out as the only source of every saving virtue and good work. He also carefully warns all Christians to guard against the opposite error as most dangerous. The Synod at Orange hath therefore well remarked<sup>a</sup>; “If any one supposes that by the mere vigour of nature he can imagine any good thing, which may conduce to eternal life, or choose any such thing, or even consent unto any wholesome, *i. e.* evangelical preaching, he is evidently without the illumination and inspiration of the Holy Ghost, is deceived by a heretical spirit, not understanding the word of God,

**Chap. 1.  
16—18.** John 15.5. saying in the Gospel, ‘Without Me ye can do nothing.’

**2 Cor. 3. 5.** And that of the Apostle, ‘Not that we are sufficient of ourselves, to think any thing as of ourselves, but our sufficiency is of God.’” And<sup>b</sup> “A man has nothing of his own but falsehood and sin ; but if any man has truth and righteousness, he has it from that fountain for which we ought to thirst in this desert, that being sprinkled by some drops from it we faint not by the way.”

§ 12. Mistrusting then our own strength, let us worship God the Father as the source of every thing good ; let us embrace Christ as the channel of grace, through and for whom the Father pleases it should be derived to us ; let us continually cleave to Him, and from His fulness, by constant prayer, draw “grace for grace ;” let us depend solely on

<sup>z</sup> Ch. 12. [Vide Cassiani Opera, ed. 1628, p. 905.]

<sup>a</sup> Can. 7. [Vide Cassiani Opera, p. 939.]

<sup>b</sup> Can. 22. See 10th and 16th articles of our Church.

Him ; let us lift up our eyes unto Him as “the Author and Finisher of our faith.” Our house, built on this foundation, CHAP.  
XVIII.  
Heb. 12. 2. will be immoveable ; but if we depend on our own strength, it will be without foundation, and however magnificent in the eyes of men, will quickly fall to utter ruin. “Let therefore” (to use the blessed Jerome’s <sup>c</sup> words) “our whole discourse be a prayer to God ; let every prayer and petition demand the clemency of our Creator, that we, who cannot be preserved by our own strength and endeavours, may be saved by His mercy.”

§ 13. Fourthly and lastly. Whilst we avoid Pelagianism, by acknowledging the necessity of grace, let us take care, on the other hand, that we fall not into the abyss of Manichæan folly, by taking away free will, and the co-operation of human industry. The middle, the royal way must here be chosen, so as to turn neither to the left hand nor to the right, which will be done if we suppose that with grace, but in subjection to it, the freedom of the will amicably unites. This saying of Augustine’s <sup>d</sup> is common, and well known : “If there be no grace of God, how can He save the world ? and if there be no free will, how can He judge it ?” In like manner Bernard <sup>e</sup> : “Take away free will, and nothing is left to be saved : take away grace, and there is nothing left which can save.” Therefore we must not so urge the liberty of the will as to be hostile to grace, nor so preach up grace as to take away free will. It is hard to say from which of these two errors the greatest dangers arise. “Let not,” Vossius well observes <sup>f</sup>, “Let not our idleness be increased by him who denies free will, nor our pride by him who is ignorant of the gift of grace. In answer to both there must be equally preached the justice of God, which assuredly cannot exist without free will, and His mercy, which the enemies of grace would undermine.” But greater danger seems to be threatened by a denial of free will than of grace ; as that learned man observes ; “for this last error is so very gross as always to be evident ; and the light of the Gospel is so clearly given on this subject, that it can infect none but the unlearned and profane, whom ignorance and self-confidence easily seduce ;

<sup>c</sup> Lib. iii. Dialog. adv. Pelag. p. 302.  
[§ 10, vol. ii. p. 779.]

<sup>d</sup> Epist. 46. ad Valent. [Ep. 214, 2.  
vol. ii. p. 791.]

<sup>e</sup> De gratia et lib. art. [Op. ed. 1586,  
p. 1177.]

<sup>f</sup> Hist. Pelag. i. 1. [vol. vi. p. 553.]

**DISS.** especially if the pride of worldly glory be added. But all modest and pious men are more subject to the heresies of those who, like the Chaldeans, concerning whom John of Salisbury speaks in his *Polycraticon*, ‘impose a kind of fatal necessity on affairs, under pretence of humility and reverence to God, fearing lest His providence should be disputable, unless a necessity accompanied the course of affairs.’ Which error, concealed by the veil of humility and piety, has, in proportion to its secrecy, the more dangerous effect upon the minds of men.” Excellent, indeed, are the words of Augustine, which are praised by the same great man<sup>g</sup>, “Some are exalted to be proud by a too great confidence in their own will, and some are cast into negligence by a too great diffidence of their will. The former say, Why should we beg of God that we be not conquered by temptation, when this is in our power? The latter, Why should we endeavour to live well since this is in the power of God only? O God and Father, Which art in heaven, lead us into neither of these temptations, but deliver us from evil.” Truly then, and according to the sense of all the Fathers (in Grotius’s opinion) hath Tertullian said<sup>h</sup>, “It is not the part of a good and sound faith to be perpetually referring to the will of God, and so to flatter one’s self by saying, that nothing is done without His permission, as if we knew not that there was something in ourselves. But every thing will be excused if we maintain that nothing is done in us without the will of God,” that is, as Grotius rightly says, without His predisposing will.

**Chap. 2.  
12, 13.** § 14. But perfectly divine is that advice of St. Paul’s to the Philippians, “Work out your own salvation with fear and trembling; for it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure:” which is, Work out your salvation with the greatest modesty and humility of mind,—for so some of the Fathers interpret “with fear and trembling,” as if it were the same as, with lowliness, (*μετὰ ταπεινοφροσύνης*)—since you can do nothing of yourselves in the work of your salvation, but it is necessary that the grace of God should work in you and with you. Or, Work out your salvation with great fear and anxiety, lest you should be

<sup>g</sup> In Johan. Homil. 53. [§ 8. vol. iii. pt. 2. p. 647.] <sup>h</sup> De Exhortatione Castitatis, p. 519.

wanting to the grace of God, and extinguish His Spirit, which, if It should desert and leave you, would entirely destroy your salvation. Or, Work out your salvation with care and diligence, and be not afraid lest you should not have strength to fulfil what I recommend, for God worketh with you in this matter, and is ready of His goodness to assist you in overcoming all difficulties. In whatever manner you interpret these words of the Apostle, they totally overturn the irresistible operation of grace ; for unto what purpose would be this grave exhortation of the Apostle's, that we should work out our own salvation, if we could not work ?

§ 15. Exactly to define and to lay down the manner of the concurrence of divine grace with the will of man, to say what grace can do alone, and what free will, in conjunction with and subjection to grace, is a matter of no small difficulty ; and by many learned and pious men hath been reckoned among the deep and unsearchable things of God. Therefore by the authority and great wisdom of our excellent King, it was ordered, that none of our divines in their sermons should attempt to explain this inscrutable mystery. But although we be ignorant of the manner, the thing itself must be firmly believed.

§ 16. These, then, are the observations, my Christian reader, which I thought it necessary particularly to impress on your mind, lest you should either mistake the meaning of these Dissertations, or, in this matter of the highest importance, at the hazard of your salvation, err from the truth.

This be thy wisdom, Epicurus' care  
To seek where's 'vacuum,' and what 'atoms' are.

Scholastic difficulties, laborious trifles, and learned follies, leave to those who delight in such things. You, if you know these things, will be wise ; if you do them, happy.

To the Triune God, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, be all honour, glory, and praise for ever and ever. Amen.



## THE AUTHOR'S POSTSCRIPT

TO THE

READER,

SUBJOINED TO THE FIRST EDITION OF THESE DISSERTATIONS.

You must know, kind reader, that these Dissertations, together with the Preface prefixed to them, were written and sent to the press some years ago, when I was quite young. This is not the place for saying why they were published so late. I am now almost sorry that I even, at last, allowed an early unfinished work to be published, especially as the subject required a more experienced judgment and greater care. But I am much distressed that the production, of itself but too imperfect, and sufficiently declaring the inability of its Author, should be disgraced by such bad mistakes, if they are not worse than mistakes, of the press, both in the pointing and in the text. I was not, however, able to correct the sheets myself, and it is not surprising that my hand-writing, which is very illegible when I write in a hurry, should have puzzled the compositor.

These mistakes, then, can be only remedied by my readers' kindness, and I earnestly beg them favourably to accept this my first attempt in Theological studies, not refusing the trouble of correcting for themselves the most important errors of the press which are here noted, and to forgive me for any others which, in the review I have hastily made, may have escaped my notice. Again farewell.



## INDEX.

---

### A.

*Abraham*, justified not by faith alone, but by obedience, 44. called the friend of God, 45. not justified by works, i. e. done by his own strength, 152, 153. his righteousness subsequent to his faith, 154. his faith opposed only to those of his works done without grace, 155. had no cause for boasting, 156. an idolater prior to his call, 158, 159. deserved nothing of God, *ib.* why used as an example by St. James and St. Paul, 160. descent from, useless without his obedience, 192.

*Alms*, their efficacy in obtaining pardon, 15. required by the Ancient Church previous to absolution, and called *ἀριθμοπλα*, *ib.*

*Althamer*, blasphemy of, 4.

*Anabaptists*, condemned by the Confession of Augsburg, 213.

*Antinomians*, whence they arose, 21. entirely deny necessity of good works, 208. find no support in the teaching of our Church, 215.

*Assent*, found in devils, 23. alone will not produce piety, *ib.*

*Assurance* absolute, doctrine of, great disgrace of Reformed Churches, 26. not an act of justifying faith, *ib.*

*Astrology*, dangers arising from, 178. opposed by St. James, 179.

*Ἄβρος ἐγώ*, meaning of the phrase, 112.

### B.

*Basil, St.*, rejected the opinion that the precepts of the law were impossible as blasphemous, 86.

*Bucer*, wherein to be praised, 53.

### C.

*Cameron*, weakness of his arguments, 35, 36, 37. dogma about knowledge, 23. reprobated by Episcopius, *ib.*

*Christ*, His vindication of the law, 21. explained the moral law, *ib.* requires its observance, *ib.* has not freed us from obedience, 209. His merits have obtained grace for us, but not a release from obedience, *ib.*

*Christian*, his contest victorious through grace, 115.

*Christians*, to be judged by the law of the Gospel, 29. freed from the dominion of sin, 99. more required of, than of Jews, 168.

*Circumcision* of the heart, the gift of the Holy Spirit, 135, 136. necessity of opposed by St. Paul, 166. not necessary to justification, *ib.* of the heart necessary to Christians, 166, 168.

*Clement, S.*, of Rome, testimony to St. Paul's teaching, 160.

*Communion* with God impossible without holiness, 18.

*Conference* at Ratisbon, 201.

*Confession* of Augsburg, the most ancient and best, 197—203. of the Saxon Churches, 203.

*Confidence*, nature of Christian, 24—27. conditional, 25. useless without love, *ib.* common to good and bad, 27. danger of trusting in it, *ib.* comes from a good conscience, 28.

*Contrition*, without faith called attrition, 204.

*Covenant*, Mosaic, its twofold defect, 78. of Sinai, contained no promise of the Holy Spirit, 133. made Deut. 30. 6. not the same with that of Sinai, 134, 135. this the foretaste of

the Gospel covenant (see Jer. 31. 31, Heb. 8. 8.) 135. Hebrew doctors refer it to the times of the Messiah, 136.

*Crocius Ludovic*, explanation of faith, 206.

## D.

*Davenant*, on good works, 214, 215.  
*Decalogue*, perfected and explained by Christ, 20.

*Devils*, no real virtue, and so no true faith, 49. must believe, *ib.*  
*Δεύτερον τάγμα*, meaning of, 176.

## E.

*Ebion*, preferred Moses to Christ, 133.  
*Epicurus* laughed at a notion of a future life, 127.  
*Essenes*, hardly to be accounted Jews, 173. their manner of life, *ib.*  
'Ἐκ ἔργων,' by works,' how used by St. James, 10, 16.

## F.

*Faith*, in what sense said to be the instrument of justification, 17. wherein superior to all other virtues, 18. the root and source of all goodness, 18. not considered in Scripture as a single work, *ib.* three acts of, Knowledge, Assent, Confidence, 23. perfected by works, 31. the same to the soul as breath to the body, 51. difference between perfected (*formata*) and imperfected (*informis*), 53. of miracles the highest, 59. whether it can be separated from love, 60. expresses easiness of the condition, 66. excludes all merit, 68, 69. 156. implies divine revelation and aid, 69. obedience if opposed to natural righteousness, 70. expects its reward only from free gift of God, *ib.* refers all to Christ, 71. obedience to the Gospel, of which it is the root and foundation, 147. obedience of, excludes merit, 156. presupposes a divine revelation, *ib.* establishes the law by obtaining grace, 165. instrumentality of, above other virtues, not taught by our Church, 205. a service, receives what God offers, 206. not to be separated from repentance, love, &c. 210, 211. how far without works is accepted, 212. teaching of the Fathers on this point, *ib.* does not so refer all things to God's will

as to forget we have a will also, 218.

*Familists*, origin of their errors, 21.  
*Fate* (see Pharisees).

'*Father of lights*,' how used by St. James, 180, 181.

'*Flesh*,' the powers of nature without grace, 152. opposed to Spirit, grace, &c. *ib.*

*Free-will*, does not diminish the power of grace, 144. corrupt opinions of the Jews on, 169. more mistaken than those of the heathens, *ib.*

## G.

*Galatians*, greatly corrupted by Judaism, 74.

*God*, can be obeyed with all our strength, 85. commands nothing impossible, 86. approval of His law common to good and bad, 107. purpose in giving the Mosaic law, 137. His design in the strictness of the law, 167. alone the Author of any good in us, 181. a debtor not to us, but to Himself, 196. hath made Himself so by His promises, *ib.* requires daily exercise of good works &c. 215.

*Good*, difference between 'willing' and 'doing,' 105. delight in it found in the unregenerate, 108.

*Gospel*, bestows eternal pardon, 8. better hope of the, 122. the ministration of the Spirit, 133.

*Gnostics*, 191, 192.

*Grace*, can be given before justification, 162. denial of this almost blasphemy, *ib.* restores the law to its true position, 165. necessary alike to all, to the most holy, to the greatest sinner, 216. concurrence of with free-will a mystery not to be explained, though firmly believed, 218, 219.

*Grotius*, wrong in his interpretation of the word 'to justify,' 6. opinion on faith, 63.

## H.

*Herod*, example of a wicked person delighted in good, 108.

## I.

*Idolatry*, the greatest of sins, 158.  
*Immortality*, brought to light by the Gospel, 127.

'*Impute*,' 'imputation,' meaning of the words, 8. 155.

*Inconsistency* of those who reject the true doctrine of justification, 40.

## J.

*James, St.* doctrine of justification found in every page of Holy Scripture, 11. taught expressly by our Saviour, 12. and by the Apostles, 13. does not speak of justification before men, 44, 45. that he speaks of a false faith refuted, 49. meaning of a dead faith, compares it to a dead body, 80.

*Jews*, rested in an external and defective righteousness, 182, 183. satisfied with a negative religion, 183, 184. and a mere abstinence from gross crimes, 184. neglected the errors of the heart, 184, 185. held that the observance of one precept merited salvation, 186, 187. such notions rebuked and denounced by our Lord, 187. supposed they were at liberty to make choice of the commandments, 188. adherence to traditional rites, *ib.* substituted these for love and holiness, 189. false notions of the Messiah, 189, 190. really Solifidians, as such reproved by St. Paul, 190, 191.

*John of Salisbury*, 218.

*Judaism*, attacked by St. Paul, 73. dreadful effects of, on the Christian Churches, 74.

*Judas*, example of contrition without faith, 204.

*Judgment* last, according to works, 28.

*Justify*, meaning of the word, 6. used in a judicial sense, *ib.*

*Justification*, subsequent to sanctification, 14. analogous to a human trial, 19. contains three things, *ib.* declarative, 29. active or habitual, *ib.* division of, into first and second, contrary to the meaning of the Apostles, 54, 55. a continued not an instantaneous act, 44, 162. preserved only by a course of holiness, 162. 213.

## K.

*Kimchi's* perversion of Ps. 66. 18. 185.

*Knowledge*, found in the worst of men, 23. that called by the schoolmen *cognitio affectiva*, 65. words denoting, generally include its effects, 146.

## L.

*Law*, affords only temporal forgiveness, 8. 93. by which Christians will be tried, 20. why a law of liberty, *ib.* righteousness of the, confers merit, 70. moral and ritual, 77. did not require a perfect obedience, 79. type **BULL.**

of the Gospel and therefore imperfect, 81. permitted sins, *ib.* possibility of fulfilling the, no new opinion, 85. no promise of a perfect remission, 91. no promise of grace, 95. could not repress men's lusts, 96. Christians freed from its carnal ceremonies, 97. indirectly excited sin, 98. its precepts carnal, promised temporal, 121. wanted the gifts of the Holy Spirit, 131. ministry of the letter and of death, 132. restricted by Augustine to the covenant of Sinai, 137. only pointed out grace, did not bestow it, 165. its strictness a type of Gospel righteousness, 168. completed and fulfilled in the Gospel, 190.

*Libertines*, origin of their errors, 21.

*Life*, indications of a future in the Old Testament scanty and obscure, 123. foreshadowed in types, 124. doctrine of a future, taught more clearly in later times, 126.

*Love*, the form of justifying faith, 25. necessary for the perfection of all good works, 37.

*Luther* taught that no law was given to Christians, 21. none imposed as a condition of salvation, *ib.*

## M.

*Maimonides*, error respecting free will, 169—171. his principle of self-power, *ib.* he opposed the doctrines of fate and necessity, 172.

*Man*, 'inward' and 'new' not the same, 109. inward the mind or intellect, *ib.*

*Manichæan* heresy to be avoided, 217. more dangerous than Pelagianism, 217, 218.

*Melancthon*, explanation of the word faith, 203. his teaching sound, 204. perverted and misunderstood by later Protestants, 205. Apology for the Augsburg Confession, 206.

*Modesty*, the soul of Christianity, 195.

*Mortification*, daily practice, one of the indispensable means of keeping from sin, 215.

*Mosaic* rites not necessary for justification, 166.

## O.

*Obedience*, necessity of, 60, 61. not an impossible condition, 62.

'Only,' reasons for retaining the word, 201. used by the ancient Church, not to be neglected because abused, 202, 203.

## P.

*Parœus'* arguments on Rom. 7. discussed and refuted, 102—113. would exclude works of faith from justification, 149.

*Paul, St.* rejects some works entirely from justification, 38. to be interpreted by St. James, 57. denotes by faith the whole Gospel covenant, 58. explains faith by obedience, *ib.* why he speaks of faith only, 64. aim in arguing against works, 72. Rabbinical additions rejected by, 75. excludes works of the natural law, 76. opposes Gentile philosophy, *ib.* how far he excludes moral works of the law, 77, 78. teaches perfect obedience, 84. frequently speaks in another's person, 102. not speaking of himself or of any regenerate person, Rom. 7. 92, 117. his meaning of being 'without the law,' 104. his thanksgiving, Rom. 7. 25. how to be understood, 111. distinguishes between 'works' and 'good works,' 143. speaks (Rom. 4.) of Abraham before his call, 150. supports and strengthens St. James' doctrine, 163. reasons for speaking so strongly against the law, 193.

*Pelagian* heresy, caution against, 215. *Pharisees*, their doctrine of fate, 174. difference of opinions as to their notion of fate, *ib.* divided all events between three causes, *ib.* virtually did away with free will, 177. doctrine of fate made God the author of sin, 179.

*Piety*, why called knowledge, 65. none without knowledge of God and His will, *ib.*

*Placeus*, notion of a twofold accusation unfounded, 56.

*Πολιτεῖα*, how used by the Fathers, 212.

*Prayer*, not expressly commanded in the law, 120.

*Procrustes*, 182.

*Protestants*, teaching of the first, sound, 206.

*Pythagoræans*, doctrine of metempsychosis, 127.

## R.

*Remission* of sins, none without obedience, 27. of sins given only to the guileless and loving, 161.

*Repentance*, not a single work, 14, 15. necessary for justification, 14. unavailing without alms, 15. necessarily subsequent to faith, 16.

*Resurrection* of Christ the earnest of a future life, 130.

*Righteousness*, absolute, impossible to man in this life, 80. that not 'in us' but 'of us,' called our own, 146. attained only by the Gospel, 163. fulfilled in us through the Spirit, 164.

*Rites* of the law completed, fulfilled by Christ, 72.

## S.

*Sadducees*, did not reject the prophetic books, 128. maintained the doctrine of free will independent of grace, 173. maintained absolute 'self power' of the will, 182.

*Sacrifices*, their effects only temporal and external, 93.

*Saints*, extremely few under the old covenant, 88. 139. most of these guilty of some sin, 89. of the Old Testament looked forward to a future life, 125. inferior to the early Christians, 139.

*Salvation*, absurdity of hoping for, without performing the conditions, 209.

*Saul*, example of contrition without faith, 204.

*Sin*, hated of, found in heathens, 106.

*Solifidian*s, deny the necessity of good works, 208.

*Soul*, Platonic notions of the, 127. Pharisees maintained, Sadduces rejected its immortality, 128.

*Spirit* Holy, given of old by measure, 138. to Christians abundantly, 164. miraculous outpouring a testimony to the doctrine of justification by faith, 140, 141. those under, cannot obey the flesh, 116.

*Stoics*, doctrine of the (*ἐκπίρωσις*), conflagration of souls, 127.

*Synod* of Dort, 144. of Orange, 216.

*Συνήδομαι τῷ νόμῳ*, 108.

## T.

*Talmudists*, absurd notions about a future life, 129.

*Testament*, Old, divided into two parts, 123, 134.

*Thief*, case of the penitent explained, 211.

*Truth* compels her opponents to use her own words, 32.

## W.

*Works*, those performed by our own powers alone occasion boasting, 134.

cannot be good without the freedom of the will, 144. done without grace alone rejected from justification, 145. performed by grace cannot interfere with grace, 149. condignity of, to be rejected, 195. merit of, alone opposed by our Church, 207. internal only, necessary to the first justification, 209. impossible to be good without grace, 213.

—, *good*, not the meritorious cause of justification, 10. not merely signs of faith, 30. not of themselves

deserving of eternal life, 31. obtain a right to eternal life, 39. performed by the grace of God, 143. can precede justification, 161. denial of this false and dangerous, *ib.* cannot precede the grace of God, 162. necessity of, taught by our Church, 209—215. necessary as means and conditions, 214.

“*Worketh he that,*” he who works without grace, 157.

“*By Works,*” signifies the indispensable condition, 10.

---

FATHERS QUOTED AND REFERRED TO BY BP. BULL  
IN THIS VOLUME.

- St. Ambrose, 151.  
St. Augustine, 55, 57, 83, 90, 99, 113, 123, 161, 165, 218.  
St. Basil, 86.  
St. Bernard, 196, 217.  
St. Clement of Rome, 68, 160.  
St. Clement of Alexandria, 184.  
St. Chrysostom, 86, 103, 165, 211, 212.  
St. Cyprian, 195.  
St. Epiphanius, 178.  
Fulgentius, 196.  
St. Irenæus, 192.  
St. Jerome, 103, 212, 217.  
Justin Martyr, 68, 72, 85, 128, 167, 178.  
Lactantius, 106.  
Origen, 90, 110, 113, 151.  
Tertullian, 110, 218.  
Theophylact, 188.

## INDEX OF TEXTS

CITED, EXPLAINED, AND REFERRED TO IN THIS VOLUME.

---

GENESIS.		II. CHRONICLES.	
15. 16.	44.	15. 12.	85.
EXODUS.		16.	89.
1. 17.	121.	35. 22.	89.
20. 6.	15.	JOB.	
— 7.	93.	38. 7.	180.
23. 25.	120.	PSALMS.	
— 25, 26.	123.	1. 2.	107.
34. 7.	161.	5. 4, 5.	161.
LEVITICUS.		9. 4, 5, 8.	161.
6. 1—7.	15.	14. 2, 3.	89.
— 2—4.	93.	— 4.	64.
18. 5.	93, 121.	32. 1, 2.	161.
26. 3.	123.	51. 17.	204.
NUMBERS.		53. 4.	60.
6. 22—27.	120.	66. 18.	185.
15. 25, 26.	92.	119. 77, 103.	107.
— 22—29.	81.	— 126.	75.
DEUTERONOMY.		138. 3.	181.
2. 11, 20.	156.	145. 14, 15.	89.
6. 5.	84.	PROVERBS.	
7. 12, 13.	123.	17. 15.	7, 161.
24. 1, 2.	81, 123.	28. 13.	15.
26. 12—15.	120.	31. 10.	179.
27.	82.	ECCLESIASTES.	
29. 1, 4, 12, 13.	134, 136.	1. 9.	175.
30. 6, 10, 11, 16,	85, 134, 135, 136.	ISAIAH.	
20.		1. 16—18.	12, 15.
JOSHUA.		43. 22.	64.
24. 2, 3.	158, 159.	48. 22.	161.
JUDGES.		57. 21.	161.
8. 19.	121.	58. 11.	65.
II. SAMUEL.		66. 23.	88.
19. 19.	156.	JEREMIAH.	
I. KINGS.		31. 31, 32.	135.
8. 32.	161.	— 33, 34.	136.
— 46.	89.	EZEKIEL.	
14. 8.	85.	4. 13.	122.
15. 5.	89.	6. 9.	15.
II. KINGS.		20. 43.	15.
23. 35.	85.	33. 14—16.	12, 15.
		36. 31.	15.
		43. 19.	122.

DANIEL.		
4. 27.	15.	8. 34. 138. 5. 35. 108. — 39, 40. 130, 189.
	JOEL.	7. 38, 39. 138. 8. 19, 55. 65. — 24. 24. 9. 39—41. 90, 189.
2. 28.	88, 136.	13. 7. 2. 14. 21. 6, 62. — 23. 12. 15. 3—10. 162.
	ECCLESIASTICUS.	— 14. 13. — 22, 24. 90. 17. 3. 65.
	WISDOM.	
3. 2.	122.	
II. MACCABEES.		ACTS.
7. 9, 23, 26.	126.	2. 17. 89, 138. — 38. 14. 3. 19. 14. 7. 2, 3. 156. 8. 22. 15. — 37. 212. 10. 34, 35. 13. — 46. 141. 11. 23. 15. 13. 38, 39. 7, 95. 15. 8. 140. 16. 4, 5. 74. 17. 18. 128. — 31. 130. 26. 5. 75.
MATTHEW.		ROMANS.
3. 8—10.	192.	1. 5. 59. 2. 5, 6, 12, 13, 16. 30. — 9—13. 192. — 12. 29, 103. — 6—11. 61. — 13. 9, 60, 77. — 14, 15, 26, 27. 88. — 17, ad fin. 192. — 28, 29. 167. 3. 87, 103. — 4. 9. — 10—20. 79, 91. — 9, 19, 23. 88, 90. — 21. 134. — 24, 25. 71. 27. 19, 143, 153, 158. — 28. 38, 43. — 31. 77, 165.
— 18.	16.	4. 1. 150. — 2. 143. — 1—3. 154. — 5. 38, 158. — 9. 166. — 11. 141. — 15. 121. — 20, 21, 24. 24. — 25. 96.
5.	75.	5. 1. 9. — 2, 3, 11. 153. — 16, 18. 7. — 20. 103.
— 7.	72.	
— 19, 20.	21, 187, 193.	
— 21, 22, 27, 28.	185.	
6. 14, 15.	15.	
7. 21—24.	20, 62.	
9. 10—12.	189.	
10. 41, 42.	37.	
11. 11.	139.	
— 28, 29.	13.	
12. 36, 37.	7, 30.	
13. 17.	139.	
— 20.	108.	
16. 17.	152.	
18. 32—35.	162.	
19. 3.	31.	
22. 18.	129.	
— 31, 32.	124.	
23. 23.	188.	
— 25—28.	185.	
25. 21, 23, 34, 35.	30.	
MARK.		
6. 20.	108.	
7. 3—5, 8—11.	188, 189.	
9. 41.	37.	
LUKE.		
1. 30.	150.	
7. 29.	9.	
10. 29.	9.	
12. 4, 5.	109.	
16. 13, 14.	185.	
18. 9, 10.	185.	
— 11, 12.	184.	
— 14.	9.	
19. 8, 9.	15.	
JOHN.		
1. 10.	65.	
— 16.	138.	
— 17.	133.	
3. 2.	88.	

6.	146.	7.	1.	124.
— 1.	150.	— 10.		14.
— 16.	62.	— 15.		59.
— 18, 19.	101.	10. 5, 6.		59.
7. 5.	120.	— 17.		153.
— 5, 6.	96.	12.		97.
— 7.	77, 91, 98, 150.	— 9.		36.
— 8.	98.			
— 8—11.	121.			
— 14.	88, 98, 101, 132, 133.	1. 14.		76, 189.
— 15.	98, 114.	— 16.		152.
— 16.	99, 107.	2. 15.		159.
— 18.	114.	— 18.		103.
— 22.	107, 109, 110, 164.	— 20.		157.
— 23.	101, 109, 114, 164.	3. 2.		140.
— 25.	110, 111, 164.	— 3, 4.		162.
8. 1.	101, 117, 164.	3. 5.		140.
— 2.	102, 132, 164.	— 10.		79, 82, 87, 92, 138, 188
— 3.	96, 111, 120.	— 12.		
8. 4.	111.	— 13.		121.
— 13.	215.	— 14.		92.
— 14.	117.	— 15.		70, 84, 132, 133.
— 24.	121.	— 16.		122.
— 33.	6.	— 17.		134, 137.
9. 6.	192.	— 18.		70.
— 11.	68, 148.	— 19.		137.
10. 3.	76, 146.	— 21.		121.
— 4.	190.	4. 24.		123.
— 6.	66, 135, 136.	5. 6.		58, 63, 166, 167.
— 16.	58.	— 9.		74.
11. 6.	149.	— 12.		74.
— 8.	140.	— 16.		58.
— 19—22.	162.	— 17.		113, 114, 115.
— 33.	137.	— 18.		117.
— 35.	157.	— 19—21.		213.
13. 10.	62.	— 24.		117.
16. 19, 26.	59.	6. 7.		130.
		— 8.		31.
		— 15.		166, 167.
<b>I. CORINTHIANS.</b>				
1. 23.	190.	<b>EPHESIANS.</b>		
— 31.	153.	1. 13.		141.
3. 9.	35.	2. 8—10.		40, 147.
— 13.	30.	— 9, 10.		143.
4. 4.	7, 30.	— 12.		127.
— 5.	30.	4. 30.		141.
6. 9, 10.	180, 213.			
— 11.	7, 14.	<b>PHILIPPIANS.</b>		
— 12, 15.	103.	2. 12.		31.
7. 19.	58, 167.	— 13.		101.
9. 20, 21.	103.	— 21.		89.
10. 23, 29, 30.	103.	3. 2.		74, 167.
13. 2.	23, 59.	— 3.		167.
— 13.	18, 31, 63.	— 4, 6, 7.		183.
15. 10.	157.	— 8.		65, 145, 146, 193.
— 33.	180.	— 9.		145.
		4. 13.		101.
<b>II. CORINTHIANS.</b>				
1. 4.	39.	<b>COLOSSIANS.</b>		
— 22.	141.	2. 11—13.		167.
3. 3.	132.			
— 6, 7.	121, 131, 132.	<b>II. THESSALONIANS.</b>		
4. 17.	31.	1. 7.		39.
6. 16, 18.	124.			

<b>II. TIMOTHY.</b>		<b>2. 13.</b>	<b>15.</b>
1. 9.	68, 148.	— 17.	50.
— 10.	127.	— 18.	44.
4. 8.	39, 196.	— 20.	38, 50.
		— 21.	48.
		— 22.	31, 48.
		— 24.	43, 48.
3. 5.	40, 143, 146, 147.	3. 2.	83.
— 6.	138, 146, 147.	4. 8.	122.
		— 10.	15.
<b>HEBREWS.</b>		<b>I. PETER.</b>	
3. 12.	215.	1. 2.	14, 59.
— 14.	162.	— 3.	69.
5. 9.	94.	— 10—12.	139.
6. 10.	39.	— 22.	59.
7. 11.	93.	— 23, 25.	69.
— 18.	96.	3. 4.	109.
— 19.	93, 96, 122.		
8.	123.	<b>II. PETER.</b>	
— 8.	135.	1. 4.	69.
— 7, 9.	96.	3. 16.	57.
— 10, 11.	165.		
9.	93.	<b>I. JOHN.</b>	
— 12.	94.	1. 7.	13.
— 13.	93.	— 8.	89, 90.
10.	81, 93.	— 9.	15.
— 6.	96.	— 10.	89.
— 14.	13.	2. 1, 2.	89, 90.
— 23, 24, 26.	162.	— 3, 4.	65.
— 35, 36.	162.	— 13, 14, 20.	65.
11. 1.	24, 121.	— 29.	10.
— 6.	37, 53.	3. 3.	66.
— 8.	44.	— 7.	10, 180.
— 16.	124.	— 19, 20.	27.
— 19.	125.	4. 6—8.	65.
— 35.	126.	5. 3, 4, 5.	24, 67.
12. 2.	216.	— 20.	65.
— 9.	181.		
13. 11.	96.	<b>II. JOHN.</b>	
		Ver. 8.	162.
<b>JAMES.</b>		<b>REVELATIONS.</b>	
1. 16—18.	216.	7. 14, 15.	31.
— 18.	69, 181.	21. 3, 7.	124.
— 13—19.	179.	22. 11.	9.
— 16.	180.	— 14.	39.
— 22.	62.		
2. 10, 11.	82, 187.		
— 12.	20.		

E R R A T A.

Page 52, l. 1, for for read that.

- 10, margin, read See 1 John 2. 29 ; 3. 7.
- 59, read Rom. 1. 5 ; 16. 19. 26.
- 123, read Gal. 4. 24, and Deut. 21. 2.
- 75, read Acts 26. 5.
- 44, read Jas. 2. 18.
- 146, Running Heading, prefix Of.
- 160, Note p, read c. 32.



## LIBRARY OF ANGLO-CATHOLIC THEOLOGY.

### Rules.

1. THAT the Library consist of scarce and valuable Works, such as those of the Authors in the annexed List, maintaining and inculcating the Doctrines and Discipline of the Anglican branch of the Catholic and Apostolic Church.
2. That each Subscriber pay yearly One Guinea *in advance*, to be due on the first day of each year, which shall entitle him to a copy of each Book at one half the publication price; or Two Guineas, which shall entitle him to all Publications, free of cost.
3. That all Subscriptions be considered due for the ensuing year, unless notice shall have been given by letter to the Secretary, before the first day of January, of the Subscriber's intention to withdraw his name.
4. That the whole management of the Fund subscribed be entrusted to a Committee, consisting of not less than twelve nor more than twenty-four Subscribers, who shall fill up all vacancies that may occur in their own body.
5. That no alteration of any kind be made in the original Text of any of the Works re-published.
6. That no Subscriber be entitled to any Book, until his Subscription be paid.

*It is proposed to publish in each year Six Volumes, (of 400 pages on the average).*

*Persons wishing to become Subscribers are requested to send their own names and those of their Booksellers under cover to the Secretary, C. Crawley, Esq., or to the Publisher, Mr. Parker, Bookseller, Oxford.*

Subscriptions received by Mr. J. H. Parker, or by Messrs. Parsons, Thompson, and Co., Oxford: Messrs. Rivington, St. Paul's Church Yard, and Waterloo Place; Mr. Burns, 17, Portman Street, Portman Square; and Messrs. Coutts and Co., Strand, London: Messrs. Deighton, Mr. Stevenson, and Messrs. Mortlocks and Co., Cambridge: Messrs. Grant and Bolton, Dublin: or by the Treasurer: who will also receive Donations in aid of the objects of the undertaking.

## LIST OF AUTHORS.

Bishop Andrewes.	Bishop Lloyd.
Archbishop Bancroft.	Marshall's Penl. Disc.
Bishop Beveridge.	Mason, Fr.
Archbishop Bramhall.	Maurice, H.
Brett, Thomas.	Bishop Montague.
Brevint.	Bishop Morton.
Brown, Thomas.	Bishop Nicolson (Gloucester).
Bishop Buckeridge.	Bishop Overall.
Bishop Bull.	Bishop Patrick.
Burscough.	Bishop Pearson.
Cave.	Prideaux on English Ordinations.
Bishop Cosin.	Rogers's, John, Vis. Church.
Courayer on English Ordinations.	Bishop Sage.
Dodwell, H.	Sall, Dr.
Farindon, A.	Archbishop Sancroft.
Bishop Ferne.	Bishop Sanderson.
Bishop Gunning.	Saywell.
Bishop Hall.	Spelman, Sir H.
Hammond.	Scrivener, Matt.
Heylin.	Bishop Stillingfleet.
Hickes.	Bishop Taylor, Jer.
Hyde, Dr. Edward.	Thorndike.
Inett.	Walker, William, on Baptism.
Johnson, John.	Bishop Webb.
Kettlewell.	Wharton, H.
Archbishop Laud.	Bishop White, Fr. (Ely).
Leslie, Charles.	Wilkins's Concilia.
L'Estrange's Alliance.	Bishop Wilson.

Some of the above Authors are inserted, because their Works, although easily procured entire, cannot be had in separate parts.

*Care will be taken to avoid interfering with the publications of the  
Oxford University Press.*

ARCHBISHOP BRAMHALL'S Works, BISHOP ANDREWES' XCVI Sermons, COURAYER on English Ordinations, BISHOP NICOLSON's Exposition of the Catechism, BISHOP BEVERIDGE's Works, BISHOP BULL on Justification. Parts II. & III.	} are in course of publication.
---	---------------------------------

### VOLUMES PUBLISHED.

ANDREWES' Sermons, Vols. I., II., III., & IV., 8vo. 10s. 6d. each.  
 ARCHBISHOP BRAMHALL'S Works, Vol. I., 10s. 6d.  
 BISHOP BULL's Harmony of St. James and St. Paul on Justification.

**COMMITTEE.**

Rev. R. S. Barter, D.C.L. Warden of Winchester College.  
Rev. Edw. Churton, M.A. Crayke, Durham.  
Rev. William Gresley, M.A. Prebendary of Lichfield.  
Rev. W. F. Hook, D.D. Vicar of Leeds.  
Rev. R. W. Jelf, D.D. Canon of Christ Church.  
Rev. John Keble, M.A. Professor of Poetry, Oxford.  
Rev. W. H. Mill, D.D. Christian Advocate, Cambridge; Chaplain  
to the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.  
Rev. G. Moberly, D.C.L. Head Master of Winchester School.  
Rev. J. H. Newman, B.D. Fellow of Oriel College.  
Rev. H. H. Norris, M.A. Prebendary of St. Paul's, Hackney.  
Rev. Wm. Palmer, M.A. Worcester College, Oxford.  
The Hon. and Rev. Arthur P. Perceval, East Horsley, Guildford,  
Surrey.  
Rev. E. B. Pusey, D.D. Regius Professor of Hebrew, and Canon  
of Christ Church.

**SUPERINTENDING EDITOR.**

Rev. W. J. Copeland, M.A. Fellow of Trinity College, Oxford.

**TREASURER AND SECRETARY.**

Charles Crawley, Esq. Fitzroy Farm, Highgate.

**PUBLISHER.**

Mr. John Henry Parker, Oxford.

*The following gentlemen have consented to act as Secretaries  
in their respective districts.*

*Bath* . . . . . Rev. W. Bliss.  
*Birmingham* . . Rev. T. Nunns.  
*Exeter* . . . . . Rev. C. Bartholomew.  
*Northampton* . . Rev. T. V. Barlow.  
*Armagh* . . . . . Rev. R. Allot.  
*Coleraine* . . . . Rev. C. Monsell.

## SUBSCRIBERS.

Those marked \* are Subscribers of £2. 2s., † of £10 10s., \*\* of £21.

- \*ARMAGH, THE LORD ARCHBISHOP OF
- \*ARMAGH, THE VERY REV. THE DEAN OF
- \*Aberdeen Diocesan Library
- \*Abraham, Rev. C. J. Eton College
- \*Abrams, Mr. Oxford
- Acland, Arthur H. Dyke, Esq.  
Wollaston House, Dorchester, Dorset
- \*A'Court, Hon. Cecilia
- \*Acres, John, Esq. Theological College, Wells
- ADAIR, VISCOUNT, DUNRAVEN CASTLE
- Adams, Rev. D. Bampton
- \*Adams, Rev. H. G. Dunsford, Exeter
- \*Adams, W. D. Esq. Sydenham, Kent
- \*Adamson, Rev. E. Newcastle-upon-Tyne
- \*Addison, Rev. Berkley, Curate of Brighton
- \*Addison, Rev. W. G. H. S. Cann, Dursley, Gloucestershire
- \*Alcock, Rev. John Price, Rochester Cathedral
- \*Alderson, Rev. R. Ipswich, Suffolk
- \*Aldred, J. T. F. Esq. Lincoln College, Oxford
- \*Alexander, John, Esq. London-street, Edinburgh
- Allen, Rev. H. Lincoln
- \*Allen, Rev. J. C. Beakesbourne, Canterbury
- \*Allen, Mrs. T. W. Maidstone, Kent
- \*Allies, Rev. T. W. 17, Duke Street, Manchester Square, London
- \*Allott, Rev. R. Precentor of Armagh
- \*Amphlett, Rev. M. Burnham
- \*Anderdon, John L. Esq. 22, Tavistock-square
- Anderson, Rev. J. S. M. Brighton
- \*Andrews, Rev. W. N. Bulwer, near Sudbury
- \*Anson, G. H. Exeter Coll. Oxford
- \*Anstey, Rev. Arthur
- \*Appleton, Rev. R. Liverpool
- \*Arabin, Col. R. A.
- Arbouin, Samuel, Esq. Mark-Lane
- \*Archer, C. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- \*Arden, G. Esq. Wadham College
- \*Armitage, Rev. R. Neenton, near Bridgenorth
- \*Armstrong, Rev. John, Dinder, Wells
- \*Armstrong, J. H. Esq. Dublin
- \*Arnold, Rev. T. K. Lyndon, Rutland
- \*Ashby de la Zouch Theological Library
- \*Ashworth, Rev. J. H. Eastwoodhay, Newbury, Berks
- Ashworth, Rev. T. A. Brasenose College, Oxford
- Astley, Sir F. D. The Berries, Warrminster
- \*Atlay, T. Esq. St. John's College, Cambridge
- \*Atkinson, Rev. G. Storr, Gainsborough
- Atkinson, Rev. Miles, Gloucester
- \*Atwood, Rev. H. S. Harfield, Gloucestershire
- \*Aubin, Rev. Philip, B.D. Rector of St. Clement's, Jersey
- Audland, Rev. W. F. Queen's College, Oxford
- \*Austen, Venerable Archdeacon
- \*Bacon, R. W. Esq. King's College, Cambridge
- Badham, Rev. C. Chelmondiston, Ipswich

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Bagot, G. T. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- \*Bagot, Hon. and Rev. H. All Souls College, Oxford
- \*Baillie, Rev. Evan, Trinity College Oxford
- Baker, Rev. F. W. Bath
- \*Baker, Rev. T. T. Tovil, Maidstone, Kent
- \*Ball, Mr. H. W. Wells, Somerset
- \*Ball, Rev. T. J. Methowold, Norfolk
- \*Ballard, Edward, Esq. Cavendish-crescent, Bath
- Barclay, Rev. J. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- Bardin, Rev. Dr.
- \*Barker, Rev. Ralph, M. A. Collingham, Hull
- \*\*Barker, Rev. F. R. Oriel Col. Oxford
- \*Barker, Rev. H. Raymond, Dagnorth, Gloucestershire
- \*Barlow, Rev. T. M. Shrewsbury
- \*Barlow, Rev. T. V. Northampton
- Barnes, Ven. Archdeacon, Sowton, Exeter
- \*Barnwell, C. F. Esq. British Museum
- \*Barnwell, Rev. E. L. Ruthin
- Barrow, Rev. J. Queen's Coll. Oxford
- \*Barter, Rev. Dr. Winchester
- \*Bartholomew, Rev. C. C. Lympstone, Devon
- Bartholomew, Rev. J. Mochard, Crediton
- \*Basevi, G. Esq. Fitzroy Farm, Highgate
- \*Basevi, N. Esq. Fitzroy Farm, Highgate
- Batten, Rev. H.
- Baxter, Rev. Arthur, Croydon, Surrey
- Baxter, Rev. R. W. Kingsthorpe
- \*Bayldon, Rev. J. Thiving, Bridlington
- Bayley, Rev. W. H. Ricketts, Stapleton
- Bayley, W. R. Esq. Bath
- Bayliff, Rev. T. L. Stratford, Essex
- Bayne, Rev. T. V. Warrington
- \*Bazely, Rev. T. T. Rectory, Poplar, London
- \*Beardon, Rev. H. W. Latton, Cricklade
- \*Beatty, Rev. J. Conroy, Raphoe
- Beaufort, Rev. D. A. 11, Gloucester-Place
- \*Beaver, James J. Esq. 16, Devonshire Place
- \*Beck, James, Esq. Corpus Christi College, Cambridge
- \*Beckett, Rev. H. F. Kilnhurst, Rotherham
- \*Beckwith, H. W. Esq. University College, Oxford
- \*Bedford, Rev. Henry, Dunton Bassett, Leicestershire
- \*Beggars, Mr. D.
- \*Belgrave, Rev. T., North-Kilworth, Leicestershire
- Bell, Rev. John, Oulton, near Leeds
- \*Bell, T. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- \*Bellamy, Rev. Dr.
- Bellasis, E. Esq. 17, Bedford Square
- \*Benn, Rev. W. H. Lutterworth
- \*Bennet, Rev. A. M. South Cadbury, Somerset
- \*Bennett, Rev. Edward Leigh, Lechlade, Gloucestershire
- \*Beresford, Rev. Lord John
- \*Beresford, Rev. Charles C. Rector of Sermon, Dioc. Armagh
- \*Beresford, Rev. Lord John
- \*Berners, Rev. R. Erwarton, Ipswich
- \*Biber, Rev. Dr. Coombe Wood, Kingston-upon-Thames
- \*Bickmore, Rev. C. Beltrington, Cheshire
- \*Biggar, Douglas, Esq. 66, Aldersgate Street, London
- \*Biggs, Rev. Michael, St. Peter's, Mile-End, London
- \*Birchinall, Thos. Esq. Macclesfield
- Bird, Rev. G. Great Wyborough, Kelverdon, Essex
- \*Birks, Rev. B. H. Stockport, Manchester
- \*Birley, H. H. Esq. Manchester
- \*Biron, Rev. Edwin, Vicar of Lympne Hythe, Kent
- Birtwhistle, Mr. Halifax, Yorkshire
- \*Bishop, W. H. Esq. C.C.C. Cambridge
- \*Bishop, Rev. W. C. Northampton
- \*Bishop's College, Calcutta
- Bisset, Rev. C. Wigan
- \*Bissett, Rev. Thomas
- \*Black, Rev. A. W.
- \*Blackall, Rev. — Staverton, Daventry
- \*Blackburn, Rev. Peter
- \*Blake, C. J. Esq. Christ's College, Cambridge
- Blakiston, Rev. Robert, Cold Waltham, near Petworth

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- Blathwayte, Rev. C. Langridge  
Blew, Rev. W. J. Nuthurst, Horsham  
\*Bliss, Rev. James, Holt, Melksham  
\*Bliss, Rev. W. Bath  
Bloxam, Rev. J. R. Magd. Coll. Oxford  
Bloxam, M. H. Esq. Rugby  
Boissier, Rev. P. E. Malvern, Wells  
\*Bolland, W. Esq. University College, Oxford  
\*Bond, F. H. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford  
Bonney, Ven. Archdeacon  
\*Boodle, Rev. R. G. Compton Dando, near Bath  
\*Booker, Rev. John, Vicar of Killurin, Ireland  
\*Borton, Rev. W. Blofield, Norfolk  
Bosanquet, S. Esq. Eastwoodhay  
\*Bourke, Rev. S. G. Hothorpe, Fairford  
\*Bowden, John, Esq. Roehampton  
Bowdler, Rev. T. Sydenham  
\*Bowles, H. A. Esq. St. John's Coll. Oxford  
\*Bowles, F. S. Esq. Exeter Coll. Oxford  
\*Bowyer, Rev. W. H.  
Boyce, Rev. E. J. Southampton  
\*Bradley, C. R. Esq. Diocesan Coll. Chichester  
\*Bradshaw, James, Esq. Stockport  
\*Bradshaw, Job, Esq. Secretary to the Englishman's Library, Nottingham  
\*Braithwaite, W. Esq. Jesus College, Cambridge  
\*Bramston, Rev. John, Witham, Essex  
\*Branker, Rev. Henry, Padgate Warriington  
\*Bray, Dr. Associates of, 5 copies  
\*Brett, Mr. Newington Green  
Brewin, Rev. George, Coventry  
\*Brewster, Rev. W. Buckland Newton, Dorchester  
Bridges, Rev. A. B. Beddington  
\*Bright, Mr. William, Manchester  
\*Brine, J. G. Esq. St. John's College, Oxford  
Broadley, Rev. A. Bridport, Dorset  
\*Brook, Rev. W. Bentley, Suffolk  
Brooks, Rev. J. H. Brasenose College, Oxford  
Brown, Rev. Felix, Pulborough, near Petworth
- \*Brown, Rev. H. St. James's, Shore-ditch, London  
\*Brown, John Cave, Esq. Theological College, Wells  
\*Brown, Messrs. J. G. and T. C. Leicester  
\*Brown, Rev. J. J. Beaumaris, Anglesea  
\*Browne, Rev. E. H. Exeter  
Browne, Rev. John, Bishopsthorpe, Yorkshire  
Browne, Rev. R. W. King's College, London  
\*Bruce, Rev. W. St. Nicholas, Cardiff  
Brymer, Ven. Archdeacon, Bath  
Bubb, Rev. Henry Bagendon, Cirencester  
Buckerfield, Rev. T. H. Little Bedwyn, Wilts  
\*Buckland, J. R. Esq. Ch. Ch. Oxford  
\*Buckle, W. H. Esq. Customs, Bridgewater  
\*Buckley, W. E. Esq. Brasenose College, Oxford  
Buckley, Rev. J. Stroud  
Buller, Rev. A. Tavistock  
Bulley, Rev. F. Magd. Coll. Oxford  
\*Bullock, Rev. G. M. St. John's Coll. Oxford  
\*Bullock, W. Esq. Kilburn, Middlesex  
\*Bunbury, Rev. J. R. North Marston, Winslow, Bucks  
\*Bunt, Rev. T. H. B. Trin. Coll. Camb.  
\*Burney, Rev. C. Sible-Hedingham, Halsted, Essex  
\*Burney, E. K. Esq.  
\*Burns, Mr. 17, Portman-street, London  
\*Burton, Rev. R. C. York Terrace, Peckham  
\*\*Butler, Rev. Dr. Chancellor of Peterborough, Gayton, Northampton  
\*Butler, Rev. D. Coventry  
\*Butler, Rev. James, York  
\*Butt, Rev. I. J. Hampstead  
\*Butterfield, Rev. J. Bradford, Yorkshire  
\*Byron, Rev. J. Killingholme, near Burton  
\*Byrne, Mrs. Henry, Worcester
- \* CALCUTTA, THE LORD BISHOP OF

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Calcutta, The Bishop's College
- \*Calley, C. B. Esq. Worcester College, Oxford
- \*Calman, J. J. Esq. Worcester College, Oxford
- \*Cameron, Rev. Charles Campbell, Rev. C. Weasenham, Rougham, Norfolk
- \*Campbell, Rev. J. J. Ashford, Wicklow
- \*Campbell, L. L. Esq. Middleton Lodge, Richmond, Yorkshire
- \*Canham, A. J. Esq. Summer-hill, Terstarden, Kent
- \*Canterbury Clerical Book Society
- \*Capper, S. J. Esq. Leyton, Essex
- \*Carey, Rev. Hewitt
- \*Carshove, Rev. Jos. James, chaplain Hon. East India Company's Service, Cawnpore, Bengal
- Carter, Rev. J. St. John's Coll. Oxford
- \*Carter, Rev. T. T. Puddle Hinton, Dorset
- \*Carter, Rev. W. A. Eton College
- \*Cartew, Rev. James, Trengelos, Launceston
- \*Casson, John Lees, Esq.
- \*Cather, Rev. John, Wrexham
- \*Cattley, Rev. S. R. Fulham
- \*Cattley, R. Esq. York
- Cavendish, Hon. and Rev. A. Edgeware
- Cavendish, Hon. R. Belgrave-square
- \*Chaffers, Rev. T. Brasenose College, Oxford
- Chamberlain, Rev. T. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Chambers, J. C. Esq. Emmanuel Coll. Cambridge
- \*Chambers, J. D. Esq. Oriel College, Oxford
- \*Chambers, O. L. Esq. University College, Oxford
- \*\*Champernowne, R. Esq. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Champneys, Rev. H. S. Mucklestone, Staffordshire
- \*Chanter, Rev. Mr.
- \*Chermside, R. Seymour, Esq. Exeter College, Oxford.
- Cheshyre, Rev. W. T. Worcester
- \*Chester, Rev. A. Chicheley Hall
- \*Chester, Harry, Esq. Highgate
- Chevallier, Rev. Temple, Durham
- \*CHICHESTER, VERY REV. THE DEAN OF
- \*Chichester Theol. Book Society
- Christie, Rev. J. F. Oriel Coll. Oxford
- \*Church, Rev. R. W. Oriel Coll. Oxford
- Churton, Rev. E. Crayke, Durham
- Clare, Rev. G. T. Bainton, Beverley
- \*Clark, Rev. Fran. F. Grammar School, Newcastle
- \*Clark, Rev. John, Grove Villa, Hunslet, Leeds
- \*Clarke, L. S. Esq. New Coll., Oxford
- \*Clarke, Samuel, Esq. St. John's Coll. Oxford
- \*Clay, Rev. S. G.
- \*Clayton, Rev. J. H. Farnborough Rectory, Hants
- \*Cleather, Rev. G. P. Chirton, Devizes, Wilts
- Clements, J. Esq. Oriel Coll. Oxford
- Clerical Society, Newcastle-on-Tyne
- \*Clerical Society of the Deanery of Droxford, Hants
- \*Clerke, Venerable C. C. Archdeacon of Oxford
- \*Coates, Rev. R. P. Rochester
- \*Cobham, Rev. I. B. Walton, Somerset
- \*Cockin, M. Esq. Minchinhampton, Gloucestershire.
- Cocks, Somers, Esq.
- \*Codd, Rev. E. T. St. John's College, Cambridge
- †Cole, Rev. M. S. Wotton-under-Edge
- \*Cole, Rev. G. E. Calne, Wilts
- \*COLERIDGE, HON. MR. JUSTICE
- \*Coleridge, Rev. E. Eton College
- Coleridge, Rev. George
- Coles, Rev. G. Croydon
- \*Coley, Rev. J.
- \*Collier, C. I. Esq. Magd. Hall, Oxford
- \*Collings, Mr. E. Bath
- Collings, Rev. William
- \*Collins, Rev. R. Hampstead
- Collinson, Rev. R. Holme Cultram
- \*Collis, Rev. J. D. Worcester College, Oxford
- \*Colls, Rev. I. F. Hampstead
- \*Collyns, C. H. Esq. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- Colson, Chas. Esq. St. John's College, Cambridge
- \*Colville, Rev. F. L.
- Connop, Newell, Esq. Whitehall

SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Constable, Rev. H. Klonakilty, County Cork, Ireland
- \*Constable, J. C. Esq. Jesus College, Cambridge
- Coope, Rev. H. G. Clunn, Shropshire
- \*Cooper, Rev. E. P. Burford, Oxon.
- \*Copeland, Rev. W. J. Trinity Coll. Oxford
- Corfe, Rev. T. Priest Vicar, Exeter
- Cork, The Venerable the Archdeacon of Cork Tract Society, The
- \*Cornish, Rev. C. L. Exeter Coll., Oxford
- \*Cornish, Rev. S. W. D. D. Ottery St. Mary, Devon
- \*Cornthwaite, Rev. T. Hornsey
- Cosens, Rev. R. Dorchester
- \*Cotes, Charles, Esq.
- \*Cotton, Rev. W. C.
- \*Cotton, Alexander, Esq. Hildersham Hall, Cambridgeshire
- COURTENAY, LORD, Powderham Castle
- Courtenay, Rev. F. Exeter Coll. Oxford
- \*Cox, Rev. I. Edm. Alderby, near Beccles, Suffolk
- †Cox, Rev. J. Walgrave, Northampton
- Crawley, Rev. C. Stowe, near Weedon
- \*Crawley, C. Esq. Highgate
- \*Crawley, G. A. Esq. Highgate
- \*Crawley, Rev. R. Steeple Ashton, Trowbridge
- \*Creek, Rev. E. B. Paignton, Devon
- \*Cripps, J. M. Esq. Novington, near Lewes
- Crompton, Rev. B. Unsworth, near Bury, Lancashire
- \*Crossley, James, Esq. Manchester
- \*Crossley, Mr. John S. Leicester
- \*Crosthwaite, Rev. J. C. Trinity College, Dublin
- \*Crosthwaite, Rev. C. Lackagh Monasterevan, Ireland
- \*Currie, Rev. James
- \*Currie, Miss
- Currie & Bowman, Newcastle-on-Tyne
- \*Currie, Rev. H. G.
- Curry, jun. and Co. Dublin
- Cust, Hon. and Rev. H. C. Cockayne, Hatley
- \*St. DAVID'S, THE LORD BISHOP OF
- \*Dakeyne, Rev. J. Osmond, Boxmoor, Herts
- Dale, Rev. Henry, Bristol
- \*Dalton, Rev. C. B. Lincoln's Inn
- \*Dalton, Rev. W. Kelvedon, Essex
- \*Dand, Rev. Thos. Queen's College, Oxford
- \*Daniel, George Fred. Esq. Magdalen College, Cambridge
- \*Darby, Rev. J. Curate of Acton, Ireland
- \*Darling, Mr. Little Queen Street, London
- \*Darnell, Rev. W. N. Stanhope, Durham
- Darnell, Rev. W.
- \*Davenport, Arthur, Esq., Christ's Coll. Cambridge
- Davie, Rev. George John, Hartwell, near Aylesbury
- Davies, Rev. J. Abbenhall, Gloucester
- Davies, Rev. Richard, Stanton
- \*Dawson, J. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- \*Dawson, Charles, Esq. Baymont Lodge, Torquay
- \*Dayman, Alfred J. Esq. Exeter Coll. Oxford
- \*Dayman, Rev. Charles, Great Tew, Oxon
- \*Deacon, Rev. G. E. Rawmarsh, Rotheram, Yorkshire
- Deane, J. W. Esq. St. John's College, Oxford
- Dearden, Mr. W. Nottingham
- Deedes, Rev. Gordon
- \*Deighton, Messrs. J. & J. J. Cambridge Demerara Clerical Library
- \*Denton, Rev. R. A. King's Coll. Camb.
- \*De Tessier, G. F. Esq. C. C. C. Oxford
- De Tessier, P. A. Esq. C. C. C. Oxford
- \*De Vere, Sir Aubrey, Currati Chase
- \*\*Dickinson, F. H. Esq. Upper Harley-street, London
- \*Disney, Rev. E. O. Armagh, Ireland
- \*Disney, Rev. James, Armagh, Ireland
- Distin, Rev. H. L. Westmoreland House, High Harrogate
- \*Dixon, Rev. James, Liverpool
- \*Dobson, B. Esq. Bolton
- \*Dodsworth, Rev. W. Ch. Ch. St. Pancras, London

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Donaldson, Rev. J. W. Bury St Edmund's
- \*Donne, J.
- Dernford, Rev. J. Plymptree, Devon
- Douglas, E. Esq. Bursledon, Southampton
- Douglas, Rev. H. College, Durham
- \*Doune, Rev. S. Oswestry School, Shropshire
- Douglas, Rev. S. Ashling, Chichester
- \*Dover Clerical-Book-Society
- \*Dowding, Rev. W. Grimley, Worcester
- \*Downe, Rev. G. E. Rushden Rectory, Higham Ferrers, Northamptonshire
- \*Drake, Rev. Richard
- \*Drummond, Col. E. Brighton
- Duesbury, E. W. T. Esq. Beverley, Yorkshire
- \*Duffield, Rev. R. Frating, Colchester
- Dufton, Rev. John, Wareham, near Ashford, Kent
- \*Dugard, Rev. G. Manchester
- \*Duke, W. M. D. Esq. Hastings
- \*Dukes, Rev. R. M. Guilsborough, Northampton
- Dundas, W. Pitt, Esq. Edinburgh
- \*DUNGANNON, VISCOUNT, Brynkinalt Chirk
- \*Dunlap, Rev. A. P. St. John's College, Oxford
- \*Dunn, J. Esq. Advocate, Aberdeen
- \*Dunraven, the Earl of, Adare, Limerick
- \*Dupuis, Rev. H. Eton College
- \*Durnford, Rev. Francis, Eton College
- \*Du Sautoy, Rev. W. S. O. Frome Selwood, Somerset
- Dyke, Rev. W. Cradley, Malvern
- \*Dyne, Rev. J. B. Highgate
- \*Dyson, Rev. C. Dogmersfield, Hartford Bridge
- Ebsworth, Rev. Geo. Searle, Brighton
- Eden, Rev. R. Legh, Rochford
- \*Edmondstone, Sir Archibald, Bart.
- \*Eduart, Rev. A. G. Deune, St. Paul's Church, Blackburn
- \*Edwards, Rev. A. Magdalene College, Oxford
- Egerton, Rev. T. Dunnington, Yorkshire
- \*E. H. T.
- \*Elder, Rev. E. Master of the Grammar School, Durham
- Ellicott, Rev. C. Whitwell, Rutlandshire
- \*Elliot, J. E. Esq. Catherine Hall, Cambridge
- \*Ellis, Conyngham, Esq. 4, Fitzwilliam Place, Dublin
- \*Ellison, H. Esq. University College, Oxford
- \*Elmhirst, Rev. Geo. Eastnor, Ledbury
- Elmhirst, Rev. Edward, Shawell, Leicestershire
- Elphinstone, The Venerable Archdeacon of Ardearne, Boyle, Ireland
- \*Elrington, Rev. Dr. Dublin
- \*Elrington, Rev. H. P. Precentor of Ferns, Ireland
- \*Elwes, J. M. Esq. Bossington, Stockbridge
- Estcourt, Rev. E. E. Badgeworth, Cheltenham
- \*Evans, Rev. A. B. D. D. Market Bosworth
- Evans, Rev. E. C. Ingham
- \*Evans, Herbert N. Esq. Hampstead
- Evans, L. Esq. Wadham Coll. Oxford
- Evans, Rev. T. Gloucester
- \*Evans, Rev. T. Simpson, Kensington
- \*Eveleigh, Rev. James
- Ewart, W. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- \*Ewing, Rev. W. Alburgh, near Harleston, Norfolk
- \*Eyton, Henry N. Esq. Birmingham
- \*Eyton, J. Walter K. Esq. Leamington

### EDINBURGH, THE RIGHT REV. THE BISHOP OF

Edinburgh, The Scottish Episcopal Church Library

- \*Eamonson, Rev. B. Collingham
- \*Easther, Alfred, Esq. Bedale, Yorksh.
- \*Eaton, W. Esq. Merton Coll. Oxford
- Eaton and Son, Worcester

- \*Fagan, Rev. G. H. Witham, Essex
- \*Falkner, T. A. Esq. St. John's Coll. Oxford
- \*Fallow, Rev. T. M. All Souls, London
- \*Fanshawe, F. Esq. Balliol Coll. Oxford

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Farebrother, Rev. T. Market Harborough
- Farley, Rev. T. Ducklington
- \*Fearnley, Rev. I. King's College, London
- \*Fearon, Rev. W. C. Grimston, Lynn, Norfolk
- \*Fenwicke, Rev. G. O. Aston, Birmingham
- \*Fenwicke, Rev. M. G. Ballyshannon
- \*Ferguson, Dr. May Fair
- \*Few, Robert, Esq. 2, Henrietta Street, Covent Garden, London
- \*Field, Rev. P. Finchingsfield, Braintree, Essex
- \*Finch, Miss Charlotte
- \*Fitzgerald, Rev. A. O. Fledborough, near Tuxford
- \*Fletcher, T. W. Esq. F.R.S. Dudley, Worcestershire
- \*Fletcher, Rev. W. Derby
- \*Fletcher, Rev. W. K. Bombay
- \*Fletcher, Rev. W. R.
- \*\*Forbes, G. H. Esq. Edinburgh
- \*Forbes, I. S. Esq. Christ's College, Cambridge
- \*Forbes, the Hon. the Master of Castle Forbes, N.B.
- Ford, Rev. J. Chard, Somersetshire
- \* Ford, W. Esq. Highgate
- \*Formby, Rev. H. Brasenose
- \*Forster, Rev. H.B. Stratton, Cirencester
- \*Foster, Rev. J. S. Ilchester
- \*Foster, John, Esq. St. Mary Hall, Oxford
- \*Foulkes, Rev. H. P. Buckby Mountain, Flintshire
- \*Fowler, Rev. C. A.
- Fox, Rev. Charles, Napperton
- \*Fox, Rev. C. J. Henley-on-Thames
- Foxe, Rev. O. Worcester
- Frampton, Rev. J. Tetbury, Gloucestershire
- \*France, Rev. G. 76 Horseferry Road, Westminster
- \*Fraser, Rev. R. Stedmarsh, Canterbury
- Fraser, Miss, Hayes Common, Kent
- \*Freeland, E. Esq. Chichester
- \*Freeth, Frederic Harvey, Esq. 80, Coleshill Street, Eaton-square, London
- \*Frith, M. K. S. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- Frost, R. M. Esq. Pembroke College, Cambridge
- Fulford, Rev. F. Trowbridge
- Fyler, Rev. S. Cornhill, Durham
- \*Gace, Rev. F.A. Sherington, Newport-Pagnel
- Galton, Rev. John L. Leamington
- Gardner, Rev. W. Rochford
- Garvey, Rev. Richard, Wakefield
- \* Gibbs, G. Esq. Belmont, near Bristol
- \* Gibbs, G.H. Esq. Bedford Sq. London
- \* Gibbs, W. Esq. 13, Hyde-Park Street, London
- \*Gibson, J. Esq. Jesus Coll. Camb.
- \*Gibson, Rev. Edward, Alley, near Coventry
- \*Gidley, J. Esq. Exeter
- Gilbertson, Rev. Lewis. Llangorwen, near Aberystwith
- \*Gilder, Rev. George Robert, Newport St. Mary's
- Gilks, Rev. W. Little Hampton
- † Gillet, Rev. G. E. Waltham, Melton Mowbray
- Gillett, E. G. Little Hampton, Cambridge
- Gladstone, Rev. John, Liverpool
- \*Gladstone, W. E. Esq. M. P.
- Glanville, Rev. E. F. Wheatfield
- \*Glencross, Rev. James, Balliol Coll. Oxford
- \*Glenie, Rev. J. M. Salisbury
- \*Godley, John R. Esq.
- \*Goff, Thomas, Esq. Oriel Coll. Oxford
- \*Golding, Rev. J. E. Peterborough
- \*Goldsmid, N. Esq. M.A. Exeter Coll. Oxford
- \*Gooch, Rev. I. H. Head Master of Heath School, Halifax
- \*Goodchild, Rev. C. W., A.M., Free-Grammar School, Sutton Walence, Kent
- \*Goodford, C. O. Esq. Eton
- Goodwin, H. Esq. B.A. Caius College, Cambridge
- \*Gordon, Rev. O. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Gore, Rev. H. J. Horsham
- Gough, Rev. H. Penzance

SUBSCRIBERS,

- \*Gough, Rev. B. Londonderry
- Goulburn, H. Esq.
- \*Gould, Rev. Edward, Spreoughton, Ipswich
- \*Gray, Rev. R. Old Park, Durham
- \*Gray, Rev. R. H. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- Graham, Mr. W. Oxford
- \*Graham, W. T. Esq. 17, Upper Buckingham Street, Dublin
- Grant, R. and Son, Edinburgh
- \*Grant and Bolton, Messrs., Dublin
- \*Grantham Clerical Society
- \*Green, J. Esq. Woburn
- Green, Mr. T. W. Leeds
- \*Greene, Miss, Whittington Hall, Burton, Westmoreland
- \*Greene, Rev. H. B. Vicar of Longparish, Winchester
- \*Greene, R. Esq. Lichfield
- \*Greenwell, W. Esq. St. John's College, Cambridge
- \*Gregory, R. Esq. C. C. C. Oxford
- Gresley, Richard, Esq.
- Gresley, Rev. William, Lichfield
- \*Gresley, Rev. J. M. Over Seile, Leicestershire
- \*\*Greswell, Rev. R. Worcester Coll. Oxford
- Greswell, Rev. W. Kilve Rectory, Somersetshire
- \*Grey, Hon. and Rev. Francis, Buxton
- \*Grey, W. Esq. Magd. Hall, Oxford
- Grieve, Rev. John Wrentham, Wangford, Suffolk
- \*Griffiths, Rev. John, Wadham Coll. Oxford
- \*Gruuber, Rev. C. S. Magdalen Hall, Oxford
- Guillemard, Rev. H. P. Trinity Coll. Oxford
- Gunner, Rev. W. H. Winchester
- \*Gutch, Rev. Rt. Segrave, Leicester
- \*Hackman, Rev. A. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Haig, Rev. Robt. Newtown, Hamilton
- Haigh, Rev. Daniel, Great Marlow
- \*Hailstone, Rev. John, jun. Vicar of Bottisham, Cambridge
- Haines, W. C. Esq. Hampstead
- Haines, J. Esq. Sidney Place, Bath
- Hale, Rev. Matt. B. Stroud
- \*Hall, Rev. W. Manchester
- \*Hallen, Rev. George, Rushock, Medoule, Upper Canada
- \*Hallen, Rev. William, Wribbenhall, Worcestershire
- Halton, Rev. T. 98, Islington, Liverpool
- Hamilton, Rev. J. Great Baddow, Essex
- \*Hanham, Rev. Phelps, Wimborne, Dorset
- \*Harcourt, Rev. L. V. Midhurst
- \*\*Harding, Rev. G. S. Brasenose College, Oxford
- \*\*Hare, Venerable Archdeacon
- Harington, Rev. Rd. Old, Northampton
- \*Harison, W. H. Esq. New York
- \*Harper, T. N. Esq. Queen's College, Oxford
- \*Harpur, Rev. E. St. Peter's, Stockport
- \*Harris, Hon. and Rev. C. Wilton, Salisbury
- \*Harris, Rev. J. H. Northampton
- \*Harris, G. T. Esq. Harrow-on-the-Hill
- Harrison, Rev. B. Domestic Chaplain to the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury
- \*Harrison, Rev. H. Gondhurst
- Harrison, Rev. T. Trinity Church, Maidstone
- \*Harrison, Rev. W. Christ's Hospital, London
- \*Harrow School Library, the
- \*Hartnell, E. G. Esq. Trinity College, Cambridge
- \*Hartshorne, Rev. Joseph
- \*Harvey, Rev. H. Preb. of Bristol, Bradford, Wilts
- \*Harvey, Rev. J. Woodhouse, Leeds
- \*Hatchard and Son, Piccadilly, London
- \*Hatherell, Rev. J. W. D. D. Charmouth Rectory, Dorset
- Hawkins, Rev. E. Secretary to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel
- \*Hawkins, E. Esq. British Museum
- \*Hawkins, Herbert S. Esq. Jesus Coll. Oxford
- Hawkins, Rev. W. B. L. 23, Great Marlborough-street, London
- \*Hawtrey, Rev. Dr. Eton College
- Hayden, Rev. F. W. Beverley, Yorkshire

SUBSCRIBERS.

- Hayes, Rev. I. Warren, Arberfield Rectory, Berks
- Hearn, Mr. John, Sarum Library, Salisbury
- \* Heath, W. M. Esq. Exeter Coll. Oxford
- \*Hecker, Rev. H. T. Sevenoaks, Kent
- \*Hedley, Rev. T. A. Gloucester
- \*Henderson, W. G. Esq. Magd. Coll. Oxford
- \*Henderson, Peter, Esq. Macclesfield
- \*Henn, Rev. W. Coleraine
- \*Herbert, Hon. Algernon, Ickleton, Saffron Walden
- \*Heslop, Ancham, Esq. Trinity College, Cambridge
- \*Hessey, Rev. F. St. John's Coll. Oxford
- \*Hessey, Rev. J. A. St. John's College, Oxford
- Hewetson, Rev. J. S. Curate of Killeary, Ireland
- \*Hewitt, T. S. Esq. Worcester College, Oxford
- \*Heygate, Miss, Southend, Essex
- Heywood, Rev. H. O. Bryan, Manchester
- \*Hibbert, Miss Jane L. Barnes, Surrey
- \*Hichens, R. Esq. Threadneedle-street, London
- Hide, Rev. G. E. Calne, Wilts
- \*Hildyard, Rev. J. Christ's College, Cambridge
- \*Hill, Rev. E. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Hill, Rev. Erroll, New Coll. Oxford
- Hill, Rev. W. Derby
- \*Hillyard, Rev. Temple, Worm-Leighton
- Hinde, Rev. T. Liverpool
- \*Hingston, James Ansley, Esq. 48, Finsbury Circus, London
- \*\*Hippesley, H. Esq. Lambourne Place, Berks
- \*Hippisley, R. W. Esq. Stow Lodge, Gloucestershire.
- \*Hobhouse, Edm. Esq. Balliol College, Oxford
- \*\*Hodges, Rev. T. S. Little Waltham, Chelmsford
- \*Hodgson, Rev. G. St. Peter's, Isle of Thanet
- Hodgson, Rev. H. St. Martin's, London
- \*Hodgson, Rev. T. F. Horsham
- Hodson, Rev. J. Saunderstead, Croydon, Surrey
- Holden, Rev. W. R. Worcester
- Holden, The Misses, Torquay
- \*Holland, Rev. Henry, Walkden Moor, Swinton, near Manchester
- \*Holme, Hon. Mrs. A. C.
- \*Holthouse, C. S. Esq. Beadnell, Bel-ford
- \*\*Hook, Rev. W. F. D.D. Vicar of Leeds. Presented by a few of his younger parishioners
- Hope, A. J. B. Esq. Trinity College, Cambridge
- \*Hopkinson, C. Esq. 39, Eaton-place, Belgrave-square
- Hopkinson, C. Esq. M.A. Queen's College, Oxford
- \*Hopper, A. M. Esq. B.A. Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge
- \*Hopton, Mrs. Kemerton Court, Tewkesbury
- \*Hopwood, Rev. F. G. Knowsley, Prescot, Lancashire
- \*Hornby, Rev. Edward, Walmersley, Bury, Lancashire
- \*Horner, Rev. Josh. Everton, Biggles-wade, Bedfordshire
- \*Horsfall, Rev. A. Litchurch
- \*Horsfall, John, Esq. Standard Hill, Nottingham
- \*Hosking, R. Esq. Penzance
- \*Hotham, W. F. Esq. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- Houghton, Rev. John, Matching, near Harlow, Essex
- \*Houghton, Rev. W. Milns Bridge, Huddersfield
- \*HOWARD, HOW. AND REV. H. E. J. D.D. DEAN OF LICHFIELD
- Howard, Col. Ashstead Park
- \*Howard, Hon. and Rev. W. Fareham
- \*Howard, Rev. N. A. Penzance
- Howard, Hon. F. G.
- \*Howard, Hon. and Rev. H.
- \*Howard, Rev. R. D.D. Beaumaris, Anglesea
- Howell, Rev. Hinds, Shobrooke, Devon
- \*Howorth, Rev. Wm., March, Isle of Ely
- \*Hudson, Rev. John, Vicar of Kendal

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- Hue, Dr., 9, Bedford Square, London
- Hughes, Rev. H. Charlotte Street, Bloomsbury
- Hunt, Rev. R. S. Stinchcombe Dursley
- Hunter, Rev. W. Lurgurshall, near Godalming
- Hussey, Rev. W. L. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- Hutchinson, Rev. C. Chichester
- Hutton, Rev. G. B. Gainsborough
- Huxtable, Rev. A. Sutton Waldron
- Hyde & Crewe, Newcastle, Staffordshire
- \*Jackson, Miss, Blackwatertown, Ireland
- Jackson, Rev. T. East Brent, Somerset
- Jackson, Rev. T. St. Peter's, Stepney
- \*Jackson, Rev. W. Dealtry, Ch. Ch. Hoxton
- \*Jackson, Wm. Esq. Queen's College, Oxford
- James, Rev. J. D.D. Prebendary of Peterborough
- James, Sir Walter, Bart., M. P. 11, Whitehall Place, London
- James, Rev. H. 19, Manchester Buildings, Westminster
- \*James, Rev. T. Sibbestoft, near Welford, Northamptonshire
- \*James, Rev. J.
- Janvrin, J. H. Esq. Oriel Coll. Oxford
- Jeffray, Rev. L. W. Preston, Lancashire
- \*Jelf, Rev. Dr. Canon of Ch. Ch. Oxford
- Jelf, Rev. W. E. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Jenkins, Rev. J. Rothwell, Leeds
- Jennings, Rev. M. J. Chaplain to the Hon. East India Company
- \*JERSEY, THE VERY REV. THE DEAN OF
- Jew, Mr. Thomas, Gloucester
- \*\*Inge, Rev. I. R. St. Mary's, Portsmouth
- \*Johnson, C. W. Esq. Balliol College, Oxford
- Johnson, G. H. S. Esq. Radcliffe Observatory, Oxford
- Jones, Rev. D. Stamford
- \* Jones, Rev. J. S. Armagh
- Jones, Rev. R. Branxton, Coldstream
- \*Jones, W. H. Esq. Queen's College, Oxford
- Irons, Rev. W. J. Brompton
- \*Irving, Rev. J. Kendall
- \* Keble, Rev. J. Hursley, Winchester
- Keik, Rev. W. 23, City Road, London
- Kemp, Mr. John, Beverley
- Kempe, Rev. J. C. Morchard Bishop's, Devon
- Ken Club, Leeds
- Kendall, Rev. J. H. F. Kirkby Lonsdale
- \*Kennard, John P. Esq. 4, Lombard-Street, London
- \*Kenrick, Rev. Jarvis, Horsham, Sussex
- Kent, jun. Rev. G. D. Sudbrook, near Lincoln
- \*Kenyon, Lord, 9, Portman Square, London
- \*\*Kerby, Rev. C. L. Stoke Talmage, near Tetsworth
- \*Kershaw, Rev. G. W. St. Nicholas, Worcester
- \*Kildare, Ven. Archdeacon of
- Kilvert, Rev. F. Bath
- King, Mr. H. S. Brighton
- \*King, Rev. Sir J. Bart. Rathmore, Blessington
- \*King, T. H. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- King, Rev. W. Smyth, Ireland
- \*King's College, London
- \*Kingdon, Rev. G. R. Trinity College, Cambridge
- \*Kingsford, B. Esq. Exeter Coll. Oxford
- \*Kingsmill, Rev. H. Chewton Mendip, Somerset
- \*Kingsmill, William, Esq. Sidmorton House, Hants.
- \*\*Kirby, R. H. Esq. St. John's Coll. Cambridge
- \*Kirrier, Clerical Society, Cornwall
- Kirwan, Rev. E. King's Coll. Camb.
- \*Kitson, J. F. Esq. Exeter Coll. Oxford
- Knight, Henry, Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- Knight, Rev. T. Ford Rectory
- Knight-Bruce, Rev. H. L. M.A.
- \*Knowles, Edward H. Esq. Queen's College, Oxford
- Knox, Rev. H. B. Monk's Cleigh, Hadleigh, Suffolk
- \*Knox, Rev. Spencer, Vicar-General of the Diocese of Kerry
- Kyle, Rev. John T. Cork

SUBSCRIBERS.

- Kynnersley, Rev. E. C. Sneyd, Draycott Rectory, Stone, Staffordshire
  - \*Linzee, R. G. Esq. Ch. Ch. Oxford
  - Linzell, Rev. B. H.
  - \*Litler, Rev. Robert, Poynton Parsonage, near Macclesfield
  - \*Lloyd, Rev. C. W.
  - Lloyd, F. L. L. Esq. Cambridge
  - Lloyd, Rev. F. T. Curate of Kilmore, Dioc. Armagh
  - \*Lloyd, Rev. John F. Ballyling, Rich Hill, Ireland
  - \*Lloyd, Rev. Edgar, Gloucester
  - \*Lloyd, Rev. H. W. Jesus Coll. Oxford
  - Lodge, Rev. Barton, Theydon Bois
  - \*Lohr, C. W. Esq. Gwaenynog, Denbigh
  - London Library, Pall Mall
  - Lonsdale, Rev. J. Principal of King's College, London
  - \*Lowder, C. F. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
  - \*Lowe, Rev. J. M. Cheadle, Staffordshire
  - \*Lowe, Rev. R. F. Madeira
  - \*Lowe, Rev. R. H. Abascragh, co. Galway
  - \*Lowe, Rev. Charles Benj. Hertford
  - \*Lowe, Rev. H. E. Rushall, Walsall
  - Lukes, Rev. W. C. Bradford, Wilts
  - Lund, Rev. T. B.D. St. John's College, Cambridge
  - Lusk, John, Esq. Glasgow
  - Lutwyche, A. I. P. Esq. Middle Temple
  - \*Luxmoore, Rev. J. H. M. Marchwiel, Wrexham
  - \*Lyttleton, The Right Hon. Lord
  
  - \*MADRAS, THE LORD BISHOP OF M'Call, Rev. Edward, Brightstone
  - M'c Ewen, Rev. A.
  - \*Macfarlane, W. C. Esq. Birmingham
  - \*Machen, Edward, Esq. Diocesan College, Wells
  - \*Machlachlan, A. N. Campbell, Esq.
  - \*M'c Houghton, Esq.
  - \*Mackenzie, A. C. Esq. King's Coll. London
  - Mackenzie, Lewis M. Esq. Exeter Coll. Oxford
  - \*Mackinnon, Rev. John, Bloxholm, near Sleaford, Lincoln
- Linzee, Rev. Edw. Hood

## SUBSCRIBERS,

- Maclean, Rev. H. Coventry  
\*Maclean, Rev. W. Prebendary of Tynan, Armagh  
Macmullen, Rev. R. G. C. C. C. Oxford  
\*Madox, Wm. Esq. 61, York Terrace, Regent's Park  
\*Maitland, Rev. R. S. Librarian to the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury  
\*Major, Rev. I. R. D.D. King's Coll. London  
\*Malcolm, H. Esq. Eckington, Chesterfield  
Malcolm, Rev. Gilbert, Toddenham  
\*Malet, Rev. W. N. Curate of St. Cuthbert, Wells  
\*Mangin, Rev. Edw. N. Byer's Green, near Bishop's Auckland, Durham  
Manning, Rev. H. E. Lavington, Arch-deacon of Chichester  
\*Manning, F. J. Esq. Lincoln College, Oxford  
\*Manson, Rev. A. T. G.  
\*Mapleton, R. J. Esq. St. John's Coll. Oxford  
Markland, J. H. Esq. Bath  
Marriott, Rev. C. Oriel Coll., Oxford  
\*Marriott, Rev. J. Bradfield, Reading  
\*Marshall, Rev. S. Eton  
\*Marshall, Rev. E. Ruskington, Sleaford  
\*Marshall, Rev. J. Chaplain to H. M. Ship Victory  
\*Martin, Rev. F. Trin. Coll. Camb.  
\*Martin, Rev. John Sidney-Sussex Coll. Camb.  
Martin, Rev. M. Exeter  
\*Martyn, Rev. T. W. Exeter  
\*Mason, A. W. Esq. Trinity Coll. Cambridge  
\*Mason, Rev. E. J. Stroud  
\*Mason, Rev. H. B. Head Master of Brewood School, Staffordshire  
\*Maule, Rev. G. Great Munden, near Pickering, Herts  
\*Maynard, Rev. John  
\*Maynard, Rev. R. Wormleighton, Southam  
\*Mayo, A. F. Esq. Oriel Coll. Oxford  
\*Mayor, C. Esq. St. John's Coll. Camb.  
\*Mease, Rev. J. Fresford  
Medley, Rev. John, Exeter  
Mence, Rev. J. W. Ilkley, Otley, Yorkshire  
\*Merry, R. Esq., M.A., Jesus College, Cambridge  
\*Metcalf, Rev. W. L. Huddersfield  
\*Metcalfe, Rev. Wallace, Reddenhall, Harlestone, Norfolk  
\*Middleton, Rev. J. E. Wroxton, Banbury  
\*Middleton, Henry O. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford  
\*Mill, Rev. Dr. Christian Advocate, Cambridge  
\*Mill, John, Esq. Elston, near Devizes  
Miller, Rev. I. R. Walkeringham, Bawtry, Yorkshire  
Miller, Rev. John, Benefield, Oundle  
Miller, Rev. T. E. Benefield, Oundle  
•Mills, R. T. Esq. Magd. Coll. Oxford  
Minster, Rev. I. Farmley Tyas  
Moberly, C. E. Esq. Balliol Coll. Oxford  
Moberly, Rev. Dr. Winchester  
\*Money Kyrle, E. A. Esq. C. C. C. Cambridge  
•Monro, Rev. E. Oriel Coll. Oxford  
•Monsell, Rev. C. H. Worcester Coll. Oxford  
•Monsell, Rev. J. S. Coleraine, Ireland  
•Monsell, W. Esq. Limerick, Ireland  
Moodie, C. Esq. Magdalen Hall  
•Moore, Rev. J. W. Hordley, Ellesmere  
•Moore, Rev. Edward, Rector of Killan, Ireland  
Moorsom, Rev. Richard, Pett, Sussex  
•Moriarty, Rev. T. Ventry, Dingle, Ireland  
•Morrell, F. J. Esq. St. Giles's, Oxford  
•Morrice, Rev. W. D. Leeds  
Morris, Rev. J. B. Exeter Coll. Oxford  
•Morris, Rev. T. E. Ch. Ch. Oxford  
•Morrison, Rev. A. Eton College  
•Morton, M. C. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford  
•Morton, Rev. Joseph, Elphin  
Moultrie, Rev. J. Rugby  
Mount, Rev. C. M. Prebendary of Wells  
\*Mountain, Rev. G. R. Rector of Havant  
Mountain, Rev. H. B. Prebendary of Lincoln  
\*Mozley, Rev. J. B. Magdalene College, Oxford

SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Mules, Rev. P. Exeter Coll. Oxford
- \*Murray, Rev. A. Clapham, Surrey
- \*Murray, C. R. Scott, Esq. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Murray, Rev. W. St. Martin's, Colchester
- \*Murray, F. Esq. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Musket, Mr. C. Norwich
  
- NEW JERSEY, THE RIGHT REV. THE BISHOP OF**
- \*\*NEW ZEALAND, THE RIGHT REV. THE BISHOP OF**
- NOVA SCOTIA, THE LORD BISHOP OF**
- Neale, J. M. Esq. Downing College, Cambridge
- \*Neve, Rev. F. R. Poole Keynes, Cirencester
- \*Nevins, Rev. W. Wilton House, Ross
- New, Rev. F. T. Ch. Ch. St. Pancras, London
- Newland, Rev. Dr. Ferns
- \*Newland, Rev. Thomas, Dublin
- Newman, Rev. J. H. Oriel College, Oxford
- \*Newton, Mr. C. Croydon
- \*New-York-Society Library
- Nicholl, Rev. J. R. Greenhill Grove, near Barnet, Hertfordshire
- Nicholls, Rev. W. L. Bath
- \*Nicholson, Rev. W. Wickham House, Welford, Berks
- \*Nicholson, Rev. W. Rector of St. Maurice, Winchester
- \*Nicoll, Rev. Charles, Stratford, Essex
- \*Nixon, Rev. F. R. Ash, near Wingham
- \*Noott, Rev. E. H. L. Tipton, Birmingham
- \*Norman, M. O. Esq. C. C. C. Camb.
- Norris, Rev. H. H. Prebendary of St. Paul's, Hackney
- \*North, Rev. Jacob
- \*Northcote, G. B. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- \*Northcote, J. S. Esq. C. C. C. Oxford
- \*Nunns, Rev. T. Birmingham
- \*Nutt, Rev. Charles Thesston, Bath
  
- OXFORD, THE LORD BISHOP OF**
- \*O'Brien, Rev. H. Killegar, Ireland
- \*O'Brien, Mrs. 108, George Street, Limerick
- O'Brien, Rev. Hewitt, Heywood, Rochdale
- Ogle, Mr. Robert, South Bridge Edinburgh
- Ogle and Son, Booksellers, Glasgow
- \*Oldershaw, R. Esq. Islington
- \*Oldham, George A. Esq. Trinity Coll. Cambridge
- Oldham, Rev. T. R. Huddersfield
- \*Oldknow, Rev. Joseph, Bordesley Birmingham
- \*Oliver, J. Esq. Queen's College, Cambridge
- \*Oliverson, R. Esq. 14 Portland Place, London
- Ormsby, R. L. Esq. Lincoln Coll. Oxford
- Orr, T. Esq. Oriel College, Oxford
- \*Osborn, Rev. G. Stoke-Newington
- \*Ostell, Messrs. T. & Co. booksellers, London
- Ouvry, Rev. P. T.
- \*Owen, R. Esq. Jesus Coll. Oxford
  
- \*Pagan, Rev. S. Stanningley
- Page, Rev. C. Westminster Abbey
- \*Page, Rev. L. F. Woolpit, Bury St. Edmund's
- Page, R. jun. Esq.
- \*Page, Vernon, Esq. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Paget, Rev. F. E. Elford, Lichfield
- \*Paine, Cornelius, Esq. 11, Cannonbury-lane, Islington
- \*Palmer, Roundell, Esq.
- \*Palmer, Rev. W. Magdalen Coll. Oxford
- \*Palmer, Rev. W. Worcester Coll. Oxford
- \*Palmer, Mrs. Mixbury, near Brackley
- \*Palmer, Miss, Mixbury, near Brackley
- \*Pardoe, Rev. Mr. Leyton, Essex
- \*Parker, C. Esq. Upper Bedford Place, London
- \*Parker, Rev. E. Bahia, South America
- \*Parker, Rev. R. Welton, Spilsby, Lincolnshire
- \*Parkinson, Miss, Ravendale
- \*Parrington, Rev. Matthew, Feltwell, Norfolk
- Parsons, Rev. C. A. St. Mary's, Southampton

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- †PATTESON, HON. MR. JUSTICE  
Pattison, Rev. Mark, Lincoln College,  
Oxford
- \*Paul, G. W. Esq. Wadham Coll. Oxford
- \*Payne, R. jun. Esq. Lavender Hill
- \*Pedder, W. Esq. Theological College,  
Wells
- \*Pelly, Rev. T. C. C. C. Oxford
- \*Pennefather, Rev. William
- †Penney, Rev. E. St. Andrew's, Canterbury
- \*Penny, C. B. Esq. Theol. Coll. Wells
- \*Peny, Rev. A. Bettsworth, Precentor  
of St. Canies Cathedral, Kilkenny
- \*Perceval, Hon. and Rev. A. P.
- \*Perceval, Captain E. A.
- \*Percival, Ernest A. Esq. Bindon  
House, Milverton, Somerset
- \*Perring, C. Esq. 29, Tavistock Square,  
London
- \*Perry, T. W. Esq. 20, Steward-street,  
Spitalfields
- \*Phelps, Rev. H. D. Tarrington, Hereford
- \*Phelps, Rev. R. Sidney Sussex Coll.  
Cambridge
- \*Phelps, Rev. T. P. Ridley, Seven  
Oaks, Kent
- \*Philips, G. H. Esq. Belle Vue,  
Liverpool
- \*Phillips, Rev. E. 5, Nelson Terrace,  
Clapham
- \*Phillott, Johnson, Esq. Bath
- \*Philpott, Rev. Other, Clungunford,  
near Ludlow
- \*Philpott, Rev. T. Maddresfield, Wor-  
cester
- Phipps, Rev. E. I. Devizes, Wilts
- Phipps, T. H. H. Esq. Leighton House
- \*Pickering, Rev. H. St. Peter's, Isle of  
Thanet
- \*Pickwood, Rev. John, Stepney
- \*Pigott, Rev. A. J. Newport, Salop
- \*Pigott, Rev. George, Bombay
- \*Pillans, Rev. W. H. Great Malvern
- \*Pinder, Rev. J. H. Precentor of Wells
- \*Platt, J. P. Esq. Child's Hill, Hampstead
- \*\*Pocock, Rev. N. Queen's College,  
Oxford
- Pocock, Mr. W. Bath
- \*Ponsonby, Hon. Walter
- \*Pope, T. A. Esq. Jesus Coll., Cambridge
- \*Popham, W. Esq. Tramore, Water-  
ford, Ireland
- Poole, Rev. G. A. Leeds
- \*Potts, R. Esq. Trinity Coll. Cambridge
- Pountney, Rev. H. St. John's, Wolver-  
hampton
- \*\*Powell, A. Esq. Carey Street, London
- \*\*Powell, Rev. E. A. Ampthill
- Powell, Rev. H. T. Stretton
- \*Powell, Rev. J. W. S. Kingston-on-  
Thames
- \*Powell, Rev. R. Worcester Coll. Oxford
- Power, Rev. J. P. Queen's College,  
Cambridge
- \*Power, Rev. J., Fellow of Pembroke  
College, Cambridge
- \*Pownall, Rev. C. C. B. Milton  
Ernest, Bedfordshire
- \*Pownall, W. L. Esq. St. John's Coll.  
Cambridge
- Powys, Hon. and Rev. Horace, War-  
rington
- \*Prater, Rev. T. Newnham, Sitting-  
bourne, Kent
- \*Preston, Rev. Plunket, Prebendary of  
Edermine, Ferns, Ireland
- \*Prevost, Rev. Sir George, Bart. Stinch-  
combe, Dursley
- \*Prichard, Rev. Richard, Hunley
- Pridden, Rev. W. Broxted, Dunmow
- \*Pritchard, Rev. R. Jesus College,  
Oxford
- Pulling, Rev. W. Brasenose Coll. Oxford
- \*\*Pusey, Rev. Dr. Canon of Ch. Ch.  
Oxford
- \*Pusey, Rev. W. B. Garsington
- RIPON, THE LORD BISHOP OF  
Raven, Rev. V. 11, Crescent-place,  
Burton-crescent
- \*Rivar, C. Esq. Great St. Helens,  
London
- Randolph, Rev. E. J. Tring
- \*Randolph, W. C. Esq. Yate House, Bath
- Rashdall, Rev. John, Exeter
- \*Rawle, Rev. R. Cheadle, Staffordshire
- \*Reed, Rev. J. Harold's Cross, Dublin
- \*Reeve, Mr. W. Leamington
- \*Rew, Rev. Charles, Maidstone

SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Richards, Edw. Priest, Esq. Cardiff
- \*Richards, Rev. Edw. Tew, Farlington Rectory, Havant
- \*Richards, Rev. W. Upton, London
- \*Richards, Rev. H. M. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- Rickards, Rev. F. Stowlangtoft, Suffolk
- \*Rickards, E. P. Esq.
- Riddle, John B. Esq. Kilgraston, Bridge of Earn, Perth
- \*Ridgway, Josh. jun. Esq. Wallsuches, near Bolton
- Ridley, Rev. W. H. Hambledon
- \*Roberts, H. Esq. Cambridge
- Roberts, Rev. L. Slaidburn, near Clitheroe, Yorkshire
- \*Robertson, Dr. Doctors' Commons, London
- \*Robertson, Rev. J.C. Boxley, Maidstone
- Robertson, Rev. J. C. Cheddington, Hemel Hempstead
- \*Robin, Rev. P. R. Bolton
- \*Robins, Rev. Sanderson
- \*Robinson, G. J. Esq. Hart Street, Bloomsbury
- \*Robinson, Rev. Sir George, Bart.
- \*Robinson, Rev. Christr. Kirknewton, near Wooler, Northumberland
- \*Robson, T. U. Esq. Magdalen Hall, Oxford
- Rodmell, Rev. J. Burford, Tenbury
- \*Rodwell, Rev. J. M. St. Peter's, Saffron Hill, 7, Park Terrace, Barnsbury Park
- \*Rodwell, R. M. Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- \*Rogers, Edward, Esq. Eliot Place, Blackheath, Kent
- Rose, Rev. H. H. Erdington
- \*Ross, Rev. I. L. Fyfield, near Burford
- \*\*Ross and Argyll, Diocean Library of Routh, Rev. Dr. President of Magd. Coll. Oxford
- Rowe, Mr.
- Rowland, Miss, Hereford
- \*Rush, Rev. John, South Parade, Chelsea
- \*\*Russell, D. Watts, Esq. Biggin Hall, Oundle
- \*\*Russell, I. Watts, Esq. Ilam Hall, Ashbourne, Derbyshire
- Ryder, Rev. George Dudley, Easton, Winchester
- Ryder, T. D. Esq. Oriel Coll. Oxford
- Samler, Rev. J. H. Bampton, Oxon.
- Sandford, Rev. G. B. Prestwich
- Sandford, Rev. John
- \*Sandford, Frederick, Esq.
- \*Sandham, James, Esq. St. John's Coll. Oxford
- Sandilands, Hon. and Rev. J. Edinburgh
- Sankey, P. Esq. St. John's Coll. Oxford
- \*Sargeant, Rev. R. Worcester
- Saunders, Rev. A. P. Charter House
- \*Savage, W. Esq. Queen's Coll. Oxford
- \*Savory, J. S. Esq. 16, Somerset Place, Bath
- Scarth, Rev. H. Bathwick, Bath
- \*Schofield, Rich. L. Esq. Brighton
- \*Scott, Rev. John
- \*Scott, Rev. R. Duloe, Cornwall
- \*Scott, Rev. W. Ch. Ch. Hoxton
- \*Scudamore, Rev. W. E. Ditchingham Bungay
- Seager, Rev. C. Worcester Coll. Oxford
- \*Selwyn, Rev. W. Canon of Ely
- Sewell, Rev. W. Exeter Coll. Professor of Moral Philosophy, Oxford
- \*Seymour, E. W. Esq. Porthmawr, Breconshire
- Seymour, Rev. Sir J. Hobart, Bart. Prebendary of Gloucester
- \*Seymour, Rev. R. Kinwarton, Alcester
- \*Shairp, John C. Esq. Balliol Coll., Oxford
- \*Sharples, J. Hool, Esq. St. John's College, Cambridge
- \*Shaw, Rev. G. Witcham, Ely
- \*Shaw, Rev. John, Corrington, St. Ives, Huntingdonshire
- \*Shea, Robert Francis Jones, Esq.
- \*Shelley, John, Esq. St. Peter's Coll. Cambridge
- \*Shepherd, Rev. S. North Somercote, near Louth, Lincolnshire
- \*Sheppard, J. H. Esq. Queen's College, Oxford
- Shield, Rev. W. T. Durham
- \*Shilleto, Rev. Richard, M.A. King's College, Cambridge
- \*Shilleto, Rev. W. York

SUBSCRIBERS.

- Shillibeer, Rev. J. Oundle
- \*Shipton, Rev. J. N. Othery, near Bridgwater
- \*Shortland, Rev. H. Rector of Twinstead
- \*Short, Rev. A. Ravensthorpe
- \*Shrine, Rev. Harcourt, Cirencester
- Shuttleworth, Rev. E.
- \*Sidgwick, C. Esq. Skipton, Yorkshire
- \*Simes, G. F. Esq.
- \*Simms and Dinham, Manchester
- \*Simms, Rev. E. Plaiston
- Simms and Son, Bath
- Simpson, Rev. H. Bexhill
- \*Simpson, Rev. J. D. Sidney, Sussex College, Cambridge
- \*Simpson, R. Esq. Oriel Coll. Oxford
- \*Singer, Rev. Dr. I. H., S.F.T.C.D.
- \*Singleton, Rev. R. C. Curate of Monart, Ireland
- \*Sion College Library
- Sittingbourne and Ospringe Church-Reading-Society
- \*Skeffington, Hon. H. R. Worcester College, Oxford
- \*Skeffington, Hon. T. C. F. Worcester College, Oxford
- \*Skinner, Fitzowen, Esq. 23, Keppel Street, Russell Square
- Skinner, J. Esq. King William's Coll. Isle of Man
- \*Slade, Rev. James, Bolton
- Sladen, Rev. E. H. M. Bockleton
- \*Slatter, Rev. John, Warrington
- \*Slocombe and Simms, Leeds
- \*Small, Rev. Nath. P. Market Bosworth, Hinckley
- \*Smirke, Sir Robert, London
- \*Smith, Rev. Campbell, Newbury
- \*Smith, Rev. Edw. Bocking, Braintree
- Smith, Rev. G. Garvagh, Ireland
- \*Smith, H. T. Esq. Queen's Coll. Oxford
- \*Smith, Rev. J. Trinity College, Oxford
- \*Smith, Rev. W. Puddelhinton
- \*Smith, H. W. Esq.
- \*Smyth, Rev. H. Fenner, Glebe, Johnstown
- Snare, Mr. John, Reading
- \*Southampton Theological Library
- \*Southwell, Rev. G. Compton Martin
- Sparke, Rev. John, Clare Hall, Cambridge
- \*Spence, Rev. J. Northampton
- \*Spencer, Rev. W. Pakenham, Starston, Norfolk
- Spranger, Rev. R. J. Exeter College, Oxford.
- Spreat, Mr. W. Exeter
- \*Spry, Rev. J. H. D. D. St. Mary-le-bone
- Spurgin, J. Esq. C. C. Cambridge
- \*Stanley, Rev. E. Rugby
- \*Starey, B. H. Esq. Clerkenwell, London
- Starkey, Rev. A. B. C. St. John's Coll. Oxford
- \*Steel, H. W. Esq. Mathune, near Chepstow
- \*St. John, Rev. Ambrose, Bransgore, Ringwood
- Stephens, Rev. C. L. Kencot, Burford
- \*\*Stert, Rev. A. R. 33, Connaught Square, London
- \*Stevenson, Rev. J. Durham University
- Stewart, Mr. King William Street
- \*Stokes, S. N. Esq. Trinity College Cambridge
- \*Stonehouse, Rev. W. B. Owston
- Storer, W. P. Esq. Islington
- \*Stott, Miss, Bradford, Yorkshire
- \*Streat, Rev. L. H. Easter-New, Boyle, Ireland
- \*Street, J. Esq. Lloyd's Rooms, London
- \*Street, W. F. Esq. 13, Austin Friars, London
- Strong, Mr. W. Bristol
- \*Stuart, Rev. John B., M.D. Billesdon, Leicester
- \*Stuart, Rev. Hamilton
- \*Studdert, G. jun. Esq. Trinity College, Dublin
- \*\*Sturrock, Rev. W. Chaplain, Bengal Presidency
- \*Suckling, R. Esq. Caius College, Cambridge
- \*Suckling, Rev. R. Stretton, Herefordshire
- Swainson, Rev. E. E. Clunn, Shropshire
- Swann, Rev. R. York
- Swansborough, G. S. Esq. Pembroke College, Cambridge
- Sweet, Rev. C. Cornworthy, Totnes, Devon
- \*Sweet, Rev. J. Hales, St. John's College, Cambridge

SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Swinney, Rev. H. H. Magd. College, Cambridge
- \*Swire, John, Esq. University College, Oxford
- \*Symons, E. W. Esq. St. John's College, Cambridge
- \*Talbot, Rev. G. Evercreech, Somerset
- \*Tarbutt, Rev. Arthur C. Dover
- Tarleton, J. W. Esq. Birmingham
- \*Tarleton, Rev. John
- \*Tate, Frank, Esq. University College, Oxford
- Tatham, Rev. Arthur, Broadoak, Lostwithiel, Cornwall
- Taylor, Rev. A. W. Stoke Newington
- Taylor, Mr. J. Brighton
- \*Taylor, John, Esq. Leicester
- \*Tennant, Rev. W.
- \*Thompson, Rev. E. H. St. Mary-le-bone, London
- \*Thompson, W. Esq. Queen's College, Oxford
- Thornton, Rev. T. Brockhall, Weedon
- Thornton, Rev. W. Dodford, Weedon
- Thorp, Ven. Archdeacon, Durham
- \*\*Thorp, Venerable Archdeacon, Trinity College, Cambridge
- \*Thurland, F. E. Esq. New College, Oxford
- \*Thurlow, Rev. J. Norwich
- \*Thynne, Right Hon. and Rev. Lord John, D.D. Rector of Street-cum-Walton
- \*Tindale, John, Esq. Huddersfield
- \*Tireman, Mrs. Nurton, Chepstow
- \*Todd, Rev. Dr. Trinity College, Dublin
- \*Todd, Venerable Archdeacon, Settrington Malton, Yorkshire
- \*Topham, Rev. J. Huddersfield
- \*Tragett, Rev. F. H. Romsey
- \*Travis, Rev. W. J. M.A. Trinity College, Cambridge
- \*Trench, Rev. F. S. Kilmoroney Athog
- \*Trevelyan, Rev. J. Milverton, Somerset
- \*Trillon, Henry, Esq.
- Tripp, Rev. Dr. Silverton, Devonshire
- Tristram, H. B. Esq. Lincoln College, Oxford
- \*Tritton, Henry, Esq. 54, Lombard Street, London
- \*\*Trollope, Rev. A. St. Mary-le-bone
- \*Trower, Rev. Walter, Wiston, near Steyning
- Tuckwell, Henry, Esq.
- Turner, Rev. J. Hagley, Stourbridge
- Turner, Rev. Sam. H. D.D. Prof. in the New York Theol. Seminary of the Episcopal Church
- \*Turner, Rev. W. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Tuttiatt, E. Esq. Ch. Ch. Oxford
- \*Twining, Rev. D. Therfield, Royston
- \*Twining, Richard, jun. Esq.
- \*Twining, James, Esq. Trinity College, Cambridge
- Tyler, Rev. Geo. Trinity Coll. Oxford
- \*Tyrrell, Rev. W. Beaulieu Rectory, Southampton
- \*Tyrwhitt, Rev. R. E. Ryme, Sherborne
- \*Underwood, R. Esq. Broadwell Rectory, Stow-on-the-Wold
- Utterton, Rev. I. S. Dorking
- \*Vale, W. S. Esq. Worcester College, Oxford
- \*Vaux, W. S. W. Esq. Balliol College, Oxford
- \*Vaux, Rev. W. Winchester
- \*Veale, Rev. W. Harris, Northlewe, Okehampton, Devon
- \*Venables, C. Esq. Pembroke College, Cambridge
- \*Venn, E. S. Esq. Wadham College, Oxford
- Vigne, Rev. Henry, Nuthurst
- \*Vincent, Rev. O. P. Devizes, Wilts
- \*Vizard, J. Esq. Dursley, Gloucester
- Voules, Rev. F. Eton
- Wackerbarth, Rev. F. D. Queen's Coll. Cambridge
- \*Wade, Benjamin, Esq.
- Wade, Rev. N. St. Paul's, Bunhill Row

SUBSCRIBERS.

- Wagner, A. Esq. Cambridge
- Waites, Rev. T. Bentley, South Stainley, near Harrogate
- Walford, Rev. W. Hatfield, Witham, Essex
- Walker, Rev. R. Wadham Coll. Oxford
- Wallace, Rev. G. Canterbury
- Wallace, Rev. I. L. Sevenoaks
- Wallas, Rev. John Preston Patrick, Kendal
- Waller, Rev. E. A. Warwick
- Waller, Rev. W. Gornal, Dudley
- \* Walter, Henry, Esq. Exeter College, Oxford
- Walters, Mr. Rugeley
- \* Ward, Rev. John, Great Bedwyn, Wilts
- \* Ward, W. G. Esq. Southampton
- Wardroper, Rev. C. Bawdrip, Bridgewater
- Warre, Rev. Fran. Bishop's Lydiard
- Warter, Rev. I. Wood, West Tarring, Sussex
- Wason, James, Esq. Rowcroft, Stroud, Gloucestershire
- Watson, Rev. Alexander, St. John's, Cheltenham
- + Watson, Rev. John, Guilsborough
- \* Watson, Joshua, Esq. Park-Street
- \* Watts, Rev. John, Tarrant-Gunville, Dorset
- \* Webb, Benj. Esq. Trinity College, Cambridge
- \* Webb, Mr. Wareing, Liverpool
- \* Webster, S. K. Esq. Emmanuel Coll., Cambridge
- \* Weguelin, Rev. W. A. South Stoke, near Arundel
- Wells, Rev. F. Lambeth Palace
- \* Wenham, J. G. Esq. St. John's College, Oxford
- Weston, Francis M. Esq. Charleston, U.S.
- Weston, Plowden, Esq. Charleston, U.S.
- \* Whall, Rev. W. Thierning Rectory, Oundle
- \* Whitaker, Rev. S. New Church, Rochdale
- \* Whitby, R. Vernon, Esq. Osbaston Lodge, Market-Bosworth
- \* White, R. Esq. Idle, near Bradford, Yorkshire
- \* White, Rev. R. Marsh, Aveley, Essex
- \* White, Rev. Joseph, Trinity College' Dublin
- \* White, Horace P. Esq. Magd. Hall, Oxford
- \* Whithead, Rev. W. Worcester College, Oxford
- Whitelegg, Rev. W. Cheetham Hill
- Whitley and Booth, Messrs. Halifax
- \* Whitfield, Rev. G. T. Bockleton, Tenbury, Worcestershire
- \* Whitley, Rev. J. Manchester
- \* Whitaker, Rev. G. Queen's College, Cambridge
- Whorwood, Rev. T. Magdalene College, Oxford
- Wickens, Rev. Henry, Margaretting
- Wigley, A. Esq. B.A. St. John's Coll. Cambridge
- \* Wilberforce, Rev. H. W. Bransgore
- Wilberforce, Rev. S. Archdeacon of Surrey
- Wiley and Putnam, New York, 12 copies
- Wilkins, Venerable George, D.D. Archdeacon of Nottingham
- Wilkins, Rev. Mr.
- Wilkinson, Rev. J. Exeter
- \* Wilkinson, Rev. M. 27 Kensington Square
- \* Wilkinson, Rev. Henry J. Queen's College, Oxford
- \* Williams, Rev. C. Jesus Coll. Oxford
- Williams, Rev. E. T. Exeter College, Oxford
- \* Williams, Rev. I. Trinity College, Oxford
- Williams, Rev. George, Wicherford, Worcester
- \* Williams, Rev. J. Jesus Coll. Oxford
- Williams, M. D. Esq. Cwmcynfelin, Aberystwith
- Williams, Rev. W. St. Bartholomew's, Hyde, Winchester
- \* Williams, Rev. T. E., D.D., Bucklebury, Berks
- \* Willis, Rev. T. Rayne, near Braintree
- \* Willis, Rev. W. D. Green Park, Bath
- \* Willock, Rev. W. W. Ware
- \* Willott, Rev. John
- \* Wilshire, E. S. Esq. Worcester College, Oxford
- Wilson, Rev. Charles, Shaftesbury

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Wilson, Rev. Daniel, Islington
- Wilson, Rev. Francis, Rugeley
- \*Wilson, Rev. J. Corpus Christi Coll. Oxford
- \*Wilson, Rev. J. P. Magdalen College, Oxford
- \*Wilson, L. Esq. Norwood Hill
- \*Wilson, R. Esq. Bulham Hill, Clapham
- \*\*Wilson, Rev. Robert, B.A. Bootle, Liverpool. Presented as a testimonial of regard from the congregation at St. Martins, Liverpool
- Wise, Rev. H. Offchurch
- \*Wither, Rev. H. I. B.
- \*Wither, Rev. W. H. W. Bigg, Otterborne, near Winchester
- \*Withers, Rev. George, Bishop's Coll. Calcutta
- Wix, Mr. H. Bridge-Street, Blackfriars
- Wix, Rev. S. St. Bartholomew's Hospital
- Wix, W. Esq. Tonbridge Wells
- \*Wix, Rev. Joseph, Littlebury, near Saffron Walden, Essex
- \*Wood, Rev. R. Broughton, Manchester
- \*Wood, Rev. R. Orme, Bower's Gifford
- \*Woods, Rev. G. H. Westdean Chichester
- \*Woodward, Frederick, Esq. Brasenose College, Oxford
- Woolaston, T. T. Esq. St. Peter's College, Cambridge
- Woolcombe, Rev. E. C. Balliol College
- \*Woolley, Rev. John, University Coll. Oxford
- \*\*Wordsworth, Rev. Christopher, D.D. Head Master of Harrow School
- \*Wordsworth, Rev. Christopher, D.D. Buxtail, Uckfield
- Wordsworth, Rev. C. Winchester
- \*Worgan, Rev. John H. Calthorpe Rugby
- Wragge, G. Esq. Cheadle, Staffordshire
- \*Wray, Rev. C. Liverpool
- \*Wrench, Rev. J. G. D.C.L. Salehurst, Sussex
- \*Wrench, Rev. Frederick, Stowting, Kent
- \*Wright, Miss, Brattleby, Lincoln
- \*Wright, Rev. W. Pembroke Coll. Cambridge
- \*Wright, Rev. J. P.
- Wrottesley, Rev. E. J. Tettinhall, Wolverhampton
- \*Wyld, Rev. W. Woodbro, Wilts
- \*Wynter, Rev. J. Cecil, Gatton Rectory, Reigate
- \*YORK, HIS GRACE THE ARCHBISHOP OF
- \*Yard, Rev. G. B. Wragby, Lincolnshire
- \*Yates, Rev. W. St. Mary's, Reading
- \*Yates, Thomas, Esq. M.D. Brighton
- \*Yonge, W. C. Esq. Otterborne
- Young, J. G. Esq. Trinity College, Cambridge
- \*Young, Mrs. Ossett, Parsonage, near Wakefield
- \*Young, Rev. R. G. Oriel Coll. Oxford
- \*Young, Rev. R. Riseley, Beds

Dickinson, F. H. Esq. £10. 10s. donation.  
Evans, H. N. Esq. £5. 5s. donation.  
J. H. £1. 1s. donation.  
L. M. £1. 1s. donation.  
Lurgan, Lord, £10. 10s. donation.



DEDICATED (BY PERMISSION)  
TO HIS GRACE THE LORD ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY.

---

A

# LIBRARY OF FATHERS

OF THE

## HOLY CATHOLIC CHURCH,

ANTERIOR TO THE DIVISION OF THE EAST AND WEST.

---

TRANSLATED BY MEMBERS OF THE ENGLISH CHURCH,  
WITH NOTICES OF THE RESPECTIVE FATHERS, AND BRIEF NOTES BY THE EDITORS,  
WHERE REQUIRED, AND SUMMARIES OF CHAPTERS AND INDICES.

---

EDITED BY

THE REV. E. B. PUSEY, D.D.

*Regius Professor of Hebrew, Canon of Christ Church, late Fellow of Oriel College.*

THE REV. JOHN KEBLE, M.A.

*Professor of Poetry, late Fellow of Oriel College.*

THE REV. J. H. NEWMAN, B.D.

*Fellow of Oriel College.*

THE REV. C. MARRIOTT, M.A.

*Fellow of Oriel College.*

---

A PUBLICATION, answering to the above title, appeared to the Editors calculated to answer many and important ends, and to supply considerable wants, some peculiar to our own Church and times, others more general.

Their chief grounds for thinking it very desirable were such as the following:—

1. The great intrinsic value of many of the works of the Fathers, which are, at present, inaccessible, except to such as have large libraries, and are *familiar* with the languages in which they are written; and this the more, since a mere general acquaintance with the language will not enable a person to read with ease many of the Fathers. E. g. Knowledge of Latin alone will not suffice to read Tertullian: and in cases less strong, ecclesiastical language and peculiarity of style will often present considerable difficulties at first.

2. The desirableness of bringing together select works of different Fathers. Many who would wish to become acquainted with the Fathers, know not where to begin; and scarcely any have the means to procure any great number of their works. Editions of the *whole* works of a Father, (such as we for the most part have,) are obviously calculated for divines, not for private individuals: they furnish more of the works of each Father than most require, and their expense precludes the acquisition of others.

3. The increased demand for sacred reading. The Clergy of one period are obviously unequal to meet demands so rapid, and those of our day have additional hindrances, from the great increased amount of practical duties. Where so much is to be produced, there is of necessity great danger that

much will not be so mature as, on these subjects, is especially to be desired. Our occupations do not leave time for mature thought.

4. Every body of Christians has a peculiar character, which tends to make them look upon the system of faith, committed to us, on a particular side; and so, if they carry it on by themselves, they insensibly contract its limits and depth, and virtually lose a great deal of what they think that they hold. While the system of the Church, as expressed by her Creeds and Liturgy, remains the same, that of her members will gradually become contracted and shallow, unless continually enlarged and refreshed. In ancient times this tendency was remedied by the constant living intercourse between the several branches of the Catholic Church, by the circulation of the writings of the Fathers of the several Churches, and, in part, by the present method—translation. We virtually acknowledge the necessity of such accessions by our importations from Germany and America; but the circumstances of Germany render mere translation unadvisable, and most of the American Theology proceeds from bodies who have altered the doctrine of the Sacraments.

5. The peculiar advantages of the Fathers in resisting heretical errors, in that they had to combat the errors in their original form, before men's minds were familiarized with them, and so risked partaking of them; and also in that they lived nearer to the Apostles.

6. The great comfort of being able to produce, out of Christian antiquity, refutations of heresy, (such as the different shades of the Arian:) thereby avoiding the necessity of discussing, ourselves, profane errors, which, on so high mysteries, cannot be handled without pain, and rarely without injury to our own minds.

7. The advantage which some of the Fathers (e. g. St. Chrysostom) possessed as Commentators on the New Testament, from speaking its language.

8. The value of having an ocular testimony of the existence of Catholic verity, and Catholic agreement; that truth is not merely what a man *troweth*; that the Church once was one, and spake one language; and that the present unhappy divisions are not necessary and unavoidable.

9. The circumstance that the Anglican branch of the Church Catholic is founded upon Holy Scripture and the agreement of the Universal Church; and that therefore the knowledge of Christian antiquity is necessary in order to understand and maintain her doctrines, and especially her Creeds and her Liturgy.

10. The importance, at the present crisis, of exhibiting the real practical value of Catholic Antiquity, which is disparaged by Romanists in order to make way for the later Councils, and by others in behalf of modern and private interpretations of Holy Scripture. The character of Catholic antiquity, and of the scheme of salvation, as set forth therein, cannot be appreciated through the broken sentences of the Fathers, which men pick up out of controversial divinity.

11. The great danger in which Romanists are of lapsing into secret infidelity, not seeing how to escape from the palpable errors of their own Church, without falling into the opposite errors of Ultra-Protestants. It appeared an act of especial charity to point out to such of them as are dissatisfied with the state of their own Church, a body of ancient Catholic truth, free from the errors, alike of modern Rome and of Ultra-Protestantism.

12. Gratitude to ALMIGHTY GOD, who has raised up these great lights in the Church of Christ, and set them there for its benefit in all times.

## EXTRACTS FROM THE PLAN OF THE WORK.

1. The subjects of the several treatises to be published shall mainly be, Doctrine, Practice, Exposition of Holy Scripture, Refutation of Heresy, or History.
2. The treatises shall be published entire, so as to form a whole.
6. Each volume shall consist either of a work or works of a single Father, or of those of several Fathers upon the same subject, or connected subjects, as in selections of Homilies.
8. The Editors hold themselves responsible for the selection of the several treatises to be translated, as also for the faithfulness of the translations.
11. The originals of the works translated shall be printed \*. It would be well, therefore, if Subscribers would specify, if they wish for the originals, either with or without the translations.
12. It is understood that subscriptions continue, until it be intimated that they are discontinued, and that they extend, under ordinary circumstances, to the end of each year.
14. Not more than four volumes to appear in each year: the price to Subscribers *not to exceed 9s.* for a closely printed 8vo of 400 pages; to the public it will be raised one-fourth. When old Translations are revised, the price will be diminished.
15. No volume can be subscribed for after it is published; but the Subscription List remains open for the future volumes.

\* The object of publishing the originals has been steadily kept in view, though delayed by difficulties, inseparable from the commencement of such an undertaking, as well as by sorrowful dispensations. Collations of foreign MSS. have now been in part obtained, in part are being made, for S. Chrysostom's Homilies on S. Paul, S. Cyril of Jerusalem, Macarius, and Tertullian.

RIVINGTONS, LONDON. J. H. PARKER, OXFORD.

### Works already published.

AUGUSTINE, S. ....	Confessions, with the Latin original	Old Translation and Text, revised by E.B. Pusey, D.D.
CYRIL, S. OF JERUSALEM	Catechetical Discourses	Rev. R. W. Church, B.A. Fellow of Oriel.
CYPRIAN, S. ....	Treatises, .....	late Rev. C. Thornton, M.A. Christ Church.
CHRYSOSTOM, S. ....	On the Epistle to the Romans, Corinthians, Galatians, and Ephesians,	Rev. J. B. Morris, M.A. Fellow of Exeter. Rev. J. Medley, M.A. Wadham. Rev. H. K. Cornish, M.A. late Fellow of Exeter. Rev. W. J. Copeland, M.A. Fellow of Trinity.

### In the Press.

ATHANASIUS, S. ....	On the Nicene Definition, Councils of Ariminum and Selencia, and Four Orations against the Arians	Rev. J. H. Newman, B.D. Fellow of Oriel.
CHRYSOSTOM, S. ....	Homilies on St. Matthew .... On the Epistle to the Philipplians Homilies on the Statues ....	Rev. Sir G. Prevost, M.A. Oriel. Rev. W. C. Cotton, M.A. Student of Ch. Ch. Rev. E. Budge.
GREGORY, S. THEOLOGUS, OF NAZIANZUM	Sermons .....	Rev. R. F. Wilson, M.A. Oriel.
TERTULLIAN	Apologetic and Practical Treatises	Rev. C. Dodgson, M.A. late Student of Ch. Ch.

## Preparing for Publication.

<b>AMBROSE, S.</b>	.....	Doctrinal Treatises .....	
		Epistles.	
<b>ATHANASIUS, S.</b>	.....	Tracts on the Incarnation and Holy Spirit.	{ Rev. C. Daman, M.A. Fellow of Oriel.
		Historical Documents .....	Rev. M. Atkinson, M.A. Fellow of Lincoln.
<b>AUGUSTINE, S.</b>	.....	Anti-Pelagian Tracts .....	Rev. F. Oakley, M.A. Fellow of Balliol.
		Anti-Donatist Tracts .....	Rev. F. W. Faber, M.A. Fellow of University.
		Homilies on St. John's Gospel	{ Rev. C. A. Heurtley, M.A. Fellow of C. C. C. John G. Sheppard, B.A. Scholar of Wadham.
		First Epistle . . . .	
		the Psalms .....	
		Practical Treatises .....	Rev. C. L. Cornish, M.A. Fellow of Exeter.
		Homilies on the New Testament . . . .	{ Rev. R. G. Macmullen, M.A. Fellow of C. C. C. Epistles .....
		City of God .....	Rev. H. W. Wilberforce, M.A. Oriel. Old Translation revised.
<b>BASIL, S. THE GREAT</b>	... Letters, Treatises, and Homilies .....		Rev. Is. Williams, M.A. Fellow of Trinity.
<b>CHRYSOSTOM, S.</b>	..... Homilies on St. John .....		Rev. J. Nelson, M.A. St. John's.
	..... St. Paul .....		{ Rev. T. Keble, M.A. late Fellow of C. C. C. Rev. C. Miller, M.A. late Demy of Magdalen.
	..... Select Homilies .....		Rev. J. A. Ashworth, M.A. Fellow of Brasen-nose.
	On the Priesthood .....		Rev. C. B. Pearson, M.A. Oriel.
	Epistles .....		The late Bp. Jebb, finished by Rev. J. Jebb, M.A.
<b>CYPRIAN, S.</b>	..... Epistles .....		Rev. E. Churton, M.A. Christ Church.
<b>CYRIL, S. OF ALEXANDRIA</b>	..... Against Nestorius .....		Rev. J. H. Newman, B.D.
<b>EPIPHAEM SYRUS, S.</b>	..... Homilies .....		Rev. J. B. Morris, M.A. Fellow of Exeter.
<b>EUSEBIUS</b>	..... Ecclesiastical History .....		Rev. G. H. S. Johnson, M.A. Queen's.
<b>GREGORY, S. OF NYSSA</b>	..... Sermons and Commentaries .....		Rev. C. Seager, M.A. late Scholar of Worcester.
<b>GREGORY, S. THE GREAT</b>	..... Pastorele .....		Rev. H. Carey, M.A. Worcester College.
	..... Magna Moralia .....		
<b>HILARY, S.</b>	..... On the Trinity .....		Rev. A. Short, M.A. late Student of Christ Church
<b>IRENÆUS, S.</b>	..... Against Heresy .....		Rev. J. Keble, M.A.
<b>JEROME, S.</b>	..... Epistles .....		Rev. J. Mozley, M.A. Fellow of Magdalen.
<b>JUSTIN, M.</b>	..... Works .....		Rev. H. E. Manning, M.A. late Fellow of Merton.
<b>LEO, S. THE GREAT</b>	..... Sermons and Epistles .....		Rev. J. H. Newman, B.D.
<b>MACARIUS, S.</b>	..... Works .....		{ Old Translation revised by Rev. C. Marriott, M.A. Fellow of Oriel
<b>OPTATUS, S.</b>	..... On the Donatist Schism .....		Rev. F. W. Faber, M.A. Fellow of University.
<b>ORIGEN</b>	..... Against Celsus .....		Rev. T. Mozley, M.A. late Fellow of Oriel.
<b>TERTULLIAN</b>	..... Works .....		Rev. C. Dodgson, M.A. late Student of Ch. Ch.
<b>THEODORET, &amp;c.</b>	..... Ecclesiastical History .....		Rev. C. Marriott, M.A. Fellow of Oriel.
	..... Compendium of Heresies .....		
	..... and Dialogues .....		Rev. R. Scott, M.A. Fellow of Balliol.
<b>MISCELLANIES</b>	..... St. Clement of Alex. "Quis diver salverut?" Ep. ad Diognetum; Tracts of Hippo polytus.		

\* \* This list was never meant to be final, and it has been, from time to time, enlarged. It might then save waste of labour, if persons contemplating the translation of works, not set down, would enquire of the Editors, whether they are included in the plan.

## SUBSCRIBERS.

Those marked with an \* are subscribers to both the Texts and the Translations.  
Those marked † to the Texts only.  
Those not marked, to the Translations only.

- \*His Grace The Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.
- His Grace The Lord Archbishop of York.
- Right Hon. and Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of London.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Lincoln.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Bangor.
- Hon. and Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Oxford.
- \*Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Rochester.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Gloucester and Bristol.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Exeter.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Worcester, *dec.*
- \*Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Chichester, *dec.*
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Worcester.
- \*Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Sodor and Man.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Ripon.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Barbados.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Edinburgh.
- \*Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Aberdeen.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Ross and Argyll.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of North Carolina, *2 copies.*
- \*Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of New Jersey.
- Right Rev. The Lord Bishop of Ohio.
- Right Rev. Bishop Luscombe, Paris.

Abbiss, Rev. J.	Acland, Henry, Esq. Ch. Ch.
*Aberdeen Diocesan Library	Acland, P. Leopold, Esq. Ch. Ch.
A. B. for the Theological College, Illinois, N. A.	Acland, Arth. H. Dyke, Esq. Dorchester
Abraham, Rev. C. J. Eton Coll.	Adams, Rev. H. G.
†Ackland, T.S. Esq. St. John's Coll. Camb.	Adams, Rev. D. one of the Vicars of Bampton
Acklom, J. Esq. Downing Coll. Camb.	*Adams, John, jun. Esq.
Acland, Sir Thomas Dyke, Bart. M.P.	Adams, W. Esq. Merton Coll.
*Acland, T.D. Esq. M. P. All Souls Coll.	Adare, Viscount

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- Adcock, Rev. Halford H. Hunberstone,  
Leicester
- Addison, Rev. B. Curate of St. Mark's,  
Regent's Square, London
- Addison, W. F. Esq. Wadham
- Agnew, Mrs. Western Pavilion, Brighton
- Aitken, Rev. R. Walcot Terrace,  
Kensington Road
- \*Ainger, W. D.D. St. Bees, near  
Whitehaven
- Aitchison, Rev. D. Glasgow
- Alexander, John, Esq. Edinburgh
- Alger, Owen T. Esq.
- Allen, A. Esq. Clifton
- Allen, Rev. Jas. Castle Martin, Pem-  
brokeshire
- Allen, Rev. John, King's Coll. London
- Allen, Rev. P. Westbourn, Sussex
- Allen, R. B. Esq. Walthamstow
- \*Allies, Rev. T. W. Wadham Coll.
- \*All Soul's College Library, Oxford
- Ambrsy, Mr. C. Bookseller, Manchester
- Amphlett, Rev. M. Burnham, Maiden-  
head
- Anderson, G. W. Esq. Bombay
- \*Anderdon, John L. Esq.
- \*Anderdon, W. H. Esq. University Coll.
- Anderson, Rev. D. Liverpool
- Anderson, George, Esq. Inverness
- Anderson, Rev. John, Merton Coll.
- Anderson, Rev. Philip, Gateshead
- Anderson, Rev. Robert, Brighton
- Anderson, Rev. Sir C. Bart. Lea
- Andrew, Rev. John, St. John's Coll.
- Andrewes, Rev. W. Sudbury
- Andrews, Mr. Geo. Bookseller, Durham
- Andrews, Mr. W. Bookseller, Bristol
- Anstey, Rev. George, Acomb Hall
- \*Anstice, Mrs. Joseph
- Anthon, Rev. Henry, D.D. New York
- Antrobus, Rev. John
- \*Appleton and Co. New York
- Archer, C. Esq. Ball. Coll.
- Armstrong, Rev. C. E. Hemsworth,  
Yorkshire
- Armstrong, Rev. J. Binder, Somerset
- Armstrong, Rev. J. WallSEND
- \*Arnold, Rev. T. K. Lyndon, Rutland
- Ashby-de-la-Zouch Theological Library
- Ashington, Miss, Little Saxham
- Ashworth, Rev. J. H. East Woodhay,  
Hants
- \*Ashworth, Rev. J. A. Bras. Coll.
- Atkinson, Rev. M. Lincoln Coll.
- Attwood, Rev. E. W. Jesus Coll.
- Aubin, Rev. Philip, Jersey
- \*Audland, Rev. W. F. Queen's Coll.
- Austen, Ven. Archdeacon, Demerara
- Austin, Rev. J. T. Aldworth, Berks
- \*Awdry, Rev. C. New Sampford,  
Braintree, Essex
- \*Bacon, R. W. Esq. King's Coll. Camb.
- Badeley, E. Esq. Temple
- \*Bagge, Rev. James, Lincoln
- Bagot, G. T. Esq. Exeter Coll.
- Baillie, Rev. Evan, Leigh on Mendip,  
Frome
- Bailey, Rev. Wm.
- Baker, C. F. Esq. Exeter Coll
- Baldwin, Rev. C. F. St. John's Coll.
- Ball, Mr. Bookseller, Wells
- Ballas, Rev. J.
- †Balston, H. Esq. Magd. Coll.
- Bampton, A. H. Esq. Plymouth
- †Bandinel, Rev. Bulkeley, D.D. Bodleian  
Librarian
- Bange, Mr. Chas.
- Barber, Rev. W. Wigston
- †Baring, Rev. C. Kingsworthy, Hants
- Barker, Rev. J. C. Grenada
- Barker, Rev. H. Raymond, Mert. Coll.
- Barker, Rev. C. Raymond, Oakridge
- \*Barker, Rev. F. Raymond, Oriel Coll.
- Barlow, Rev. T.
- Barnes, Rev. J. W. Trinity Coll. Camb.
- Barnes, Venerable Archdeacon, Sowton,  
Exeter
- Barnstaple Clerical Book Club
- Barrett, Rev. W. Stratford-on-Avon.
- \*Barrow, Rev. John, Queen's Coll.
- Barter, Rev. W. B. Burghclere, Hants
- Bartholomew, Alfred, Esq.
- Bartholomew, Rev. Canon, Exeter
- Bartholomew, Rev. C. C. Lympstone,  
Devon
- Barton, Rev. J. H. Wicken, North-  
ampton
- Batcheller, Mr. Bookseller, Dover
- Bath Clerical Society

## SUBSCRIBERS.

3

- Baxter, Rev. Arthur, Croydon  
 Bayford, John, Esq.  
 Bayldon, Rev. J.  
 Bayley, W. R. Esq. Bath  
 Bayliff, Rev. T. L. King's Walden, Herts.  
 \*Bayly, Rev. W. H. R. Stapleton, near Bristol  
 Bayne, Rev. Thos. Vere, Warrington  
 Baynes, Mr. A. C. Bookseller, Liverpool  
 \*Beadon, Rev. H. W. Latton, near Cricklade  
 Beadon, Rev. Rich. à Court, Cheddar, Somerset  
 \*Beaufort, Rev. D. A.  
 Bedford, Rev. H. Dinton Bassett  
 Beckwith, Rev. S. B. Tilehurst, Sussex  
 Begbie, — Esq. Pemb. Coll. Camb.  
 Beitch, Rev. W. D.  
 Bell, Rev. Henry, Ruddington  
 Bell, Rev. John, Oulton  
 Bell, W. W. Esq. Civil Service, Bombay  
 Bellairs, Rev. W. Bedworth  
 Bellairs, Rev. H. W. Buckley, Flintshire  
 \*Bellamy, Rev. J. W. Merchant Taylors' School  
 Bellasis, Edward, Esq.  
 Belli, Rev. C. A. Southweald, Essex  
 \*Bellingham, Rev. J. G. Farmington, Gloucestershire  
 Bennett, Rev. E. Leigh, Lechlade, Gloucestershire  
 Bennett, Rev. W. B. Sandnell  
 Bentley, Rev. T. M. A. Manchester  
 Berkeley, Rev. G. C. South Minster, Essex  
 Bernard, T. D. Esq. Exeter College  
 Berry, Rev. P. Cork  
 Bethune, Rev. G.  
 Bevan, R. Esq. Rougham  
 Bickersteth, Rev. E. Watton, Herts  
 Biggor, D. Esq.  
 Birch, Rev. E. Weston  
 Bird, Rev. Godfrey, Great Wigborough, Essex  
 Biron, Rev. Edwin, Hythe, Kent  
 \*Bishops' College, Calcutta  
 Blackburn, Rev. P. Poulshot, Devizes  
 Blackburn, Rev. J. Royston  
 Blackwell, Rev. Wm. Morden, Surrey  
 Blackwood and Sons, Edinburgh  
 Blakiston, Rev. R. Chichester  
 Blandy, Rev. Francis J. Netheravon, Amesbury, Wilts  
 Bleakley, Mr. Bookseller, Dublin  
 \*Blew, Rev. W. J. Nuthurst, Sussex  
 \*Bliss, Rev. James, Bradford  
 Bliss, Rev. W. Bath  
 Blower, — Esq. Wolverhampton  
 Bloxam, Rev. J. R. Magd. Coll.  
 Blunt, Rev. W. Swaffham  
 Boissier, Rev. P. E. Malvern Wells  
 Boissier, Rev. G. R. Penshurst  
 Bolster, Mr. L. H. Bookseller, Cork  
 Bolton, Lord  
 Bond, Rev. N. Holme House, Dorset  
 \*Bonney, Rev. Thos. Rugeley  
 Bonney, Ven. Archdeacon, King's Cliff, Oundle  
 Boodle, Rev. R. G. Compton Dando, near Bath  
 †Borrodale, Rev. A. Ch. Ch.  
 Bosanquet, Rev. E. (Chrysostom)  
 \*Bosanquet, Rev. R. W.  
 Bosanquet, James, Esq.  
 Bosanquet, S. Esq. East Woodhay, Newbury  
 Bosanquet, W. H. Esq.  
 Bosanquet, S. Esq. Montagu Place  
 Bourke, Rev. S. G.  
 Bourne, Geo. Esq. Bath  
 \*Bowden, J. W. Esq.  
 Bowdler, Rev. T. Sydenham  
 Bowles, H. A. Esq. St. John's Coll.  
 Bowles, Rev. F. A. Graffham, Sussex  
 †Bowstead, Rev. J. Greetham near Horncastle  
 \*Bowyer, Rev. W. A.  
 Boyle, Rev. John, Brighouse, Yorkshire  
 Bradford, Rev. C. Vicar of Arlington, Sussex  
 Bradshaw, J. Esq. Nottingham  
 Bray, late Rev. Dr. Associates of 5 copies  
 Bray, Rev. E. A.  
 Brereton, Chas. Esq. New Coll.  
 Brereton, Rev. John, New Coll.  
 Brett, Mr. Stoke Newington  
 \*Brewer, Rev. J. S. Queen's Coll.  
 Brewster, Rev. W. Buckland Newton, near Cerne Abbas, Dorset  
 Brickwood, W. Esq. St. Mary Hall

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Bridges, B. C. Esq. Oriel Coll.
- Bridges, Rev. Brook Edw. Mert. Coll.
- †Bridges, Rev. A. H. Beddington House,  
near Croydon
- Bridges, Rev. C. Old Newton, Stow-  
market
- Brightwell, Mr. Barnstaple
- \*Brine, James G. Esq. St. John's Coll.
- Bristol Literary Society
- Broadbent, Rev. C. F. Worfield, Shrop-  
shire
- Brockman, Rev. J. St. Clement's,  
Sandwich, Kent
- Brogden, Rev. James
- Brook, Rev. W. Bentley Rectory,  
Ipswich, Suffolk
- \*Brooke, Rev. T. R. Avening,  
Minchinhampton
- Brooke, Rev. W.
- Brooksbank, Rev. C. Ch. Ch.
- Broughton, H. V. Esq. St. Peter's Coll.  
Cambridge
- Broughton, Rev. B. S. Washington,  
Durham
- †Browell, Rev. W. R. Pembroke Coll.
- Brown, Messrs. Booksellers, Leicester
- Brown, Rev. E. Leeds
- †Brown, Rev. Henry, Chichester
- Brown, Rev. Henry
- \*Browne, Rev. R. W. King's Coll.  
London
- Brown, Rev. W. L. Ch. Ch.
- Browne, Rev. T. C. Magdalene Hall
- Browne, Rev. W. R. Harlington,  
Hounslow
- Browne, Rev. E. H. Emmanuel Coll.  
Camb.
- Bruce, Lewis, Esq. Balliol Coll.
- Bruce, Rev. W. Duffryn, near Cardiff
- Bryant, Mr. L. Bookseller, Gloucester
- Brymer, Ven. Archdeacon, Pulteney  
Street, Bath
- \*Buchanan, Mrs. Dursley, Gloucester-  
shire
- Buck, — Esq. Jersey
- Buckerfield, Rev. F. H. Little Bedwin
- Buckle, W. H. Esq. Bridgewater
- Buckley, Mr.
- \*Buckley, Rev. Joseph, Hillsley
- Buckley, W. E. Esq. Brasenose Coll.
- Buckley, W. H. G. Esq. Bradford,  
Yorkshire
- Bukett, T. Esq. Malton
- Bull, Rev. John, D.D. Canon of  
Ch. Ch.
- \*Buller, Rev. A. Mary Tavy, Tavistock
- Buller, John Edw. Esq.
- Bulley, Rev. F. Magdalene Coll.
- Bullock, W. Esq. Kilburn
- Bunting, Rev. E. S.
- Bunyon, Robert J. Esq.
- Burton, Rev. J. F.
- Burnaby, Rev. Robt. Leicester
- Burney, Rev. C. Magdalene
- Burns, Mr. I.
- \*Burrows, Rev. H. N. Hull College
- \*Burrows, H. W. Esq. St. John's Coll.
- Burton, T. Esq. St. Peter's Coll.  
Cambridge
- \*Bute, The Marquis of
- Butler, Rev. Dr. Clergy Orphan School,  
St. John's Wood
- Butler, Rev. I. Inkpen, Newbury
- Butler, Rev. Jas. York
- Butler, Rev. T. Midhurst
- Buttemer, Rev. Mr. Aldham
- Butler, W. J. Esq. B.A. Dogmersfield,  
Hants
- \*Butterfield, Rev. John, Bradford, York-  
shire
- Butterworth, Rev. J. H. Exeter Coll.
- Caistor, Wm. Y. Esq.
- \*Caldwell, Captain
- Caldwell, Rev. R. Madras
- Cambridge Union Society
- Campbell, Rev. H.
- Campbell, Rev. S. C. St. Nicholl's, near  
Cardiff
- †Campion, H. Esq. Brighton
- \*Campion, Rev. Heathcote, Danny
- Canterbury Clerical Book Society
- Capes, Rev. J. M. Shipton-le-Moine,  
Tetbury
- Capper, Rev. D. Huntley, Gloucestershire
- Capper, Rev. George, Wherstead
- \*Capper, S. J. Esq. Leyton

## SUBSCRIBERS.

5

- Carey, E. L. Esq. Philadelphia
- Carey, Rev. C.
- \*Carey, Rev. H. Oriel Coll.
- Carlyon, Rev. E.
- Carlyon, Rev. J. St. Merin, Cornwall
- Carlyon, Rev. Philip, Colchester
- Carrighan, Rev. G.
- Carter, Rev. W. Eton College
- Carter, Rev. John, St. John's Coll.
- Carter, Rev. Mr. Bristol
- \*Carter, Rev. T. T. Piddlehinton, Dorset
- Carthew, Rev. J. Trenglos, Launceston
- Cartwright, Rev. J. B.
- Carwardine, Rev. C. W. Tolleshunt Knights, Essex
- †Cary, Isaac Preston, Esq.
- Case, Rev. James, Liverpool
- Cator, Mr. Launceston
- Cator, Rev. John, Wakefield
- Caulfield, Rev. W. Pallas, Kerry
- Cavendish, Hon. and Rev. A. Stanmore, Middlesex
- \*Cavendish, Hon. Richard
- \*Chaffers, Rev. T. Brasen-nose Coll.
- Chambers, J. D. Esq.
- Chambers, O. L. Esq. Univ. Coll.
- Champernowne, H. Esq. Ch. Ch.
- Champernowne, R. Esq. Ch. Ch.
- Chandler, Rev. J. Witley
- Chanter, Rev. Mr. Ilfracombe
- Chapman, C. Esq. Trinity Coll.
- Chapman, Rev. J. M. Balliol Coll.
- Charlton, T. Esq. Chilwell, Nottingham
- \*Chase, D. P. Esq. Oriel Coll.
- \*Chase, T. H. Esq. Trinity Coll.
- Cheetham Library, Manchester
- \*Chepmell, Rev. H. L. M. Pemb. Coll.
- \*Chessyre, Rev. W. J. Worcester
- Chester, Rev. Anthony, Chicheley Hall, Newport
- Cheyne, Rev. P. Aberdeen
- Chichester, Dean and Chapter of
- Chichester, Very Rev. the Dean of
- Childers, Mrs. Walbroke
- Christie, A. J. Esq. Fellow of Oriel Coll.
- Christie, Rev. F. Badgeworth, near Cheltenham
- \*Church, R. W. Esq. Oriel Coll.
- Church, W. Esq. Univ. Coll. Durham
- \*Churton, Rev. Edw. Crayke, near Easingwold
- Circleaux, Rev. J. Whiston
- Clarke, S. Esq. Turnham Green
- Clarke, Rev. E. W. Great Yeldham, Essex
- Clarke, Rev. H. Danvers, Exeter Coll.
- Clarke, Rev. Henry, Incumbent of Gisborough, Yorkshire
- Clarke, Rev. S. Beddington, near Croydon, Surrey
- Clarke, S. Esq. St. John's Coll.
- Clark, B. S. Esq.
- Clark, Fred. Esq.
- Clark, G. N. Esq. Newcastle-on-Tyne
- Clark, Mr. Wm. Manchester
- Clark, Rev. J. W. Leeds
- Clark, Rev. John, Leeds
- Clark, Rev. J. Dixon, Belford, Newcastle
- Clayton, Rev. J. H. Bath
- Clayton, — Esq. Twickenham
- Clayton, Mr. Chas. Manchester
- Claxton, Rev. B. S. D.D. Gloucester
- \*Cleaver, Rev. J. F. Great Coxwell Berks
- Clement, Rev. B. P. Canon of Winchester
- \*Clements, Jacob, Esq. Oriel Coll.
- \*Cleobury, Rev. C. Steeple Aston, Oxon.
- Clerk, W. Esq. Trinity Coll.
- Clerke, Ven. C. C. Archdeacon of Oxford
- \*Clerke, Rev. Wm. Melton Mowbray
- Clifton, Mrs. Kensington
- \*Clissold, Rev. A. Stoke Newington
- \*Clutterbuck, Rev. H. Exeter Coll.
- Cockin, M. Esq. Rangeworthy, Iron Acton
- Cocks, Hon. and Rev. J. S. Worcester
- †Cocks, Rev. Charles
- Codd, Rev. E. T. Minchin-Hampton, Stroud
- Codd, Rev. E. T. St. John's Coll., Cambridge
- \*Codrington College Library, Barbados
- Coffin, R. A. Esq. Ch. Ch.
- Coit, Rev. T. D. President of the Transylvanian University, U. S.
- Cole, Geo. Edw. Esq.
- Cole, Rev. C. Peterhead
- \*Coleridge, Hon. Mr. Justice
- Coleridge, Rev. E. Eton Coll.
- Coleridge, F. G. Esq. Ottery St. Mary
- \*Coleridge, H. N. Esq.

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- †Coleridge, Rev. Derwent, Chelsea  
 \*Coles, Rev. G. Croydon  
 †College of Doctors of Law, Doctors' Commons  
 Collett, W. L. Esq. Queen's Coll.  
 Colley, Rev. James, Shrewsbury  
 Collings, Mr. E. Bookseller, Bath  
 †Collins, C. M. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 \*Collis, Rev. J. D. Worcester Coll.  
 Collison, Rev. F. W. St. John's, Camb.  
 Collyns, Chas. Henry, Esq. Ch. Ch.  
 Coltman, Rev. George, Stickney, Lincolnshire  
 †Colson, C. Esq. Cambridge  
 Colvile, Frederick L. Esq. Trinity  
 Colville, James W. Esq.  
 Combe and Crossley, Leicester  
 Combs, John, Esq.  
 Compigne, D. Esq. Gosport  
 Compton, Rev. B. Unsworth near Bury, Lancashire  
 Connell, Rev. A. O. Dublin  
 Constable, Esq. Jesus College, Cambridge  
 Cooper, Rev. E. P. Vicarage, Burford, Oxon. (Tr. of S. Chrys.)  
 Cooper, Rev. G. M. Wilmington, Lewes  
 Cooper, Rev. R. Howe, Norfolk  
 Copeland, Rev. W. J. Trinity Coll.  
 Coplestone, Rev. R. E. Barnes, Surrey  
 †Copleston, Rev. W. J. Oriel College, (Chrysostom)  
 Corbett, Ven. S. Archdeacon of York, Wortley, Sheffield  
 \*Cornish, Rev. Dr. King's School, Ottery St. Mary  
 Cornish, Rev. Hubert K. Merton Vicarage, Oxfordshire  
 Cornish, Rev. C. L. Exeter Coll.  
 \*Cornthwaite, Rev. T. Hornsey  
 Cory, Isaac Preston, Esq.  
 Cosens, Rev. Robert, Dorchester  
 Cosserat, G.P. Graham, Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Cotes, Rev. Peter, Litchfield, Hants  
 Cotton, Rev. Richard Lynch, D.D. Provost of Worcester Coll.  
 \*Cotton, Rev. W. C. Ch. Ch.  
 Cotton, William, Esq. Bank of England  
 Courtenay, Lord, Powderham Castle  
 \*Courtenay, Francis, Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Courtney, W. P. Esq. Exeter Coll.
- \*Coventry Theological Book Society  
 Cowie, Mr. St. John's Coll. Cambridge  
 \*Cox, Rev. W. H. St. Mary Hall  
 \*Cox, Rev. J. Walgrave  
 Coxson, Rev. Mr. Davenham, Cheshire  
 Coxwell, G. S. Esq. Newcastle-on-Tyne  
 Cragg, Rev. Richard, Wymondham  
 \*Crawford, J. R. Esq. Lincoln Coll.  
 Crawley, C. Esq. Fitzroy Farm, Highgate  
 Crewe, Lord, Trustees of,  
 \*Crichlow, Rev. H. M. Poundstock, Cornwall  
 Crichton, Rev. M.  
 Cripps, J. M. jun. Esq. Novington, near Lewes  
 Croft, Archdeacon, Saltwood, Hythe  
 Crofton, Morgan, jun. Esq. Boyle, Ireland  
 Crompton, Rev. J. L. Trin. Coll. Camb.  
 Cross, Mr. John, Bookseller, Leeds  
 Crosse, T. F. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 †Cureton, Rev. W. British Museum  
 Currer, Miss, Eshton Hall, Yorkshire  
 \*Currey, Mr. St. John's Coll. Cambridge  
 Currie, Rev. Horace G. Milford  
 \*Currie, Rev. James, 14, Great Cumberland Place  
 Curties, Rev. T. C. Frenchay, near Bristol  
 Curry, Mr. W. Bookseller, Dublin
- Dalgairns, J. D. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 \*Dalton, Rev. W. Lloyd House, Wolverhampton  
 Dalton, Rev. W. Inworth  
 \*Dalton, Rev. C. B. Wadham Coll.  
 Dalton, Mr.  
 Daly, Rev. William  
 \*Daman, Rev. Charles, Oriel Coll.  
 Danby, T. B. Esq. Kendal  
 \*Dansey, Rev. Wm.  
 \*Darby, Rev. Christopher, Knocktopher  
 Darnell, Rev. W. Stanhope, Durham  
 \*Darling, Mr. James, 22, Little Queen Street, London  
 Darling, Rev. Thomas St. John's Coll. Cambridge  
 Darwall, Rev. L. Criggion, near Shrewsbury  
 \*Dasent, G. W. Esq. Magdalen Hall

## SUBSCRIBERS.

7

- Davies, Mr. John, Bookseller, Shrewsbury  
 Davies, Rev. E. Leominster  
 Davies, Rev. J. Abbenhall, Gloucestershire  
 Davies, Rev. W. L. Elizabeth College, Guernsey  
 Davison, Mrs. College Green, Worcester  
 \*Dawson, C. Esq. Baymont Lodge, Torquay, Devon  
 Dawson, Rev. G. Exeter Coll.  
 \*Dawson, J. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Dawson, Rev. I. Massey, Abinger Rectory, near Dorking  
 Dawson, Rev. W. A. Christ's Coll. Cambridge  
 Day, Rev. John D. Stone, Dartford  
 Dayman, Rev. E. A. Exeter Coll.  
 †Dayman, A. J. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 \*Deacon, Rev. G. E. C. C. C.  
 Dealtry, Rev. Dr. Clapham  
 \*Dean, Rev. W. S. Abdon  
 Dean, Rev. Mr. Exeter  
 Deane, Rev. H. Gillingham, nr. Shaftesbury  
 Debrisay, Rev. J. T.  
 Deedes, Rev. Gordon  
 Delafosse, Mrs. Addiscombe  
 Demain, Rev. Henry, Hertford  
 \*Demainbray, Rev. F. Bilton, near Rugby  
 \*Demainbray, Rev. Mr. Shipton-on-Stour  
 Demerara Clerical Library  
 Denny, Rev. A. Mauritius  
 Denton, Rev. Henry, Dunton Bassett, Leicester  
 De Tessier, A. P. Esq. C. C. C.  
 \*De Tessier, G. Esq. C. C. C.  
 Dew, Lieutenant  
 Dewhurst, Mr. Bookseller, Huddersfield  
 Dewhurst, Rev. John  
 \*Dickinson, F. H. Esq.  
 Dickinson, Harvey, Esq. Nutfield, Surrey  
 \*Dickinson, T. H. Esq.  
 \*Dimsdale, Charles, Esq. Essendon Place, Herts.  
 Dingwall, Charles, Esq.  
 Dixon, Rev. I. I. Abram, Manchester  
 Dixon, Rev. James, Sheffield  
 Dixon, Rev. Robert, King Wm. Coll. Isle of Man  
 \*Dobson, — Esq. Liverpool  
 Dodd, Rev. W. Newcastle-on-Tyne  
 \*Dodgson, Rev. C. Daresbury, Warrington  
 Dodson, Rev. Jas. Lichfield  
 \*Dodsworth, Rev. William  
 †Donkin, W. F. Esq. Univ. Coll.  
 Donne, Rev. Jas. Bedford  
 Dornford, Rev. J. Plymtree, Devon  
 Douglas, Edward, Esq. Ch. Ch.  
 Douglas, Rev. H. Whickham, Durham  
 \*Douglas, — Esq. Stratford  
 \*Dowding, Rev. B. C. Devizes  
 Downes, Rev. J.  
 Drummond, Henry, Esq. Albury Park, Guildford  
 Drummond, Rev. Arthur, Charlton  
 Drummond, Rev. Spencer R. Brighton  
 Drummond, Rev. R. Feering  
 Drummond, Colonel, Bath  
 Drury, Rev. H. J. Worcester Coll.  
 Dry, Rev. Thos. Forest, Walthamstead  
 Duffield, Rev. R. Frating, near Colchester  
 \*Dugard, Rev. Geo. Manchester  
 †Dukes, R. M. Esq. Lincoln Coll.  
 Dundas, Wm. Pitt, Esq. Edinburgh  
 †Dunn, John, Esq. Advocate, Aberdeen  
 Dunn, Rev. John  
 Dunnington, Rev. Joseph, Thicket Hall  
 Dunraven, Earl of,  
 \*Dunster, Rev. Mr. Tottenham  
 Durnford, Rev. Francis, Eton College  
 Dyer, Rev. J. H. Waltham, Essex  
 \*Dyke, Rev. Henry, Cottisford, Oxon.  
 \*Dyke, Rev. W. Fellow of Jesus Coll. Cradley, Herefordshire  
 Dymock, Rev. J. Rector of Roughton  
 \*Dymock, Rev. W. G. Hatch Beauchamp, Ilminster  
 Dyne, Rev. J. B. Highgate  
 \*Dyson, Rev. C. Dogmersfield, 2 copies  
 Dyson, Rev. F. Tidworth  
 East, E. Esq. Magdalen Hall  
 Eaton and Sons, Booksellers, Worcester  
 Eaton, W. Esq. Weston, Whitwell, York

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- Eden, Rev. R. Rochford, Leigh, Essex  
 Edge, Rev. W. J. Waldringfield, Woodbridge  
 Edgell, Rev. E. East Hill, Frome  
 Edinburgh, University of  
 Edmonstone, Sir Charles, Bart.  
 Edmonstone, Rev. C.  
 \*Edwards, Rev. A. Magd. Coll.  
 \*Edwards, Rev. J. Newington  
 Edle, Rev. Edward Brested, Bognor  
 Eland, Rev. H. G. Bedminster, Bristol  
 Elder, Rev. Edward, Balliol Coll.  
 Eley, Rev. H. Aldham, Essex  
 Elleriton, Rev. E. D.D. Magdalen Coll.  
 †Elliott, C. J. Esq. St. John's Coll.  
 Ellis, Mr. Kitson  
 Ellison, Rev. Noel T. Huntspill, Bridgewater  
 Ellon Episcopal Chapel Library  
 \*Ellon, Rev. Mr. G. N. B.  
 Elmhirst, Rev. Edw. Shawell Rectory  
 Elwes, C. C. Esq. Bath  
 Elwes, J. M. Esq.  
 \*Elmhirst, Rev. Geo. Leeds  
 Elphin, Ven. Archdeacon of, Ardearnes Boyle, Ireland  
 \*Elrington, Rev. Dr. Regius Professor of Divinity, Dublin  
 Emmanuel College Library, Cambridge  
 \*Erskine, Hon. and Rev. H. D. Swithland, Leicestershire  
 Estcourt, T. G. Bucknall, Esq. M.P.  
 Estcourt, Gloucestershire  
 Estcourt, Rev. E. W. Long Newton, Wilts  
 †Estcourt, Rev. E. E. Badgeworth, Cheltenham  
 Etough, Rev. Dr. Claydon, Ipswich  
 \*Evans, Herbert N. M.D. Hampstead  
 Evans, Rev. E. C. Sugham  
 Evans, Rev. Thomas, Gloucester  
 Evans, Rev. W. Burlton Court  
 \*Evans, Rev. T. S. Brompton  
 \*Evans, Rev. A. B. D.D. Market Bosworth, Leicestershire  
 Exeter, Very Rev. The Dean of  
 Ewing, Rev. W. Lincoln Coll.  
 Eyre, Rev. H. S. Bryanstone Square  
 \*Faber, Rev. F. W. University Coll.  
 Falcon, Rev. Wm. Buxted, Sussex  
 Falconer, Rev. Dr. Bath  
 Fallow, Rev. T. M.  
 \*Farebrother, Rev. Thomas, Brampton, Market Harborough  
 Farley, Rev. T. Ducklington, Oxon  
 Farnworth, Mr.  
 \*Farrer, James William, Esq.  
 Faulkner, Mr. Bookseller, Doncaster  
 Fawcett, Rev. Jas. Leeds  
 Fawkes, Mrs. the Terrace, Putney  
 Fearon, Rev. D. R.  
 Fenwick, Rev. M. J. Donegal  
 Felix, Rev. Peter  
 Fellowes, Rev. C. Shottesham, Norfolk  
 Fellows, Mrs. Money Hill House, Rickmansworth, Hertfordshire  
 \*Fessey, Rev. G. F. Tardebigg, Worcestershire  
 Few, Robert, Esq.  
 Fielding, Rev. H. Manchester  
 Finch, Miss C.  
 Fisher, Rev. A. Bridport  
 Fisher, Rev. W. A. Hilmore, Cork  
 Fitzgerald, Rev. A. Carlow  
 Fitzgerald, C. R. Esq.  
 Fitzroy, Rev. August. Fakenham, Thetford  
 Fleming, J. Esq. St. John's Coll. Camb.  
 Fletcher, Rev. C. Southwell  
 Fletcher, Sir Henry, Bart. Ashley Park, Walton on Thames  
 Floyer, Rev. T. B. Oldershaw, Lichfield  
 Ford, Rev. J. Exeter  
 Ford, Wm. Esq.  
 \*Ford, Mr. Bookseller, Islington  
 Forester, Hon. and Rev. Orlando, Brazeley, Shifnoll  
 \*Formby, Rev. R. Brasenose Coll.  
 Forster, Rev. H. B. Stratton, Cirencester  
 \*Forsyth, Dr. Aberdeen  
 Fortescue, Rev. R. H. Revelstock, Devon  
 Foskett, Rev. T. M. Enfield, Middlesex  
 Foulkes, Rev. H. P. Balliol Coll.  
 Fowler, Rev. H. Liskeard, Cornwall  
 Fox, Rev. Charles, Bridport  
 Fox, Mr.  
 Fraser, Rev. Robert, Lyminge, Hythe  
 Freeman, Rev. H. Peterboro'  
 Freith, F. H. Esq. Univ. Coll. Durham  
 Froude, Ven. R. H. Archdeacon of Totness

## SUBSCRIBERS.

9

- \*Froude, Wm. Esq. Bristol
- Fryer, William, jun. Esq.
- Fulford, Rev. F. Croydon, Arrington, Camb.
- \*Furlong, Rev. C. J. Warfield, Berks
- Fursdon, Mrs. Fursdon House, near Exeter
- \*Gace, Rev. Frederick Aubert, Magdalen Hall
- \*Garden, Rev. Francis
- Gardner, Rev. W. Rochford, Essex
- Garratt, John, Esq. jun. Farringdon House, near Exeter
- Gathercole, Rev. M. A. North Brixton
- \*Gaunt, Rev. C. Isfield, near Uckfield
- Gaye, Rev. C. H.
- \*Gayfere, Rev. Thomas, Bradford
- \*Gawthern, Rev. Francis Secker, Exeter Coll.
- George, Henry, Bookseller, Westerham, Kent
- \*Gepp, Rev. Geo. Edw. Ashbourn
- Germon, Rev. Nicholas, St. Peter's, Manchester
- Gibbings, Rev. Rich. Trin. Coll. Dublin
- Gibson, Mr. I. S. Manchester
- \*Gibson, J. Esq. Jesus Coll. Camb.
- \*Gibson, Rev. W. Fawley
- Gillet, Rev. G. E.
- Gladstone, Rev. John, Liverpool
- Gladstone, John, Esq. Fasque, Fetter-cairne, Kincardineshire
- Gladstone, William Ewart, Esq. M.P. Ch. Ch. 2 copies
- Gladwin, Rev. C. Liverpool
- Glanville, Rev. Edward F. Wheatfield Rectory, Tetsworthy
- \*Glencross, Rev. J. Balliol College
- \*Glenie, J. M. Esq. St. Mary Hall Glossop, Rev. Hen. Vicar of Isleworth
- Glover, Rev. F. A. Dover
- Glover, Rev. R. A. Dover
- Glynne, Rev. H. Hawarden Rectory, Flintshire
- Godfrey, Rev. W. Tibberton, Worcester
- Goldsmid, Nathaniel, Esq. M.A. Exeter Coll.
- Goldsmith, H. Esq. St. Peter's Coll. Camb
- Gooch, Rev. J. H. Head Master of Heath School, Halifax
- Goodford, C. O. Esq. Eton Coll.
- \*Goodlake, Rev. T. W. Pembroke Coll.
- Goodwin, H. Esq. Caius Coll. Cambridge
- Gordon, Osborne, Esq. Ch. Ch.
- Gordon, C. S. Esq. Exeter
- Gordon, H. Esq. Kendal
- Gordon, W. Esq. St. Leonard's
- Gother, Rev. A. Chale Rectory, Isle of Wight
- Gough, Rev. H. Penzance
- +Goulburn, H. Esq.
- Gould, Rev. R. J. Farnham Royal
- Gower, Rev. John, Ashperston
- Graham, Rev. W. H.
- Grantham Clerical Library
- Grant and Bolton, Messrs. Booksellers, Dublin
- Grant and Son, Messrs. Booksellers, Edinburgh
- Graham, Mr. Bookseller, Oxford
- \*Grant, Rev. A. Chelmsford
- Grant, Rev. James B. Dublin
- \*Granville, Rev. Court, Mayfield, near Ashbourn
- Grapel, Mr. W. Liverpool
- Graves, Rev. John, Ashperston
- Green, Mr. Bookseller, Leeds
- Green, Rev. H. Cople, Bedfordshire
- Green, Rev. M. J. Lincoln Coll.
- Greene, R. Esq. Lichfield
- Greenwell, W. Esq. Univ. Coll. Durham
- \*Greenwood, Ralph, Esq. Palace House, near Burnley
- \*Gregory, Rev. G. Sandford, Devon
- Gresley, Rev. Sir Nigel, Bart.
- Gresley, Rev. W. Lichfield
- \*Gresley, Rev. J. M. Exeter Coll.
- Greswell, Rev. R. Worcester Coll.
- Gretton, Rev. R. H. Nantwich, Cheshire
- Grey, Rev. H. Exeter
- \*Grey, Hon. and Rev. Francis, Buxton, Derby
- Grey, Hon. and Rev. John, Wooler, Northumberland
- Grierson, J. Esq.
- \*Grieve, Rev. Mr. Ellon, Aberdeen
- Grimstead, Rev. G.
- Groves, Chas. Esq. Liverpool
- +Grub, George, Esq. Advocate, Aberdeen
- Grueber, Rev. C. S. Magd. Hall

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Guillemard, Rev. J. St. John's Coll.
- \*Guillemard, Rev. H. P. Trinity Coll.
- Gunner, Rev. W. Winchester
- \*Gutch, Rev. R. Segrave, Leicestershire
- Haight, Rev. B. I. New York, U. S.
- \*Haines, W. C. Esq. Hampstead
- Haines, Mr. Bookseller, Oxford
- Halcombe, John, Esq.
- Hale, Rev. G. C. Hillingdon
- \*Hale, Ven. Archdeacon, Charter House
- \*Hale, Rev. Matthew B. Alderley, Gloucestershire
- Hall, Mr. Bookseller, Cambridge
- Hall, Rev. Adam, Drumbair, Ayrshire
- \*Hall, Rev. J. C. Isle of Man
- Hall, Rev. S. C.
- \*Hall, Rev. W. Manchester
- \*Hall, Rev. G. Rushock Medonte, Upper Canada
- Halliburton, Mr. Bookseller, Coldstream
- \*Hamilton, Rev. Jas. Beddington
- \*Hamilton, Rev. Walter Kerr, Merton Coll. Chaplain to the Bp. of Salisbury
- Hamilton, Mr. John, Southampton
- †Hannah, J. Esq. C. C. C.
- Hannaford, Mr. Bookseller, Exeter
- Harcourt, Rev. Vernon, West Dean House, Midhurst
- \*Harding, Rev. I. St. Ann's, Blackfriars
- Hardwick, Rev. Charles, Gloucester
- Harington, Rev. E. C. Exeter
- Harington, Rev. Rich. Oulde, Northampton
- \*Harness, Rev. Wm.
- Harper, Thos. Esq. Queen's Coll.
- Harper, T. V. Esq. Queen's Coll.
- Harrington, Rev. E. Exeter
- Harris, Hon. and Rev. C. A. Wilton, Wilts
- Harris, Hon. and Rev. W. L. T. All Souls
- Harrison, Benj. Esq. Clapham Common
- \*Harrison, Rev. B. Ch. Ch. Domestic Chaplain to the Abp. of Canterbury
- Harrison, Rev. H. Goudhurst, Kent
- Harrison, Rev. J. W. Fillingham Castle, Lincolnshire
- Harrison, W. Esq.
- Harter, Rev. G. Manchester
- Hartley, L. L. Esq. Middleton Lodge, near Richmond, Yorkshire
- Harvey, Rev. Mr. Bath
- Hasting, Rev. J. Arclay Kings, Worcestershire
- \*Hatherell, Rev. J. W. Charmouth Rectory, Dorset
- Hawker, Rev. R. S. Mootwinston, Cornwall
- \*Hawker, J. Esq. Balliol Coll.
- Hawks, Rev. F. S. D. D. New York, U.S.
- \*Hawkins, Rev. Edward, Pembroke Coll.
- \*Hawkins, Rev. E. Coleford, Gloucester
- Hawkins, Rev. Ernest, Exeter Coll.
- \*Hawkins, Rev. H. C. H. Lydney, Gloucester
- Hawks, Rev. W. Gateshead, Durham
- Hayden, Mrs. Thomas, Guildford
- \*Hayward, W. W. Esq.
- Hazlehurst, R. K. Esq. Trinity Coll. Cambridge
- Head, — Esq. Exeter
- Heath, Christopher, Esq.
- Heathcote, Sir Wm. Bart. Hursley Park, near Winchester
- \*Heathcote, Rev. C. J. Clapton
- Heathcote, Rev. G. North Tamerton
- †Heathcote, Rev. George, Connington Rectory, Stilton, Hants
- \*Heathcote, Rev. W. B. New Coll.
- Hedley, Rev. T. A. Gloucester
- Hemsley, Mr. W. Keyworth, Nottingham
- Henderson, Rev. T. Messing, Kelvedon
- \*Henderson, W. G. Esq. Magd. Coll.
- Henn, Rev. W. Garvagh, Londonderry
- Henry, C. S. Professor, New York University, U. S.
- Hervey, Hon. and Rev. Lord Arthur. Ickworth
- \*Hessey, Rev. J. A. St. John's Coll.
- Hewett, Rev. P. Binstead, Isle of Wight
- Hewitt, Hon. John J. Balliol Coll.
- Hewitt, T. S. Esq. Worcester Coll.
- Heycock, Rev. Owston, Leicestershire
- Heydon, Mr. J. Bookseller, Devonport
- \*Hibbert, Miss E. S.
- Higgs, Rev. R. W. Swansea
- Hildyard, Rev. James, Christ's Coll. Cambridge
- Hill, John, Esq. Glasgow
- \*Hill, Rev. E. Ch. Ch.
- Hill, Rev. R. Balliol Coll.

- Hindle, Rev. Joseph, Higham  
 Hinde, Rev. Thos. Liverpool  
 Hingeston, James Ansley, Esq.  
 Hippisley, J. H. Esq.  
 Hippisley, R. W. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Hoare, W. H. Esq. Ashurst Park, Tunbridge Wells  
 Hobhouse, Edmund, Esq. Balliol Coll.  
 Hocking, Richard, Esq. Penzance  
 Hodgson, Rev. Chas. Bodmin  
 Hodgson, Rev. J. Geo. St. Peter's, Thanet  
 Hodgson, Rev. John, St. Peter's, Thanet  
 \*Hodgson, Rev. J. F. Horsham  
 \*Hodgson, Rev. H.  
 Hodgson, W. Esq. Wanstead  
 Hodson, Rev. Mr. Salisbury  
 Hodson, J. S. Esq. Merton Coll.  
 Hogan, Rev. J. Tetbury, Gloucestershire  
 Hogben, Mr. Geo. Sheerness  
 Hogg, Rev. J. R. Brixham  
 Holden, Rev. Geo. Liverpool  
 \*Holden, Rev. W. R. Worcester  
 Holder, the Misses, Torquay  
 Holdsworth, Miss M. Dartmouth  
 \*Hole, Rev. George, Chumleigh, near Exeter  
 Hollis, Rev. G. P. Duddington, Somerset  
 Holmes, Hon. Mrs. A'Court  
 Holmes, Rev. Peter, Plymouth  
 Holthouse, Rev. C. S.  
 \*Hope, A. B. Esq. Trin. Coll. Camb.  
 Hook, Rev. Dr. W. F. Leeds  
 Hope, James R. Esq. Merton Coll.  
 Hopkins, Rev. A. Clent, Worcestershire  
 \*Hopkins, Rev. Thomas, Honington  
 \*Horncastle Clerical Society  
 Hornby, Rev. James, Winwick, Warriington  
 Hornby, Rev. Wm. St. Michael's Garstang, Lancashire  
 Hornby, R. W. B. Esq. University Coll. Durham  
 Horner, Chas. Esq. Mill Park, Somerset  
 Horner, Rev. John, Mells, Somerset  
 \*Horsfall, Rev. A. Grange, Derby  
 Horsfall, J. Esq. Standard Hill, Notts  
 \*Horsley, Rev. J. W. Ville of Dunkirk, Faversham, Kent  
 \*Hoskins, Rev. W. E. Canterbury  
 Hotham, Rev. C. Patrington, Hull  
 Hotham, Rev. J. G. Sutton-at-home, Dartford  
 Hotham, W. F. Esq. Ch. Ch.  
 Houghton, Rev. J. Matching  
 Houghton, Rev. W. Miln Bridge, near Huddersfield  
 Howard, Rev. W. Great Witchingham, Norfolk  
 Howard, Hon. C.  
 \*Howard, Hon. and Rev. Wm. Whiston, Rotherham, Yorkshire  
 Howell, Rev. Alexander, Southampton  
 Howell, Rev. H. Merton Coll.  
 Howell, Rev. A. Sedgley  
 \*Hubbard, Rev. Thos. Leytonstone  
 Huddleston, Rev. G. J.  
 Hudson and Co. Booksellers, Kendal  
 \*Hue, Dr.  
 \*Hughes, Rev. H.  
 Hulton, Rev. Campbell Grey, Manchester  
 Hulton, Rev. W.  
 Humphrys, — Esq. Univ. Coll. Durham  
 Hunt, R. S. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Hunter, Rev. W. St. John's Coll.  
 Hutchins, Rev. W. Bath  
 Hutchinson, Rev. Cyril, Hawkhurst, Kent  
 Hutchinson, Rev. C. Firle  
 Hutchinson, Rev. James, Chelmsford  
 Hutton, Rev. H. Filleigh, Devon  
 Hutton, Rev. W. Helsington, Kendal  
 Jackson, Rev. F. G. Brightstone, Isle of Wight  
 †Jackson, Rev. J. Islington  
 Jackson, Rev. Dr. Lowther, nr. Penrith  
 †Jacobson, Rev. W. Magd. Hall  
 Jaffray, Mr. Jas. Bookseller, Berwick  
 James, Rev. J. Rawmarsh, near Rotherham  
 \*James, Rev. Henry  
 James, Rev. E. Prebendary of Winchester  
 Janvrin, James H. Esq. Oriel  
 Jeanes, Mr. Bookseller, Exeter  
 \*Jeffray, Rev. L. W. Preston  
 Jeffreys, Rev. Henry Anthony, Ch. Ch.  
 \*Jelf, Rev. Richard William, D.D. Canon of Ch. Ch.  
 Jelf, Rev. W. E. Ch. Ch.  
 Jennett, Mr.

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- Jennings, Rev. M. J.  
 Jennings, Rev. J. Preb. of Westminster  
 Jeremie, Rev. F. J. Guernsey  
 Jeremie, Rev. T. T. Trinity College,  
     Cambridge  
 Illingworth, Rev. E. A.  
 Ince, Rev. Edward, Wigtoft  
 Inge, Rev. T. R. Southsea  
 Inglis, Sir R. H. Bart. M.P.  
 Ingram, Rev. Geo. Chedburgh, Suffolk  
 \*Ingram, Rev. R.  
 Inman, Rev. W. J.  
 Johnson, C. W. Esq. Balliol Coll.  
 Johnson, Miss  
 Johnson, Rev. E. M. Brooklands, Long  
     Island, U. S.  
 Johnson, Rev. J. Outwell  
 Johnson, Rev. S. Hinton Blewet  
 Johnson, Manuel John, Esq. Magd. Hall,  
     Radcliffe Observer  
 Johnson, Mr. Bookseller, Cambridge  
 \*Jones, Ven. H. C. Archdeacon of Essex  
 Jones, Rev. D. Stamford  
 Jones, Rev. E. Wigan  
 Jones, Rev. Edward, Fatherwell, near  
     West Malling, Kent  
 Jones, Rev. J. Hereford  
 Jones, Rev. H. J. Edinburgh  
 Jones, Rev. H. Llanfaes, Beaumaris  
 \*Jones, Rev. R. J. Newcastle-on-Tyne  
 \*Jones, William, Esq. M.A. Ball. Coll.  
 Jones, Mr. James, Manchester  
 Jones, W. B. Esq. Magdalen Hall  
 Jones, Rev. R. Branxton, Coldstream,  
     N.B.  
 Irby, Hon. and Rev. F. Hythe  
 \*Irons, Rev. W. J. Brompton  
 \*Irvine, Rev. A. Leicester  
 Irvine, Rev. J. Knowle, near Bristol  
 Irving, Rev. J. Kendal  
 Isaacson, Rev. John Fred. Freshwater,  
     Isle of Wight  
 Isham, Rev. A. All Souls Coll.
- Kane, J. Esq. Exmouth  
 Karslake, Rev. W. Colebrook, Devon  
 Karslake, Rev. W. H. Meshaw, South  
     Molton, Devon
- Keith, John, Bookseller, Glasgow  
 Keble, Miss  
 Keble, Rev. T. Bisley, Gloucestershire  
 Keigwin, Rev. James P. Wadham Coll.  
 Kekewich, S. T. Esq.  
 Kenney, Rev. F. Ch. Ch.  
 Kenrick, Rev. J. Horsham  
 \*Kent, Rev. G. D. Sudbrooke, near  
     Lincoln  
 Kenyon, Lord  
 Kerr, Hon. and Rev. Lord, Dittisham  
 Kerr, Lord Henry, Dittisham  
 Kerrier Clerical Club, Cornwall  
 Kershaw, Rev. G. W. Worcester  
 Keymer, Rev. N. Hertford  
 \*Kidd, Dr. Oxford  
 Kindersley, R. T. Esq.  
 King, Ven. Archdeacon  
 King, R. J. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 King, R. P. Esq. Bristol  
 King's College Library, London  
 \*Kitson, E. P. Esq. Balliol Coll.  
 Kitson, John F. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Knatchbull, Rev. H. E. Elmham, Norfolk  
 Knight, Rev. T. Ford, Northumberland  
 Knight, W. Esq. Worcester Coll.  
 Knollys, Rev. Erskine  
 \*Knowles, E. H. Esq. Queen's Coll.  
 Knowles,— Esq. Stratford Grove, Essex  
 Knox, Rev. H. B. Monk's Eleigh,  
     Hadleigh  
 Kyle, Rev. T. Cork  
 \*Kynnersley, E. S. Esq. Trinity Coll.
- Lace, F. John Esq. Ingthorpe Grange,  
     Yorkshire  
 Lade, John Wm. Esq.  
 \*Laing, Rev. David  
 Lake, W. C. Esq. Balliol Coll.  
 \*Lampen, Rev. R. Probus, Cornwall  
 \*Landor, Rev. R. E. Birlingham  
 Lance, Rev. Edw. Buckland St. Mary,  
     Somerset  
 Lance, Rev. E. Ilminster  
 \*Landon, Rev. C. W. Over-Whitacre,  
     Warwickshire

- Lane, Mrs. F.  
 Lane, Rev. C. Deal  
 Lane, Rev. E. Gloucester  
 Lane, Rev. C. Kennington  
 Lane, Rev. Samuel, Frome  
 Langbridge, Mr. Birmingham  
 Langdon, Rev. G. H. Oving  
 \*Langdon, Augustus, Esq.  
 Langmore, W. Esq. M.D.  
 \*Laprimaudaye, Rev. C. J. Leyton  
 Latham, Rev. Henry, Selmesdon, Sussex  
 Latimer, Rev. W. B. Tynemouth  
 Law, Rev. S. T. Chancellor of the Diocese of Lichfield  
 Law, Rev. W. T. Whitchurch, Charmouth, Devon  
 Lawrence, Rev. Alfred, Sandhurst, Kent  
 Lawrie, A. J. C. Esq.  
 Lawson, Rev. C. Richmond  
 Lawson, Rev. Robt.  
 Lawson, Rev. W. Delancey, Oakham  
 Layton, Rev. F. W. H. Islington  
 Leak, J. Bookseller, Alford, Lincolnshire  
 Lechmere, Rev. A. B.  
 Lee, Mr. Sidmouth  
 †Leefe, Rev. Audley End, Essex  
 Lefroy, Rev. A. C.  
 \*Legge, Rev. Henry, East Lavant, near Chichester  
 Legge, Rev. W. Ashtead  
 Leigh, Stratford, Esq.  
 Leigh, Wm. Esq. Little Aston Hall, Lichfield  
 \*Leighton, Rev. F. K. All Souls Coll.  
 Le Mesurier, John, Esq. Ch. Ch.  
 \*Leslie, Rev. Charles  
 Leslie, Mr. Bookseller, London  
 Lewis, Rev. David, Jesus Coll.  
 Lewis, Rev. G. Dundee  
 Lewis, Rev. R. Farway, near Honiton  
 \*Lewis, Rev. T. T. Aymestry, near Leominster  
 Ley, Rev. Jacob S. Ashprington, Devon  
 Ley, W. H. Esq. Trinity Coll.  
 Library of Congress, Washington  
 \*Library of Domus Scholarum, Wotton under-Edge  
 \*Liddell, Rev. Henry G. Ch. Ch.  
 Liddell, Rev. Thos. Edinburgh
- Lifford, Right Hon. Lord Viscount, Astley Castle, near Coventry  
 Light and Ridler, Bristol  
 Lindsell, J. Esq. St. Peter's Coll. Camb.  
 \*Lingard, Rev. Joshua, Curate of the Chapelry of Hulme, near Manchester  
 Linzee, Rev. E. H.  
 Litler, Rev. R. Poynton, near Macclesfield  
 \*Liveing, Rev. Henry Thomas, Stoke by Nayland, Suffolk  
 Liverpool Library  
 Lloyd, Rev. John F. Ballylany, Richhill, Ireland  
 Lockwood, Rev. John, Rector of Kingham, Oxon  
 Lockwood, Rev. Mr. Coventry  
 \*Lodge, Rev. B. Chigwell, Essex  
 Lomax, T. G. Esq. Lichfield  
 London Institution, The  
 Long, W. Esq. Bath  
 \*Lonsdale, Rev. John, King's College, London  
 Lord, Arthur Owen, Esq. Trinity Coll.  
 Losh, Miss, Woodside, Carlisle  
 Lott, Mr.  
 \*Lowe, John Wm. Esq.  
 Lowe, T. Esq. Oriel Coll.  
 Lowe, Rev. R. Misterton, Somerset  
 Lowe, Rev. T. H. Dean of Exeter  
 Lowe, Rev. R. F. Madeira  
 Lowe, Mr. Bookseller, Wimborne  
 Luke, Rev. W. Bradford, Wilts  
 Lumsden, Rev. H.  
 Lund, Mr. St. John's Coll. Cambridge  
 Lundie, Rev. W. Compton, Berwick-on-Tweed  
 \*Lush, Mr. Vicesimus, Corpus Christi College, Cambridge  
 Lusk, John, Esq. Glasgow  
 Lutener, Rev. T. B. Shrewsbury  
 Luxmore, Rev. J. H. M.  
 Lyall, Rev. Alfred  
 Lyall, Ven. W. R. Archdeacon of Colchester  
 Lyne, Rev. C. P. West Thorney, Sussex  
 Lyons, Rev. Samuel, Hempstead, Gloucestershire
- Maberly, Rev. T. A.  
 \*McCall, Rev. E. Winchester

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- Macauley, Rev. S. Ilerrick  
 Maclean, Rev. H. Coventry  
 Maclean, Rev. J. Sheffield  
 \*Macfarlane, Rev. J. D. Frant, Tunbridge Wells  
 MacLachlan, A. N. C. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Machlachlan, Stewart, and Co. Edinburgh  
 Mackinson, Rev. T. C. Colonial Chaplain, New South Wales  
 \*Macmullen, R. G. Esq. C.C.C.  
 Macpherson, Rev. A. Rothwell, near Kettering  
 Maddy, Rev. B. Shrewsbury  
 Madox, Wm. Esq.  
 Magdalene College Library  
 M'Arith, Rev. F. Loders, Dorset  
 M'Clintoch, G. F. Esq. Bengal Civil Service  
 \*Major, Rev. Dr. King's Coll. London  
 M'Iver, Rev. Wm. West Derby  
 Maitland, Rev. S. R.  
 Maitland, Rev. P. Blackburn, Lancashire  
 \*M'Laren, Major, Portobello, Greenock  
 Malcolm, Rev. Hen. Eckington, Cheshirefield  
 \*Mallock, Rev. Wm. Torquay  
 Mallory, Rev. G.  
 Manley, N. M. Esq. St. Jo.'s Coll. Camb.  
 Mann, Rev. W. Moxon, Clare Hall, Camb.  
 Manning, Ven. Hen. Archdeacon of Chichester, Lavington, Sussex  
 Manning, Mrs. Tillington, Sussex  
 Manning, Rev. G. W. Whittleson, Cambridgeshire  
 Markland, J. H. Esq. Bath  
 Markland, Thomas. Esq. Manchester  
 \*Marriott, Rev. J. Bradfield, Reading  
 \*Marriott, Rev. C. Oriel Coll. 2 copies  
 Marriott, Rev. F. A. Bilton, Rugby  
 Marsden, Rev. A. Gargrave  
 Marsden, Mr. Wm. Manchester  
 Marshall, Rev. Edward, C.C.C.  
 Marshall, Rev. Edward Ruskington, Sleaford, Lincoln  
 Marshall, Rev. T. W. Charlton, near Shaftesbury  
 Marsham, Rev. G. F. J. Allington, Maidstone  
 Martin, Rev. Richard, Menheniot  
 Martyn, Rev. J. Exeter
- \*Mason, Rev. W. Normanton  
 Massingberd, Rev. F. C. Ormsby, Spilsby  
 Masters, Rev. J. S. Greenwich  
 Matheson, G. F. Esq.  
 Maxwell, Henry C. Esq. York  
 May, Rev. George, Herne, Kent  
 Mayow, Rev. M. W. Market Lavington, Devizes  
 Mayow, W. R. Esq. Magdalen Hall  
 \*Meade, Rev. E. Stratford on Avon  
 Medley, Rev. J. Exeter  
 \*Medwyn, Hon. Lord, Edinburgh  
 \*Mence, Rev. J. W. Ilkley, Otley, Yorkshire  
 Mendham, Rev. J. Clophill, Beds.  
 Menzies, F. Esq. Brasenose Coll.  
 Merewether, Rev. Francis, Whitwick, Leicestershire  
 Mesham, Rev. A. B. Wotton, Kent  
 \*Metcalfe, Rev. W. Harleston, Norfolk  
 M'Ewen, Rev. A. Semington, Wilts  
 M'Glashen, Mr. James, Dublin  
 Milliken, Rev. Rich. Compton, Sussex  
 \*Mill, Rev. Dr.  
 Miller, Rev. C. Magdalen Coll.  
 Miller, Rev. John, Worcester Coll.  
 Benefield, Northamptonshire  
 Milles, Rev. T. Tenterden, Kent  
 Millner, Rev. W. Bristol  
 Mills, I. J. Esq. Lexden Park  
 Milward, Henry Esq. B.A. Clifton  
 Minster, Rev. T. Hunsingore, near Witherby  
 \*Moberly, Rev. Dr. Winchester  
 Money, Kyrle E. A. Esq. C.C.C. Camb.  
 Monroe, Rev. Edward, Oriel Coll.  
 Monsell, Wm. Esq. Tervoe, Limerick  
 \*Moody, Rev. Henry R. Chartham, near Canterbury  
 Moore, Rev. Arthur, Stratton, Gloucestershire  
 Moorsom, Captain, Lowndes Square  
 Mordaunt, Dowager Lady, Avenhurst, Stratford on Avon  
 Mordaunt, Sir John, Bart.  
 More, Rev. R. H. G. Larden Hall, Shropshire  
 Morgan, Rev. J. P. C. Llangwyryfor  
 Morgan, Rev. J.  
 Morrice, J. Esq. Sidcliff, near Sidmouth

## SUBSCRIBERS.

15

- Morrell, Baker, Esq. St. Giles, Oxford
- Morrell, F. Esq. St. Giles, Oxford
- \*Morrell, Rev. G. K. St. John's
- Morrison, Mr. Liverpool
- \*Morris, Rev. T. E. Ch. Ch.
- Morton, M. C. Esq. Exeter Coll.
- Mosse, Rev. Sam. T. Ashbourn, Derbyshire
- \*Mozley, Rev. Thomas, Cholderton
- Mozley, H. Esq. Derby
- Mules, Rev. P. Exeter Coll.
- Munby, Joseph, Esq. York
- Murray, C. R. Scott, Esq. 11, Cavendish Square, London
- Murray, F. H. Esq. Ch. Ch.
- Murray, G. E. Esq. Ch. Ch.
- Mushet, Robert, Esq.
- Muskett, Mr. C. Bookseller, Norwich
- Musket, Robert, Esq.
- Nash, Rev. R. A. Homerton
- Neave, Rev. H. L. Epping
- \*Needham, Hon. Mr. Trinity Coll. Cambridge
- Neeve, Rev. F. K. Poole, Cakneys
- \*Nevile, Charles, Esq. Trinity Coll.
- \*New, Rev. F. T. Shepton Mallet
- \*New York Society Library
- Newall, Rev. S. Dedsbury
- Newcastle-on-Tyne Clerical Society
- \*Newman, Rev. W. J. Oriel Coll. 2 copies
- Newton, Mr. Croydon
- Nichol, J. Esq. Islington
- Nicholl, Rev. J. R. Greenhill, near Barnett
- Nicholls, Rev. W. L. Bath
- \*Nicholson, Rev. P. C. Leeds
- \*Nicholson, Rev. Wm.
- Nicholson, Miss F. Rochester
- \*Nind, Rev. W. Fellow of St. Peter's, Cambridge
- Nixon, Rev. F. Russell, Ash Vicarage, Wingham, Kent
- Norman, M. O. Esq. C. C. Camb.
- Northcote, G. B. Esq. Exeter Coll.
- \*Northcote, J. S. Esq. C.C.C.
- Nunns, Rev. Thomas, Birmingham
- Nutt, Rev. Charles, Tiverton, near Bath
- Oakeley, Rev. Sir Herbert, Bart. Bocking
- \*Oakeley, Rev. Frederick, Balliol Coll.
- O'Brien, S. August. Esq. Blatherwycke Park, Wansford
- \*O'Bryen, Rev. Hewitt, Heywood, Lancashire
- Oldham, Rev. J. R. Incumbent of St. Paul's, Huddersfield
- \*Oldknow, Rev. J. Uppingham
- Ogilvie, Rev. C. A. Balliol Coll.
- Ogle, J. A. M.D. Clinical Professor of Medicine, Oxford
- Ogle, Maurice, Esq. Glasgow
- Ogle, Mr. Robt. Bookseller, Edinburgh
- †Oldham, Joseph, Esq. Hatherleigh, Devon
- Ormandey and Son, Liverpool
- †Ormerod, Geo. Esq. Sedbury Park, Chepstow
- †Ormerod, Rev. Thomas J. Bras. Coll.
- Osborne, J. Esq.
- Oswald, Alexander, Esq.
- Oswell, Rev. Lloyd
- Ouvry, Rev. P. T.
- Overton, Rev. J. G. Corpus C. Coll.
- Owen, Rev. E. Wendover
- Oxenham, Rev. Nutcombe, Medbury, Devon
- Packe, Mrs. J. Richmond Terrace, Reading
- Page, Rev. Dr. Gillingham, Kent
- Page, Rev. Cyril
- Page, Rev. F. L. Woolfit
- Page, Rev. E. F. Elford, Lichfield, Chaplain to the Bishop of Oxford
- Palk, Rev. Wm. Ashcombe, Devon
- Palmer, Rev. J.
- Palmer, Rev. W. Worcester Coll.
- \*Palmer, Rev. W. Magd. Coll.

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- Palmer, R. Esq.  
 Palmer, G. H. Esq. Lincoln's Inn  
 Panting, Rev. R. Calcutta  
 \*Papillon, Rev. John, Lexden, Colchester  
 Pardoe, Rev. J.  
 Parker, Rev. Charles  
 Parker, C. Esq. 41, Upper Bedford Place  
 †Parker, Rev. W. Appleton-le-Street  
 †Parkes, Rev. W.  
 Parkinson, Rev. R. Manchester  
 Parlby, Rev. Hall  
 \*Parsons, Rev. G. L. Benson  
 \*Patteson, Hon. Mr. Justice  
 \*Pattison, Rev. Mark, Lincoln Coll.  
 Paul, Rev. Charles, Bath  
 Payne, R. jun. Esq. Lavender Hill,  
     Wandsworth  
 Peake, Rev. G. E. Taunton  
 †Pearse, T. Esq. Magdalen Coll.  
 Pearson, the Very Rev. Hugh N. D.D.  
     Dean of Salisbury  
 Pearson, Rev. Charles, Knebworth,  
     Stevenage, Herts  
 Pearson, Rev. H. W. Guildford  
 Peck, J. Esq. Temple Combe  
 Peel, Rev. J. Prebendary of Canterbury  
 \*Pelly, Rev. Theophilus, C.C.C.  
 Pennant, Lady Emma  
 \*Penny, Rev. Edw. St. John's Coll.  
 \*Perceval, Hon. and Rev. A. P.  
 \*Perkins, Rev. B. R. Wotton-under-Edge  
 \*Perry, Mr.  
 Peters, Rev. Henry, St. Johnlee,  
     Northumberland  
 Petley, Rev. Henry, Glynde Lewes,  
     Sussex  
 Phelps, Rev. H. D. Tarrington, Ledbury, Herefordshire  
 Phillipps, S. M. Esq.  
 Phillips, Rev. G. Queen's Coll. Cambridge  
 Phillips, Rev. E. Clapham  
 Phillott, Johnson, Esq. Bath  
 \*Phillpotts, Rev. W. J. Hallow, Worcester  
 Phippen, Robt. Esq. Badgworth Court,  
     Somerset  
 Phipps, Rev. E. J. Devizes  
 Piccopic, Rev. I. Manchester  
 \*Pickwood, Rev. J. Stepney
- \*Pigott, Rev. G. Bombay  
 Pigott, Rev. J. R. Hughenden  
 Pinckard, Wm. Esq. Handley, Towcester  
 Pinder, Rev. J. H. Diocesan Coll. Wells  
 Pirie, A. jun. Esq. Aberdeen  
 Pitts, Rev. J. Street, near Glastonbury  
 Platt, Rev. George  
 \*Platt, T. P. Esq. Liphook, Hants  
 Plumer, Rev. J. J. Swallowfield, Berks  
 Plummer, Rev. Mat. Heworth, Durham  
 Pocock; Mr. Bookseller, Bath  
 \*Pocock, Rev. C. Rouslenc, near Evesham  
 \*Pocock, Rev. N. M.A. Queen's Coll.  
 \*Pocock, Rev. C. S. Inkberrow, Worcestershire  
 Pole, Rev. R. Chandos, Radbourne,  
     Derby  
 \*Pole, E. S. Chandos, Esq. Radbourne  
     Hall, Derby  
 Pollock, John, Esq. Edinburgh  
 \*Ponsonby, Hon. Walter  
 \*Poole, Rev. J. Enmore, near Bridgewater  
 †Pooley, Rev. M. Scotter  
 Pope, T. A. Esq. Jesus Coll. Cambridge  
 Popham, Rev. John, Chitton, Hungerford  
 Popham, Wm. Esq.  
 Porcher, Charles, Esq.  
 Portal, Melville, Esq. Ch. Ch.  
 Porter, Rev. Chas Stamford  
 Porter, Henry, Esq. Winslade, Exeter  
 Portman, Rev. F. B. All Souls  
 Pountney, Rev. H. Wolverhampton  
 Povah, Rev. J. V.  
 Powell, Arthur, Esq.  
 \*Powell, Chas. Esq. Speldhurst  
 Powell, Rev. H. T. Coventry  
 \*Powell, Rev. Edw. Arnett, Ampthill  
 \*Powell, Rev. J. C.  
 Powell, John, Esq.  
 Powell, Rob. Esq. Worcester Coll.  
 \*Powles, R. Cowley, Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Pownall, Rev. C. C. B. Milton Ernest  
 Pratt, Rev. J. B. Cruden, Aberdeenshire  
 \*Prescott, Rev. T. P. Portsmouth  
 Pressley, Rev. Mr. Fraserburgh, Aberdeenshire  
 Prevost, Rev. Sir George, Bart. Oriel Coll.

- Price, Rev. Wm. Colne St. Denis  
Rector, near Northleach
- \*Prichard, Rev. J. C. Mitcham
- Prickett, Rev. M. Trinity Coll. Cambridge
- Pridden, Rev. W. Broxted, Essex
- Prideaux, —— Esq.
- Puckle, Rev. John, Dover
- Radcliffe, Rev. J. F. Hugglescote
- Raikes, R. Esq. Exeter Coll.
- Ramsay, Rev. E. B. St. John's Chapel,  
Edinburgh
- Randall, Rev. H. G. Queen's Coll.
- \*Randolph, E. Esq. Jesus Coll. Camb.
- \*Randolph, Francis, Esq. St. John's Coll.  
Cambridge
- Randolph, Rev. G. Coulsdon, Croydon
- \*Randolph, Rev. Herbert
- Randolph, Rev. S. Hadham
- Randolph, Rev. Thomas
- \*Randolph, Rev. Wm. Newington Hythe
- Ranken, Rev. Mr. Old Deer
- Rashdall, Rev. John, Exeter
- \*Raven, V. Esq. Magd. Coll. Camb.
- \*Rawle, Mr. Trinity Coll. Cambridge
- Rawlins, Rev. C. Allerthorpe, Pock-  
lington
- Rayer, Rev. Wm. Tiverton
- Rayleigh, Right Hon. Lord, Terling  
Place, Essex
- Read, Wm. Esq. Manchester
- Reece, Rev. James, Tinsley
- Reed, Rev. Christ. Tynemouth
- Reeves, Rev. F. J. H.
- Reid, Rev. C. B. Teynham, near Sit-  
tingbourne
- \*Relton, Rev. J. R. Tewkesbury
- Rennett, Rev. Mr.
- Rew, Rev. Chas. Maidstone
- \*Rice, H. Esq. Highfield, near  
Southampton
- \*Richards, Rev. J. L. D.D. Rector of  
Exeter College
- Richards, Rev. E. T. Farlington
- Richards, Rev. George, Warrington
- Richards, Rev. Henry, Horfield, near  
Bristol
- Richards, Rev. Upton
- Richards, Rev. T. Watkyn, Puttenham,  
Guildford, Surrey
- Richmond, Rev. C. G. Six Hills, Lin-  
colnshire
- Rickards, Rev. J. Stowlingtoft
- Ricketts, Rev. F.
- Riddell, Rev. J. C. B. All Souls
- Ridings, Mr. George, Bookseller, Cork
- Ridley, Rev. W. H. Ch. Ch.
- Ripon, Very Rev. the Dean of, Dawlish
- Risdale, Rev. E. Troubridge
- Riviére, Mr. Bookseller, Bath
- Roberts, Mr. Liverpool
- Robertson, J. Esq. D.C.L. Doctors'  
Commons
- Robertson, John, Esq.
- Robertson, Rev. J. C. Trinity Coll.  
Cambridge, Boxley, Maidstone
- Robertson, Rev. J. C. University Coll.
- \*Robson, J. U. Esq. Magdalen Hall
- \*Robinson, Rev. C. Kirknewton, near  
Wooler, Northumberland
- Robinson, Rev. C. W. Hoton, Leices-  
tershire
- Robinson, Rev. T. Milford
- Robins, Rev. S. Shaftesbury
- Robin, Rev. Philip R. Bolton, Lanca-  
shire
- Rochester, Very Rev. the Dean of
- \*Rodmell, Rev. John, Burford, Salop
- Rodd, Rev. C. North Hill
- Rodwell, Rev. Mr. Tenbury
- Rodwell, Mr. Bookseller, Bond Street
- Roe, Mr. W. Bookseller, Newbury
- Rogers, Edw. Esq. Ch. Ch.
- Rogers, W. Esq. Balliol Coll.
- Rogers, Rev. John, Canon of Exeter
- Rogers, Rev. J. Foston, Leicestershire
- Rogers, Mrs. St. John's Villa, Fulham
- Rohde, Mrs. Eleanor, Croydon
- Rooke, C. H. Esq. Magdalen Coll.  
Cambridge
- Rooper, Rev. Wm. Abbots' Ripton
- \*Rose, Rev. H. H. Birmingham
- Ross, Rev. J. L. Oriel Coll.
- Rothfeld, Rev. John M.
- Round, Rev. James F. Colchester
- Routh, Rev. Martin Joseph, D.D. Presi-  
dent of Magdalen Coll.
- Rowe, W. Esq. Rockwell, Tipperary

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- \*Rowley, Rev. T. Ch. Ch.  
Rump, James, Esq. Swanton Morley,  
Norfolk  
Rusher and Johnson, Messrs. Booksellers,  
Reading  
Russell, J. Watts, Esq. Ilam Hall  
Russell, Rev. M. Watts, Biggin Hall,  
Oundle  
Russell, Mrs. Aden, Aberdeenshire  
†Russell, Mr. Bookseller, Aberdeen  
Russell, Rev. J. F. Enfield  
Russell, Rev. Samuel Henry  
Ryder, Rev. G. D. Easton, Hants  
\*Ryder, T. D. Esq. Oriel Coll.
- Salter, Rev. John, Iron Acton, Bristol  
Sanders, Rev. John, Liverpool  
Sanders, Rev. Lloyd, Exeter  
\*Sandford, Rev. G. B. Prestwich,  
Manchester  
Sandham, J. M. Esq. St. John's Coll.  
Sandilands, Hon. and Rev. J. Edinburgh  
Sandilands, Rev. R. S. B.  
Sankey, P. Esq. St. John's College  
Saunders, Rev. A. P. Charterhouse  
Savage, Mrs. Henleaze, near Bristol  
Schneider, Rev. H.  
Schofield, H. L. Esq. Brighton  
Scobell, Rev. John, Southover, Lewes  
Scott, H. B. Esq. Honiton  
Scott, Rev. John  
\*Scott, Rev. R. Balliol Coll.  
Scott, Rev. W.  
†Scudamore, Rev. W. E. Ditchingham,  
Bungay  
Selwyn, Rev. Wm. Ely  
\*Sewell, Rev. J. E. New Coll.  
Seymour, Rev. Sir J. H. Bart. North-  
church, Herts  
Seymour, Rev. Richard, Kinwarton,  
Alcester  
Shadwell, Rev. J. E. Southampton  
Sharp, Rev. John, Horbury  
Sharp, Rev. W. Addington, Cumberland  
Sharples, Rev. T. Blackburn  
Shaw, Rev. E. B. Narborough, Leices-  
tershire  
Shearly, W. J. Esq. St. Peter's Coll.  
Cambridge
- Shedden, S. Esq. Pembroke College  
Shepherd, Rev. Samuel  
†Sheppard, W. Esq. Oriel Coll.  
\*Sherlock, Rev. H. H. Ashton, in Win-  
wick  
Sherwood, Rev. Mr.  
Shields, Rev. W. T. Durham  
Shilleto, W. Esq. Univ. Coll.  
\*Shillibeer, Mr. John, Oundle  
†Short, Rev. Augustus, Ravensthorpe,  
Northamptonshire  
Short, Rev. T. Trinity Coll.  
Sidebottom, Rev. W. Buckden  
Sidgwick, C. Esq. Skipton Castle, York-  
shire  
Simms and Dinham, Manchester  
Simms and Son, Messrs. Bath  
\*Simms, Rev. E. Great Malvern  
\*Simpson, Rev. Joseph, Shrewsbury  
Simpson, Rev. J. Pemberton, Wakefield  
Simpson, Rev. T. W. Thurnscowe Hall  
Sinclair, Rev. John, Chaplain to the  
Bishop of London  
Sittingbourne Reading Society  
Skelton, Henry, jun. Esq.  
Skene, W. F. Esq. Edinburgh  
Skinner, F. Esq.  
Skipsey, Rev. Mr.  
Skrine, Harcourt, Esq. Wadham Coll.  
Sladen, Rev. E. H. M. Bockleton,  
Worcestershire  
Slatter, Rev. Jas. Lindale  
Small, Rev. N. P. Market Bosworth  
Smart, Thomas, Esq.  
Smirke, Sir Robert  
†Smith, Rev. Dr. Leamington  
Smith, Rev. Jeremiah, Long Buckley,  
Northampton  
Smith, Rev. E. H. Jersey  
Smith, Rev. Edward O. Hulcote, near  
Woburn  
Smith, Rev. H. R. Somers, Little Bentley,  
Essex  
\*Smith, Rev. John, Bradford  
\*Smith, Rev. Bernard, Magdalen Coll.  
Smith, Rev. Edward, Bocking  
Smith, R. P. Esq. Pembroke College  
Smith, Rev. Mr. Greenock  
\*Smith, Rev. S. St. Mary's, Ely  
Smith, S. Esq. Univ. Coll. Durham

- Smith, Henry, Esq.  
 Smith, Rev. Joseph, Trinity Coll.  
 Smythe, Rev. P. M. Tamworth, Warwickshire  
 Smyth, Rev. Mr. Fifield, near Andover  
 Soltau, Mr.  
 Somers, Right Hon. Countess  
 Southby, Rev. Dr. Bulford, Amesbury  
 \*Sotheby, Rev. T. H.  
 Southouse, Rev. George, Oriel Coll.  
 \*Southwell, Rev. Geo. Bristol  
 Sparkes, Rev. Chas. Burrow, Bury St. Edmund's, Suffolk  
 Sparke, Rev. J. Clare Hall, Cambridge  
 \*Spencer, Rev. W. J. Starsten, Norfolk  
 Spreat, Mr. Bookseller, Exeter  
 \*Spranger, Rev. R. J. Exeter Coll.  
 Spry, Rev. John Hume, D.D. Oriel Coll. Rector of St. Mary-le-bone  
 \*Stackhouse's Library, the Trustees of  
 Stacy, Rev. Thomas, Cardiff  
 \*Stafford, Rev. J. C. Magdalen Coll.  
 St. Andrew's University  
 Stanfield, Mr. J. Bookseller, Wakefield  
 Stanley, Rev. E. Rugby  
 Staveley, J. Bookseller, Nottingham  
 Stead, Rev. A. Metfield, Suffolk  
 Stebbing, Rev. Dr.  
 Stephens, Ferdinand, Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Stephens, Rev. C. L. Kencott  
 Stephenson, G. H. Esq.  
 \*Stevens, Rev. Henry, Bradfield, Berks  
 Stevens, Rev. M. F. T. Thornbury  
 Stevens, Rev. R. Culver  
 Stevens, Rev. R. Exeter  
 \*Stevenson, Mr. T. Bookseller, Camb.  
 Stewart, Mrs. Col. Bath  
 Stewart, Mr. Pembroke Coll. Cambridge  
 Stewart, S. B. Esq. Brase-nose Coll.  
 \*St. John, Ambrose, Esq. Ch. Ch. Combe St. Nicholas, Chard, Somersetshire  
 \*Stonard, Rev. Dr. Ulverstone  
 Stonhouse, Rev. W. B. Fery  
 \*Storer, Rev. John, Hawksworth, Notts  
 Story, A. B. Esq. St. Alban's  
 Storks, T. F. Esq. Jesus College, Camb.  
 Straker, Mr. Bookseller, West Strand, London  
 Strean, Rev. Henry, Killaken, Ireland  
 \*Street, Joseph, Esq. South Sea House  
 Street, Rev. A. W. Bishop's College, Calcutta  
 Strong, Mr. W. Bookseller, Bristol  
 \*Sturrock, Rev. W. Calcutta  
 Sunter, Mr. Bookseller, York  
 Sutherland, Dr. A. J. Ch. Ch.  
 \*Swainson, Rev. C. L. Crick, Northamptonshire  
 Swainson, Rev. John, Northenden, Manchester  
 \*Swainson, C. A. Esq. Fellow of Christ's Coll. Cambridge  
 \*Swete, Rev. B. Cork  
 Swete, Rev. Wm. Downgate, Sandhurst  
 †Symons, Rev. B. P. D.D. Warden of Wadham Coll.  
 \*Symes, Rev. Wm. Wadham Coll.  
 \*Tait, Rev. A. C. Balliol Coll.  
 Talbot, Hon. and Rev. W. C. Ingestrie, Lichfield  
 Talbot, Rev. G. Bristol  
 Tarbutt, Rev. Arthur, Dover  
 Tarlton, J. W. Esq. Birmingham  
 †Tate, Frank, Esq. University Coll.  
 Tatham, Rev. Arthur  
 Taylor, Miss, London Road, Brighton, (*Chrysostom*)  
 Taylor, Rev. Henry, Mile End, New Town  
 Taylor, Rev. M. J. Harold, Bedfordshire  
 Taylor, Rev. Joseph, Dukinfield, near Manchester  
 Taylor, Rev. Robert, Leeds  
 \*Tennant, Rev. Wm.  
 \*Terry, Michael, Esq. Queen's Coll.  
 Thomas, Rev. C. A. Nevill, Exeter Coll.  
 Thomas, Rev. C. N. St. Columb's  
 \*Thomas, Rev. R. Bancroft's Hospital, Mile End  
 Thompson, Rev. E. H. St. Mary le Bone, London  
 \*Thompson, Rev. Sir H. Bart. Fareham  
 \*Thompson, Rev. W. H. Trinity Coll. Cambridge

## SUBSCRIBERS.

- Thompson, Captain, R. N. Hayes' Common, Kent  
 Thompson, Mr. G. Bookseller, Bury St. Edmunds  
 Thomson, Rev. George, Abbot's Anne, Andover  
 \*Thornton, H. S. Esq. Battersea Rise  
 Thornton, Rev. Wm. Dodford, Weedon, Northampton  
 Thornton, Rev. W. J. Llanwarne, Hereford  
 Thornton, Rev. Spencer, Winslow, Bucks  
 Thorold, Mr. W. Barnstaple  
 \*Thorp, Rev. Henry, Topsham  
 \*Thurlow, Rev. John, Durham  
 Thwaytes, Rev. J. Carlisle  
 \*Tibbs, Rev. Henry W. Carham, Northumberland  
 †Tickell, G. Esq. University Coll.  
 Tidswell, Rich. Esq. Upper Clapton  
 Timins, Rev. Henry  
 Tindale, J. Esq. Huddersfield  
 \*Todd, Rev. J. H. D. D. Trinity College, Dublin  
 Tomkyns, Rev. John, Greenford  
 Tomlinson's Library, Newcastle-on-Tyne  
 Topham, Rev. I. Curate of St. Paul's, Huddersfield  
 \*Tottenham, Rev. E. Bath  
 Townsend, Rev. George, Prebendary of Durham  
 \*Townsend, Rev. G. F. Sydenham  
 Travers, Rev. W. J. Trinity Coll. Camb.  
 \*Tripp, Rev. Dr. Sampford Brett, Somerset  
 \*Tritton, Henry, Esq. 54, Lombard Street, London  
 Trollope, Rev. Arthur  
 \*Trowers, Rev. Walter  
 \*Truro Clerical Society  
 Tucker, Rev. M. jun.  
 Tuckwell, Mr. Bath  
 Tufnell, Rev. G. Wormingford, near Colchester  
 \*Turbitt, Rev. W. Halford  
 Turner, John, Esq. Balliol Coll.  
 Turner, Rev. Chas. Kidderminster  
 Turner, Rev. J. Stourbridge  
 Turner, Rev. J. F. Exeter  
 Turner, Sharon, Esq.  
 Turner, Rev. Thomas, Exeter Coll.  
 Turner, Rev. W. H. Norwich  
 Twiss, A. O. Esq. Boyle, Ireland  
 Twopeny, Rev. D. S. Sittingbourne  
 \*Tyler, Rev. James Endell, Rector of St. Giles in the Fields  
 \*Tyrrell, Rev. W. Beaulieu, near Southampton  
 Tyrrell, T. Esq.  
 Tytler, Patrick Fraser, Esq.  
 Underhill, Mr. E. B. Oxford  
 Upton, Rev. J. S. Wentworth, Rotherham  
 †Utterton, Rev. J. S. Oriel Coll.  
 Vale, W. Esq. Worcester Coll.  
 Vaux, Rev. Bowyer, Collegiate Church, Wolverhampton  
 Vaux, Rev. B. Hetherrett, Norfolk  
 \*Vaux, Rev. Wm. Preb. of Winchester  
 \*Veale, Rev. W. North Lew, Devon  
 Vernon-Harcourt, Rev. L.  
 Vicars, Rev. M. Exeter  
 Vickerman, C. R. Esq.  
 Vickers, Ven. Archdeacon, Chetton, Bridgenorth  
 Vickery, Mr. Bristol  
 Vigne, Rev. H. Nuthurst, Horsham  
 Vigne, F. Esq.  
 Vincent, General  
 \*Vizard, John, Esq.  
 Vogan, Rev. T. S. L.  
 Wainwright, Rev. Dr. Boston, U. S. A.  
 Walford, Rev. Wm. Hatfield, Essex  
 Walker, C. H. Esq. Exeter  
 Walker, Mr. Tinsley  
 Walker, Mrs. Tunbridge Wells  
 Walker, Rev. G. A. Alverthorpe, Wakefield  
 Walker, Rev. R. Wadham Coll.  
 Walker, Rev. S. W. Bampton, Devon  
 Walker, Rev. T. Bickleigh, Plymouth  
 Walker, C. H. Esq. Exeter  
 Walker, Mr. Queen's Coll. Cambridge  
 \*Walker, Rev. Thos. Christ's Coll. Camb.  
 Wall, Rev. Henry, Vice-Principal of St. Alban Hall  
 Wallace, Rev. Geo. Canterbury

## SUBSCRIBERS.

21

- Wallas, Rev. John, Queen's Coll.
- Wallinger, Rev. W.
- Wallis, Mr. H. Bookseller, Cambridge
- Walter, J. Esq. Exeter Coll.
- Walter, Rev. Edw. Langton Rectory  
Horncastle
- Walter, Rev. Ernest, Tachbrook
- Walter, Rev. Keats
- \*Walton, Rev. Dr. Birdhook
- Ward, Right Hon. Lady, Himley Hall
- Ward, Rev. R. Skipton
- \*Ward, Rev. W. P. Compton Vallance,  
Dorchester
- Ward, Rev. W. G. Balliol Coll.
- Ward, Mr.
- Wardrop, Rev. Charles, Gloucester
- Ware, Rev. H. Ladock, near Truro
- Ware Rural Deanery Book Club
- Warren, Rev. John, Exeter
- Warren, Rev. Z. S. Beverley
- \*Warter, Rev. J. Wood, West Tarring,  
Sussex
- Wason, James, Esq. Stroud
- Watkins, Rev. Fred. Emmanuel Coll.  
Cambridge
- Watkins, Rev. W. Chichester
- Watkins, Rev. Henry, South Malling,  
Lewes
- Watson, G. W. Esq. Merton Coll.
- Watson, Joshua, Esq.
- Watson, Rev. J. D. Guilsborough,  
Northampton
- Watson, Rev. Alex. Manchester
- Watson, Rev. Geo. Etherley, Durham
- Watts, Rev. John, Tarrant Gunville,  
Blandford
- Watts, Richard, Esq. Clifton House,  
Workington
- \*Watts, Rev. William
- \*Wayett, Rev. W. Pinchbeck
- \*Wayner, A. Esq. Brighton
- \*Weare, Rev. T. W. Ch. Ch.
- Webb, J. W. Esq. Clare Hall, Camb.
- \*Webster, Rev. William, Christ's Hospital
- † Webster, Rev. Mr. Drumlithie, Aberdeen
- \*Webster, Samuel K. Esq. Emmanuel  
College, Cambridge
- \*Weguelin, Rev. W. Stoke, nr. Arundel
- Wenham, S. G. Esq. St. John's Coll.
- \*Wells, Rev. F. B. Woodchurch, Kent
- \*West, Hon. R. W. Balliol Coll.
- Westmacott, Rev. H. Chastleton, Oxon
- Whalley, Rev. D. C.
- Whately, Rev. C. St. Mary Hall
- \*Whatman, W. G. Esq. Ch. Ch.
- Wheeler, Mr. Bookseller, Oxford
- \*Whitaker, Rev. S. Newchurch, Rochdale
- White, Rev. James, Manchester
- White, Rev. W. S.
- White, Rev. R. M. Aveley, Essex
- White, R. Esq. Idle, near Bradford
- White, Mr. W. Pall Mall
- Whitford, Rev. R. W.
- \*Whitfield, Rev. G. T. Bockleton
- Whitley, Mr. Manchester
- Whittaker and Son, Messrs. Booksellers,  
Cambridge
- Whyte, Rev. T. H. Glasgow
- \*Wickham, Rev. R. Twyford, Hants
- † Wickens, Rev. H.
- Wigan, Alfred, Esq. St. John's Coll.
- Wiggin, Wm. Esq. Exeter Coll.
- Wight, Isle of, Clerical Library
- \*Wilberforce, Rev. H. Bransgore, Hants.
- Wilberforce, Rev. R. J. Burton Agnes,  
Driffield, Yorkshire
- Wilberforce, Ven. Archdeacon, Bright-  
stone, Isle of Wight
- Wilde, Rev. S. D. Fletching, near Uckfield
- Wilkin, Rev. Mr. Bole
- Wilkinson, Rev. J. Exmouth
- Williams, J. Esq. Queen's Coll.
- Williams, Rev. E. T. Exeter Coll.
- \*Williams, Rev. G. King's Coll. Cambridge
- \*Williams, Matthew D. Esq.
- Williams, Sir John, Bart. Bodelwyddan
- Williams, Rev. I. Trinity Coll.
- Williams, Rev. F. D. Great Wishford,  
Wilts
- Williams, Rev. J. West Hackney
- Williamson, Rev. R. H. Hurworth,  
Newcastle-on-Tyne
- \*Williams, Robert, Esq. M.P.
- \*Willis, Rev. A. Ludlow
- Willis, H. Esq. Catherine Hall, Cam-  
bridge
- Wilshere, E. S. Esq. Worc. Coll.
- Wilson, Rev. John, Trinity Coll.
- \*Wilson, Rev. R. F. Hursley, nr. Win-  
chester

- Wilson, Thomas, Esq. Bath  
 Wilson, Charles T. Esq. Magd. Hall  
 Wilson, Walter, Esq. Bath  
 Winchester, The Dean and Chapter of  
 †Winchester, Rev. W. Ashelworth,  
     Gloucester  
 †Wingfield, Rev. William  
 Winterbottom, J. Esq.  
 Wise, J. A. Esq. Clayton Hall, Staff-  
     ordshire  
 Wise, Rev. Henry, Offchurch  
 Wither, Rev. W. B. Otterbourne, Hants  
 Withers, Rev. Geo. Calcutta  
 Witts, Rev. Edw. F. Upper Slaughter,  
     Gloucestershire  
 Wix, Rev. E. Archdeacon of New-  
     foundland  
 Wodehouse, Thos. Esq. Balliol Coll.  
 \*Wood, — Esq. Ch. Ch.  
 Wood, C. Esq. Univ. Coll. Durham  
 Wood, Rev. G. Newcastle  
 Wood, Rev. H. Fenstanton, near St. Ives  
 Wood, Rev. H. O.  
 Wood, Rev. J. R. St. James's Palace  
 \*Wood, S. F. Esq.  
 Wood, Rev. R. Broughton, Manchester  
 Wood, Rev. Jas. Settrington, nr. Malton  
 Wood, Mrs. W. Tunbridge Wells  
 Woodgate, Rev. H. A. St. John's Coll.  
 Woodham, C. B. Esq. St. John's Coll.  
     Cambridge  
 Woods, Rev. G. H. West Dean, Chi-  
     chester  
 Woods, Rev. P. Dublin  
 \*Woodward, Alex. Esq. Catherine Hall,  
     Cambridge  
 Woodward, Rev. J. H. Bristol  
 †Woolcombe, E. C. Esq. Oriel Coll.  
 \*Woolcombe, Rev. Henry, Ch. Ch.
- Woolcombe, Wm. W. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 †Woolcombe, G. Esq. Ch. Ch.  
 †Wordsworth, Rev. Dr. Buxted, Uckfield  
 \*Wordsworth, Rev. Chas. Second Master  
     of Winchester School  
 Wrangham, Rev. G. W. Thorpe-  
     Baasett  
 Wray, Rev. Cecil, Liverpool  
 Wrench, Rev. Frederick, Stowting  
     Rectory, Ashford  
 Wrench, Rev. H. O.  
 Wright, John, Esq. Marple, Manchester  
 Wright, Rev. J. A.  
 Wright, Rev. T. B. Wrangle Vicarage,  
     near Boston  
 Wright, H. P. St. Peters College,  
     Cambridge  
 Wyatt, Rev. W. Snenton, Notts.  
 Wyilde, Rev. C. E. Sheerness  
 Wyilde, Rev. T. Bellbroughton,  
     Worcestershire  
 \*Wynter, Rev. Dr. President of St. John's  
     Coll. Vice-Chancellor  
 \*Wynter, Rev. J. C. St. John's Coll.
- Yarde, G. B. Esq.  
 Yard, Rev. J. Havant  
 Yates, Dr. Brighton  
 Yates, Rev. E. T. Aylsham, Norfolk  
 Young, P. Esq. Exeter Coll.  
 Young, Rev. R. G. Millbrook, South-  
     ampton  
 Young, Rev. Walter, Lisbellaw
- Zillwood, Rev. I. O. Compton, Win-  
     chester

There seems to be ground for thinking, that many, who wished to become Subscribers to the Original Texts, have not distinctly specified that wish. It is requested that these, or any other corrections, may be sent to the Publishers.

Digitized by Google

## BOOKS PUBLISHED BY J. H. PARKER, OXFORD.

VOL. I. ST. MATTHEW, PARTS I. and II. 8vo. each 10s. 6d.

A COMMENTARY ON THE FOUR GOSPELS,

COLLECTED OUT OF THE  
WORKS OF THE FATHERS;

TRANSLATED FROM THE  
CATENA AUREA OF THOMAS AQUINAS,  
EDITED BY THE REV.

E. B. PUSEY, D.D. J. KEBLE, M.A. J. H. NEWMAN, B.D.

This Compilation not being admissible into the Library of the Fathers from the date of some few of the authors introduced into it, the Editors of the latter work have been led to publish it in a separate form, being assured that those who have subscribed to their translations of the entire Treatises of the ancient Catholic divines, will not feel less interest, or find less benefit, in the use of so very judicious and beautiful a selection from them. The Editors refer to the Preface for some account of the nature and characteristic excellencies of the work, which will be found as useful in the private study of the Gospels, as it is well adapted for family reading, and full of thought for those who are engaged in religious instruction.

*In the press, in one volume, 8vo.*

A N A L E C T A C H R I S T I A N A,

Sive Selecta Historiae Christianae Fragmenta, et Sanctorum Patrum Opuscula,  
CUM ANNOTATIONIBUS IN USUM JUVENTUTIS.

*In the press.*

THE HISTORY OF THE RUSSIAN CHURCH,

By ANDREW NICOLAEVICH MOURAVIEFF,  
Chamberlain at the Court of His Imperial Majesty, and Deputy-Procurer  
in the Most Holy Governing Synod.

TRANSLATED FROM THE SECOND EDITION OF THE RUSSIAN ORIGINAL

By the Rev. R. W. BLACKMORE, B.A.  
Chaplain to the Russian Company at Cronstadt, and formerly of Merton  
College, Oxford.

The Translation Edited by WILLIAM PALMER, Deacon, Master of Arts.  
and Fellow of St. Mary Magdalene College, Oxford.

*In the press, in two Volumes, 8vo.*

THE HISTORY OF THE CHURCH,  
FROM A.D. 381, TO A.D. 451.

Translated from

FLEURY'S ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

Edited by the Rev. J. H. NEWMAN, B.D. Fellow of Oriel College.

*The twenty-second Edition, 32mo. 3s. 6d.*

*The twenty-first Edition, small 8vo. 6s.*

*Library edition, large type, 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

## THE CHRISTIAN YEAR.

THOUGHTS IN VERSE

FOR THE SUNDAYS AND HOLYDAYS THROUGHOUT THE YEAR.

*Third edition, 18mo. 1s. 6d. cloth,*

**The Psalter,**

OR PSALMS OF DAVID, IN ENGLISH VERSE.

*Second edition, 18mo. 2s. 6d.*

## THE CHILD'S CHRISTIAN YEAR.

Illustrated by numerous Wood-cuts.

*Third Edition, small 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

Illustrated by Engravings.

**The Cathedral,**

OR THE CATHOLIC AND APOSTOLIC CHURCH IN ENGLAND.

Thoughts in Verse on Ecclesiastical subjects, selected and arranged so as to correspond with the different parts of a Gothic Cathedral.

8vo. 15s.

## THE BAPTISTERY, OR THE WAY OF ETERNAL LIFE.

BY THE AUTHOR OF THE CATHEDRAL.

Illustrated by Engravings.

32mo. 3s. 6d.

## THOUGHTS IN PAST YEARS.

BY THE AUTHOR OF THE CATHEDRAL.

6 vols. 8vo. 3l. 3s.

The THEOLOGICAL WORKS of  
WILLIAM VAN MILDERT, D.D.

LATE REGIUS PROFESSOR OF DIVINITY, AND LORD BISHOP OF DURHAM.

5 vols. 8vo. 3l.

THE THEOLOGICAL WORKS OF EDWARD BURTON, D.D.  
LATE REGIUS PROFESSOR OF DIVINITY, &c. &c.

8vo. 12s.

THE LIFE AND TIMES OF ST. CYPRIAN.

By the Rev. GEORGE AYLIFFE POOLE, M.A.  
INCUMBENT OF ST. JAMES'S CHURCH, LEEDS.

*Complete in 1 vol. 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

Some Important Points of  
PRIMITIVE CHRISTIANITY  
Maintained and Defended; in several  
SERMONS AND OTHER DISCOURSES.  
BY GEORGE BULL, D.D.  
Sometime Lord Bishop of St. David's.

18mo. 2s. 6d.

COMMUNIO FIDELIUM,  
A Historical Enquiry into the Mode of Distributing the  
HOLY COMMUNION  
PRESCRIBED BY THE UNITED CHURCH OF ENGLAND AND IRELAND.  
By the REV. JOHN CLARKE CROSSTHWAITE, M.A.  
Of Trinity College, Dublin.

18mo. 2s.

A BOOK OF FAMILY OR PRIVATE PRAYER.  
By the REV. HUBERT KESTELL CORNISH, M.A.  
Late Fellow of Exeter College, Oxford, and Vicar of Bakewell, Derbyshire.

18mo. 3s. 6d.

A COLLECTION OF FORMS OF BIDDING FRAYER.  
FROM 1349 TO 1714; WITH AN INTRODUCTION AND NOTES,  
BY THE REV. H. COXE, M.A.  
Sub-Librarian to the Bodleian Library.

*Second edition, 12mo. 5s.*

THE HISTORY OF THE PRAYER BOOK  
OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND,  
By EDWARD BERENS, M.A. Archdeacon of Berks.

6 vols. 8vo. 3l. 3s.

P A R O C H I A L S E R M O N S.

By the Rev. J. H. NEWMAN, B.D.

VICAR OF ST MARY'S, OXFORD, AND FELLOW OF ORIEL COLLEGE.

8vo. 5s.

THE ARTICLES TREATED OF IN TRACT 90 RECONSIDERED  
And their Interpretation vindicated,

In a LETTER to the Rev. R. W. JELF, D.D. Canon of Christ Church.

BY E. B. PUSEY, D.D.

REGIUS PROFESSOR OF HEBREW, CANON OF CHRIST CHURCH,  
LATE FELLOW OF ORIEL COLLEGE.

BY THE SAME AUTHOR,

*Fourth edition*, 8vo. 6s.

A L E T T E R

TO THE RIGHT REVEREND FATHER IN GOD  
RICHARD, LORD BISHOP OF OXFORD,

ON THE TENDENCY TO ROMANISM

Imputed to Doctrines held of old as now in the English Church.

8vo. 5s.

A L E T T E R

TO HIS GRACE

THE ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY,  
ON CIRCUMSTANCES CONNECTED WITH THE PRESENT  
CRISIS IN THE ENGLISH CHURCH.

8vo. 5s.

DOCUMENTARY ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE PRINCIPLES  
TO BE KEPT IN VIEW IN THE INTERPRETATION  
OF THE THIRTY-NINE ARTICLES.

By WILLIAM BEADON HEATHCOTE, B.C.L.

8vo. 15s.

REMAINS AND OCCASIONAL PUBLICATIONS

OF THE LATE

REV. JOHN DAVISON, B.D. late Fellow of Oriel College, Oxford.

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

*Fourth edition.* 8vo. 12s.

DISCOURSES ON PROPHECY.

IN WHICH ARE CONSIDERED

ITS STRUCTURE, USE, AND INSPIRATION.

12mo. 8s. 6d

A DISCOURSE OF THE RIGHT OF THE CHURCH

In a Christian State.

BY HERBERT THORNDIKE, B.D.

FORMERLY PREBENDARY OF WESTMINSTER.

A new Edition by the Rev. J. S. Brewer, M.A. of Queen's Coll.

**Publications of the Oxford Society for Promoting the Study of  
GOTHIC ARCHITECTURE.**

Folio. Price to Members, 5s. to non-Members, 7s. 6d.

**VIEWS AND DETAILS OF LITTLEMORE CHURCH.**

Folio. Price to Members, 5s. to non-Members, 7s. 6d.

**VIEWS AND DETAILS OF STANTON-HARCOURT CHURCH.**

*Preparing for publication*

**WORKING DRAWINGS FROM ST. GILES'S CHURCH OXFORD.**

8vo. Price to Members, 3s. to non-Members, 4s. 6d.

**A MEMOIR OF FOTHERINGHAY CHURCH,** Northamptonshire,  
With the Original Contract for Building it, illustrated by numerous Wood-cuts.

8vo. Price to Members, 5s. to non-Members, 7s. 6d.

**A MEMOIR OF HASELEY CHURCH,** Oxfordshire,  
Illustrated by numerous Wood-cuts.

*Preparing for publication.*

**A GUIDE TO THE ARCHITECTURAL ANTIQUITIES OF  
THE NEIGHBOURHOOD OF OXFORD.**

Illustrated by Wood-cuts.

8vo. 16s.

**A COMPANION TO THE GLOSSARY OF ARCHITECTURE,**  
FORTY PLATES ENGRAVED BY JOHN LE KEUX,  
Containing Four Hundred additional Examples with Descriptive letter-  
press, a Chronological Table, and Index of Places.

Small 8vo. 5s.

**ANGLICAN CHURCH ARCHITECTURE,**

BY JAMES BARR, Esq. Architect.  
ILLUSTRATED BY WOOD-CUTS.

Small 8vo. 5s.

**REMARKS ON ENGLISH CHURCHES,  
AND ON SEPULCHRAL MEMORIALS.**

By J. H. MARKLAND, Esq.  
Illustrated by Wood-cuts.

3 vols. 8vo. 2l. 18s. 3 vols. 4to. 5l. 10s.

**MEMORIALS OF OXFORD.**

BY JAMES INGRAM, D.D.  
President of Trinity College.

WITH 100 ENGRAVINGS BY JOHN LE KEUX, AND UPWARDS OF 200 WOOD-  
CUTS BY O. JEWITT.

## OXFORD EDITIONS.

	<i>s. d.</i>
A KEMPIS' Imitation of Christ. Small 8vo.	5 0
BULL, [Bp.] Nelson's Life of, with a Preface by J. H. Newman, B.D. 18mo.	3 6
_____ Vindication of the Church of England	2 6
HAMMOND'S Parænesis, edited by the Rev. H. E. Manning, M.A.	2 6
_____ HENSHAW'S Devotions, 18mo.	2 0
JONES (of Nayland), Letters from a Tutor to his Pupils, edited by the Rev. E. Coleridge, M.A. Eton College	2 6
KEBLE'S Selections from HOOKER	3 6
LAUD'S [Abp.] Devotions, edited by F. W. Faber, M.A.	3 6
_____ Autobiography	5 0
_____ on the Liturgy	3 6
PATRICK [Bp.] on Prayer, edited by F. E. Paget, M.A.	3 6
_____ on Repentance and Fasting	2 6
_____ Advice to a Friend	2 6
PRIDEAUX'S Doctrine of Prayer	4 0
SARAVIA on the Priesthood	2 6
SCANDRET on Sacrifice	2 6
SHERLOCK'S Practical Christian	2 6
SPARROW'S [Bp.] Rationale on the Book of Common Prayer, with Andrews' Consecration Service	5 0
SPELMAN (Sir H.) Churches not to be violated, edited by the Rev. R. W. Spranger, M.A.	2 6
SPINCKE'S Devotions, edited by the Rev. F. E. Paget	3 6
SUTTON'S Disce Mori	3 6
_____ Disce Vivere	3 6
_____ Meditations on the Sacrament	2 6
TAYLOR'S [Bp.] Golden Grove	2 6
VINCENTIUS LIRINENSIS against Heresy	2 6
WELLS'S Rich Man's Duty, and Dowsing's Journal, with a Preface by J. H. Newman, B.D.	2 6
WILSON'S [Bp.] Sacra Privata	3 6
_____ Parochialia	2 6

ANDREWS' (Bp.) Service for Consecration of Churches	1 0
KEN'S (Bp.) Manual of Prayers for Winchester Scholars	1 0
PATRICK'S (Bp.) Book for Beginners, (on the Sacrament)	1 0
SHERLOCK'S Paraphrase of the Church Catechism	1 0

BAXTER, PRINTER, OXFORD.









